

# THE INDIVISIBLE LIGHT

and  
**The Second American  
Revolutionary War**



by **DAVID PEDRY**

June 18, 1999

Dedicated to **MARY, THE MOTHER OF OUR SALVATION**

# NOTICE OF PERMISSION TO REPRODUCE, DISTRIBUTE AND SELL

Permission in perpetuity to reproduce, distribute and sell an unlimited number of *The Indivisible Light* under this author's name, in full or in part but without alteration is hereby granted by the undersigned author, who holds the exclusive and proprietary copyright. If any person or commercial enterprise wishes to publish this book in larger quantities, and desires a signed letter of permission, they can send such a request with a self-addressed, stamped envelope to: 6704 S. Ridgecrest, Casper, WY 82604, U.S.A.; or they may communicate by email at [dpedry@yahoo.com](mailto:dpedry@yahoo.com). While permission to publish, distribute or sell this book is granted, no one will be given *exclusive* publication rights by the author. If anyone is making copies available for free or for sale, we would like to hear from them, in order to direct them to those in their area who request copies. We will probably list those publishers, large or small, on our web site, with an address, physical description of the copy available and price, if any. We hereby disclaim in perpetuity any commission on copies of this book which are sold. However, we will gratefully accept donations for our past and future expenditures in regard to this apostolate.

[{TABLE OF CONTENTS}](#)

[{PREFACE}](#)

[{CHAPTER I}](#) [{CHAPTER II}](#) [{CHAPTER III}](#) [{CHAPTER IV}](#) [{CHAPTER V}](#) [{CHAPTER VI}](#)

[{CHAPTER VII}](#) [{CHAPTER VIII}](#) [{CHAPTER IX}](#) [{CHAPTER X}](#) [{CHAPTER XI}](#)

[{Bibliography}](#)

[{Bookstore}](#) [{Order Form}](#) [{Instructions}](#) [{Notice of Permissions}](#) [{Download}](#)

[{Links}](#)

[{FRAMES VERSION}](#)

(Requires a frames-enabled browser)

*Website contents* © 1999 - 2000, [Web Designs by Doc](#). *Literary content* ©1999 - 2000, *Dave Pedry*. All rights reserved.

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

[Cover Page](#)

[Instructions](#)

[NOTICE](#)

---

[PREFACE](#)

[CHAPTER I: THE DARK OUTLINES OF HISTORY](#) 1

[CHAPTER II: BETTER TO OBEY GOD THAN MAN](#) 13

[CHAPTER III: THE PATRIARCHS: THE PROMISE AND THE BLESSING](#) 29

[CHAPTER IV: THE BRIDE OF CHRIST AND THE HARLOT](#) 58

[CHAPTER V: FREEWAY TO THE TYRANNY OF ANTI-CHRIST](#) 93

[CHAPTER VI: THE RED DRAGON EMERGES](#) 111

[CHAPTER VII: WARNINGS FROM HEAVEN](#) 144

[CHAPTER VIII: JUST FOR YOU I LIVE, O LORD](#) 180

[CHAPTER IX: RED CLOUDS OVER AMERICA](#) 206

[CHAPTER X: THE SECOND AMERICAN REVOLUTIONARY WAR](#) 239

[CHAPTER XI: THE GREAT PEACE](#) 278

[Bibliography](#)

[Bookstore](#)

[Order Form](#)

---

[DOWNLOAD](#)

[LINKS](#)

[FRAMES VERSION](#) (Requires a frames-enabled browser)

## PREFACE

The purpose of this book is to extend an invitation to all peoples of the world to become Christians and Patriots in the truest sense of the word. For those who already consider themselves to be such, what follows may still be of some help in re-examining that matter and in deliberating with me on the nature of times past and those times to come. From this deliberation may come a clearer sense of urgency and mission and more courage and foresight in regard to one's personal actions.

God guides every man by his own lights. I am sharing my vision with the reader, only to the extent he wishes to share it. If God uses my work to aid him in accomplishing His Will, I have essentially accomplished my goal and am sufficiently rewarded.

In regard to future eventualities, i.e., "the way it will be," I claim no divine certainty, special gifts, or extraordinary inspiration. In such matters I have relied on the best sources of science and prophecy, applying speculative reasoning and imagination to my understanding of the same in order to arrive at probabilities that may prove more or less useful to the reader who tries also to envision where we have been, where we are, and where we are going as a human race, as a nation, and as individuals in God's creation.

I am not a doctor of philosophy or theology. I humbly submit all I have stated as fact, truth or otherwise to the Judgement of Almighty God and to any authority He has established upon this earth to render true judgement of such matters as I have touched upon.

The historical scope of this book begins with Adam and ends with the latter times, specifically, the initial years of the Great Peace that is to follow the Great Chastisement, which is called in Scripture, the "Day of the Lord." The prophecies of Scripture and some of those authentic Messages from Heaven of the last 2000 years dealing with the latter days are examined herein. They mutually confirm each other in a coherent prophecy of imminent future events around the year 2000 AD.

I try to define herein the People of God from the earliest times, the Christian experience, the nature of the true Christian Church, and the enemy's essential errors, temptations, tactics, and deceptions.

I have liberally quoted some of the most profound, exciting, revealing and almost universally unread literature to provide vitality and insight to an understanding of past, current and future events.

I cannot always promise the reader easy reading, complete agreement, or literary excellence, but I think I can promise most of my readers a fascinating, eye-opening reading experience, one they will not have ever found duplicated, one in which they will be told the truth about many things that are held hostage today by endless convolutions of sophistical confusion.

Even as the Israelites at the Passover meal ate quickly, standing with staff in hand in remembrance of their flight from Egypt, I have also written this book in haste, buying the time with a year's savings. If I leave something integral to the subject matter or the narrative unsaid, your sympathetic understanding and your help in picking up the stitches missed will be appreciated. Imagine for yourself what more could have been explained or described, especially in the time of Peace (Chapter XI). A whole book could be written of the overflowing joy of Christian people united in one Faith under one Shepherd living in profound mutual charity, simple rectitude and order, with continual praise and thanksgiving ascending to God from humbled, prayerful hearts.

At this point we may as well address a question many potential readers could have: "If the author is not of my faith, why should I read further?" My answer is that if one is not a Christian, he has nothing to lose and everything to gain. But if one is a Christian, he may say, "After all, Christianity is divided and I have chosen my brand of it."

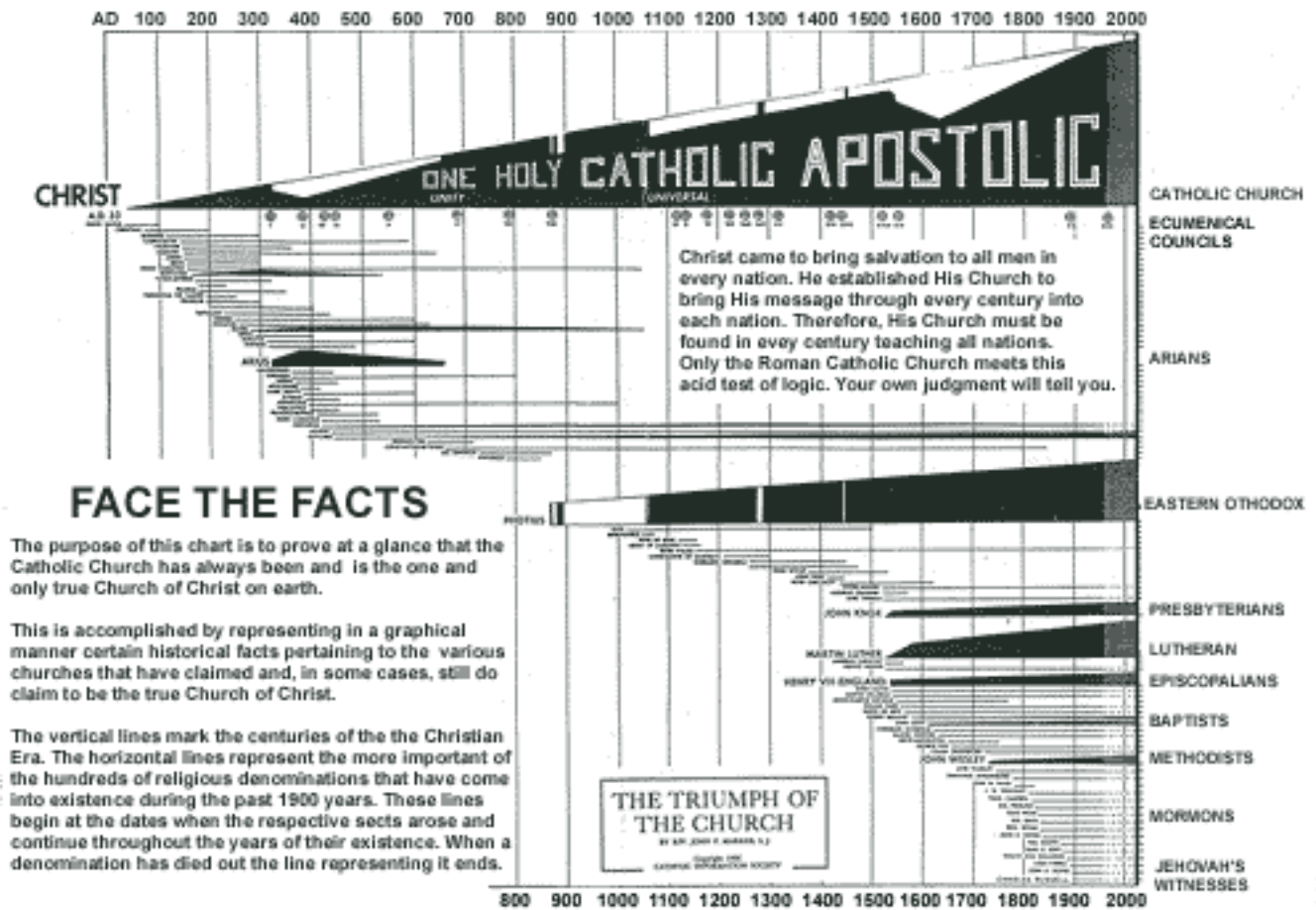
One moment, Please! Can there really be more than one true Faith, more than one set of true

doctrines revealed by God for men to believe upon the authority of God? No! And this true belief in what *God* truly said is *Divine Faith* in the True God. And *this* Faith alone justifies unto eternal salvation. Every Christian, every worshipper of God must, in his heart of hearts, wish to have *this* Faith, that is the *true* belief in what God actually revealed to Mankind and commanded him to do and not do.

Further, consider these arguments: God is one, not divided against Himself. Therefore, God is Truthful. He is not equivocal; He does not speak with a forked tongue, telling one person or group of persons a set of truths contradictory to another set of truths He tells another person or group of persons. Therefore, *God* is not responsible for contradictory religious beliefs among Christians or among the peoples of the world. People must be so responsible. Therefore, the duty and burden and necessity of finding and obeying the one true Church of God is upon each man's shoulders. God has certainly done His part. And from the humble person who sincerely desires to know the full truth, He will hide nothing; rather, He will reveal to him all he needs to know.

Everyone worthy of the name Christian believes that God has revealed *One* set of truths for the good of *All* men in all times, through Jesus Christ, true God and true Man, Who established and informs *One* Church guided by *One* Holy Spirit of God *until the end of time*. And, because God is a loving, merciful God, He would not leave men in any age without a sure source of Truth about all that they need to know, believe and do to be saved.

Therefore, historically, the True Church must begin with Christ and endure without intermission until the end of time as one and the same Church, that is, without change of Doctrine. There can be only one such Church. The indisputable facts of history show that there is, in fact, such a Church beginning with Jesus Christ, as represented in the following graph:



(This is a simplified version of the chart by Rev John P. Markoe, S.J., ©1966 Catholic Information Society.)

To view a larger version of the image, click on it. (140kB)

Why, if God's Word is almighty, is there any division among men's beliefs. Because man has a free will. He is free to listen to the Word of God or not listen. He is free to alter the Word of God or not. He is free to be docile to the teaching of the Holy Spirit of God or not.

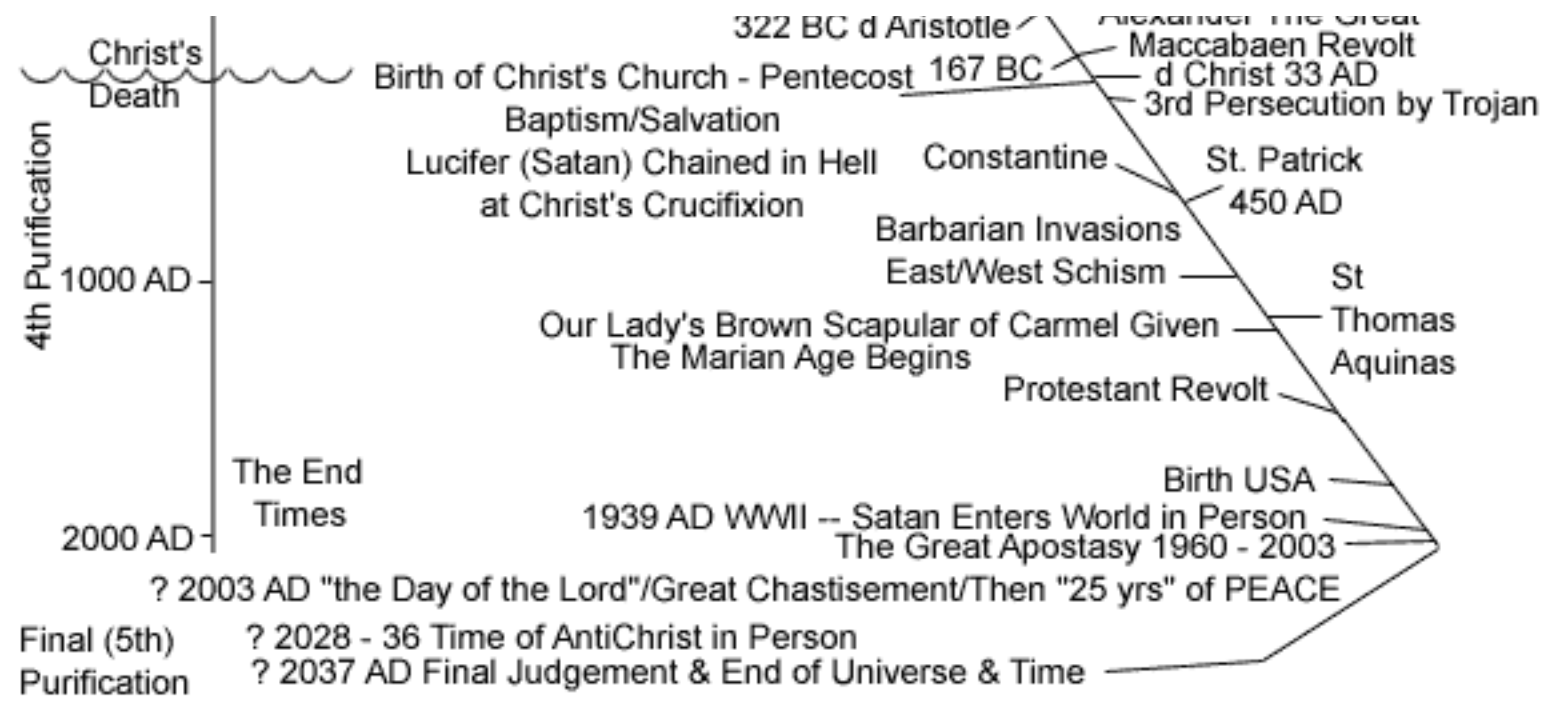
Among the babel of error, sin and imperfection that infects all mankind, it is easy for any person to become lost in the search for Truth, if they depend on themselves or others *alone*. But, if we pray to the Holy Spirit for right judgment, will He lie to us? Will He tell contradictory things to us? Of course not!

Therefore, *sincere, persevering prayer* for enlightenment cannot fail to bring enlightenment of the One Truth. And, since God is the only remedy for our ignorance, we fall upon our knees before Him and *sincerely and humbly beg* Him to enlighten us. Pray with me this prayer we say before reading Holy Scripture: "*Come, Holy Spirit, fill the hearts of Thy faithful and enkindle in them the fire of Thy love. V. Send forth Thy spirit and they shall be created. R. And Thou shalt renew the face of the earth. Let us Pray. O God, Who didst instruct the hearts of the faithful by the light of the Holy Spirit, grant us by the same Spirit to have a right judgment in all things and ever to rejoice in His consolation. Through Christ our Lord. Amen.*"

If this expresses the essence of your prayer also, read on; for you will not and cannot be deceived if the Holy Spirit guides you; nor will He give you a stone when you have humbly and sincerely asked







## THE INDIVISIBLE LIGHT

Forth from the Almighty, Eternal God // Cometh the Pure, Holy, Indivisible Light, // The Absolute and perfect Word of God, // The Truth, that-which-is in the Infinite Understanding, // The Creator of all things which were, are now, or ever will come to be. // And this One, Indivisible Light of God, // Taketh on Flesh, the Christ, the Light of the World, // Born of the Blessed Virgin, Mary, // the Mother of God, the Ark of Salvation.

With Christ its Head and Captain, // Behold the One, Holy, Catholic, Apostolic Church, // The Mystical Body of Christ, The Bride of Christ, // That Instrument of God by which, and through which every man may be saved from the Jaws of Hell!

Light Indivisible, // Emanating from the Doctrine, Sacrifice and Seven Sacraments of this Divine Church, // By the Power of the Holy Spirit, // Shineth forth into the Darkness, // Which is Satan, Sin, and Death, // and cutteth this hateful Darkness of Error to ribbons, // So that the Peoples of the Earth are in great Confusion and Tribulation // Because the Unity and Power of the Prince of this World in Darkness has been shattered.

But when the Son of God returneth upon the Clouds of Heaven, on the Day of the Lord // He will cast all those creatures of darkness into the fiery furnace of Eternal Punishment // And the rays of Eternal Light will seem to coalesce and now appear to the remnant of all people as One, which they



always were // and those within the Circle of this great Light are gathered by It unto Glory, //  
Living by Faith in the Word for the Love of God // And, hereafter, in Heaven dwelling forever with  
their God. AMEN.

[{TABLE OF CONTENTS}](#)

[{PREFACE}](#)

[{CHAPTER I}](#) [{CHAPTER II}](#) [{CHAPTER III}](#) [{CHAPTER IV}](#) [{CHAPTER V}](#) [{CHAPTER VI}](#)  
[{CHAPTER VII}](#) [{CHAPTER VIII}](#) [{CHAPTER IX}](#) [{CHAPTER X}](#) [{CHAPTER XI}](#) [{Bibliography}](#)  
[{Bookstore}](#) [{Order Form}](#) [{Instructions}](#) [{Notice of Permissions}](#) [{Download}](#)  
[{Links}](#)

[{FRAMES VERSION}](#)

(Requires a frames-enabled browser)

*Website contents © 1999 - 2000, [Web Designs by Doc](#). Literary content ©1999 - 2000, Dave Pedry. All rights reserved.*

## CHAPTER I

## THE DARK OUTLINES OF HISTORY

As I begin to write, I pray that my memory will not fail me in penning what I told Phillip at the mountain cabin last year. I recall that morning when Phillip and I, my youngest son, bade farewell to Ruth, the woman united to me before God on June 17, 1972. When Phillip walked through the door that March day in 2016 AD, the warm, diffuse sunlight poured through the kitchen window like golden, liquid smoke. We all wore homemade garments of brown wool to honor Mary's Brown Scapular of Mount Carmel. Phillip was twenty-five years old. The great peace had then lasted thirteen years.

"John David, the fence needs mending. And the horses could use new shoes. Your other eleven children and their families are coming for Easter Mass in two weeks -- and you've been talking to Phillip for hours. Isn't it time you did --"

"What time is it?"

"It's ..."

"We often disagree on what time it is, Ruth. That depends on the opportunities and the duties to choose from. It's going to rain. My guess is we've got a week of it down here in the valley. That's my invitation from the Lord to talk to Phillip about the past he was too young to understand. He's been asking me for years now."

"But ..."

"Woman, let me lead. It is help, not hindrance that I need from you."

"Then why don't you go to the cabin. I can't stand to see two men doing nothing!"

"We are not doing nothing, *Martha!* A man must understand many things that a woman does not need to be so directly concerned with. Phillip is of age. He must understand the past in order to prepare for the future. God help him. Saddle two horses, Phillip. I'll be gathering the food and reading materials we will need."

"Yes, Father."

"We'll mend that fence on the way, Sweetheart. John's boys will cross the valley if you need help. Just ring their "number" on the big dinner bell ..."

"Sometimes I can't remember the right number."

"It's written down ..."

"I'm losing my memory. And now you're leaving me because I suggested you get to work."

"I'm not faulting you for that, Ruth. But I know my own time, just as you know yours. And I'm not *leaving* you."

"Potatoes, dried beans, beef?"

"Yes. Mint tea and flour, too."

"And what time is this for me, David?"

"To you it is a time to prepare for my life's departure. In a year I will be seventy years old. Not a man's springtime."

"But you still work all day."

"But how slowly I now sow seed, plow a furrow and mow the wheat? I don't know how a man knows so many things, like the time of his passing away. God speaks to us, Ruth. Then we speak to you women.

"I'm giving you the biggest saddlebag."

"I don't have to understand the how and why of all God tells me in order to believe it all. Do the same for me. I'm just His messenger for you. I don't ask you to obey or believe on my arbitrary authority, but because of your faith that God guides me in truth and goodness."

"I know. I've got that figured out by now. ... So how will I do without you when you leave this world?"

"I will always be with you in spirit, Ruth, and with all the children and their children, until the end of time. I have decided to take the option of St. Theresa and others. Taking my rest in Heaven only after the end of time. For I wish to fight as a Heavenly warrior beside the people God has given me and will give me until all have washed their robes in the Blood of the Lamb."

"That's easy to say, David, but what does it mean to say you will *be with us*?"

"Don't cry, Sweetheart." I remember putting my arm around her shoulders gently. "It means I will whisper in your mind's ear, like this: *I love you*. And you will choose to believe in the words as mine or not, just like all of us must choose now when the Lord God in Heaven above speaks to us through His angels or our conscience or another person, to believe that they are His words or not."

"How will I *know* it's you, John David?"

"If you really know someone, will you not recognize them by their words alone, that is, in what they are saying to you -- even if those words are not audible but only in your mind? Didn't Jesus say, Mine know me and they hear my voice. Each spirit is as individual as a signature, and the words it speaks are the letters of that signature. And each spirit that is holy speaks of and for God. That is how God speaks to us. So, I will be like your own personal telephone."

"And who will do this work. We have so many acres, and the mine and ..."

"Phillip will inherit this ranch. Timothy's oldest son will soon run their own ranch and relieve our Phillip of his job there."

"Can't you give this place to Phillip now, and let us go away ... somewhere?"

"The work of this place Phillip will have soon enough. I will not give up the rule until I die, as man is commanded in Scripture. For us, there is no place to

go, my Dearest... but to God. Let us labor generously till that day; for our reward will far exceed our efforts, or any rest we can find here."

"Can you imagine me doing anything else but labor?"

"No," I smiled at her, love pouring from my heart, "and very generously, too. This talking with Phillip; it is part of my labor. Kiss me goodbye. I won't leave without it."

"Maybe you won't be leaving then," she said, wiping the tears with the back of her hand as she laid her head against my shoulder.

We rode for two hours that morning before stopping to mend the fence near the crossing of Emerald Creek. Then we led our mounts up a narrow trail to the top of the second rimrock 500 feet above the valley floor. From the top we looked down upon the rugged gray limestone rimrocks across the valley, slopes of pine, with groves of pale green aspen in the draws, their leaves rustling and shimmering, and a winding silver stream on the valley floor, carpeted by tall, green meadow-grass... I had loved this country all my life. I had fought for it -- for every square foot of ground it seemed. We all did, those few of us now left.

We walked into the cabin, solid but weathered like an old boot left outside. At 8000 feet it rested on a ridge 100 feet above timberline, and on that early spring afternoon only 200 feet below the receding snows of Victory Peak and neighboring Castle Mountain.

I said to Phillip as we dismounted under a cloudless blue sky, "I'll meet you at the fireside for supper in an hour, Son. I need to walk the saddlebow out of these brittle old legs and gather my thoughts for the story. I must pray too. Pray also for me. Only by God's help can I bring it all into focus."

I led our two Pintos over a lichen-speckled ledge of gray sandstone, down to a slope of tender spring grass dotted with tiny white periwinkles and mountain bluebells. I left them near their three-sided shelter at the ice rimmed stock pond, which was fed by each day's snowmelt. When they recognized their shepherding summerhouse by the breeze-rippled water, they were off and running, tossing their heads and kicking like the wild stallions they once were.

I sauntered through a small stand of dwarf evergreen trees to a familiar massive, rose quartz boulder. A luxurious sunset illuminated the horizon, with a layer of pale red below blue-green palisades of light fading into the starless, cobalt dome above.

From a seat as finely wrought, it seemed to me, as any throne, I looked upon the country to the northwest. There battles had been fought. Souls had been won and lost, a Nation and a Church saved from the enemies of God and man.

I prayed to God for the time and strength and patience to do this work with Phillip; for He is the Author of all time. And for an hour I pondered the vast scope of the epic story I intended to relate.

Phillip waited for me in the twilight, sitting on the sandstone ledge, a yellow fire-glow emanating from the cabin door behind him. We ate from hand beaten metal bowls, in silence,

sitting on two robes spread before the fire, one of buffalo and one of bear. After we finished eating, I slowly began.

"When you were seven, Phillip, even those the Communists called their "useful idiots" were beginning to see the handwriting on the wall of our world. Our President turned out to be as much a traitorous villain as Hitler or Stalin. But, in that day, a smiling tyrant seemed to some, if not most, a good, necessary or at least unavoidable evil. But no one man or handful of them defined the events of our day. No, this definition is in the power of the minds and hearts of the people, and it depends on the truth or the lies which they choose to believe and live out. Without an understanding of American society and how it arrived at such a state by the 1990's, you cannot understand the inevitability -- if the human race was to survive -- of what we now call the Second American Revolutionary War.

And so, Phillip, my young disciple and father of the time to come, you must bear with my long historical digressions and philosophical discourses; for without a *deep* understanding, you will be a small, rudderless boat tossed about on the giant waves to come over this world again -- the awesome events still to come before the Third Advent of Christ and the end of time and the Universe.

If what I am to tell you could have been read in those days preceding Jesus' Second Coming, the world ..." I stopped ... almost crushed by dejection at the rest of the sentence, ..."the world at large *still* wouldn't have believed!! But a few would have believed and joined the remnant awaiting His coming in truth and sincerity of heart and spirit. Plenty of past prophets, plenty of fine historical, political, and religious analyses, both detailed and general had preceded the final days. But the great majority chose to believe semi-transparent lies instead. Prophets, whether divinely inspired or humanly inspired, only help us come to know what we could know already from a study of the past.

In those days ignorance was king. And what is the root word of ignorance?"

"To ignore, Father. You have said that many times."

"Alas, many times was never enough for mankind. The sickness, Phillip, was a kind of idolatry. Everywhere were these so-called men of faith. They did not adhere to or obey the Church or objective truth or any reasonable tradition. No, they made up their own truth. They were believers all right!

"Made their own truth. That is hard to imagine, Father."

"Now, yes, it is. But in those times these egotists swarmed the earth. And their creeds were so diverse. Some worshipped the devil, some their own version of Christ and the Holy Spirit, some power, some the opinion of the majority, some TV personalities, even sports' commentators, and some their own fancy and pleasure. They were little gods, creators of their own spanking new universe.

Some claimed inspiration from God or from preternatural, psychic powers. Mere assertions of

opinion were instantly "validated" by mere assertion and put on a par with the most studious, well-founded doctrines of the ages. They were neither bound by philosophical truths, not even by logic itself, nor by the truths of any science, much less those truths revealed by God. No fact was honored, no history, no man, not Christ, His Church, the common knowledge of humanity or the common law of human history. To fashion their philosophies, certain truths were selectively used as authoritative, while a host of other truths were completely disregarded. We are talking about the most anti-intellectual, the most dishonest, chaotic age the world had ever known. There were truths aplenty, but they lay strewn carelessly about, unassembled, like the parts of an engine lying on the garage floor before a drunken mechanic.

"Why did all need their own personal creed, Father?"

To slake the thirst of their subtle pride, which *pretended* to objectivity or humility; but secretly desired to believe what it wanted as real, -- so it could justify the actions that needed justification, for the sake of self-interest. One's creed in those days was just a tool for getting what one wanted. These faiths or creeds were just self-serving opinions with "certitude" tags attached by the owner's presumed right of assertion, which really meant "my opinion is right too, because I can have one."

"But, Father, how could *they* themselves believe with certainty their mere opinions."

"They didn't know where one began and the other ended, just as the ignorant miner doesn't know fools' gold from the real thing. And, they lied to themselves, Phillip, without admitting it. And then they believed their own lies, to make a double lie, a double negative. And they compounded lie upon lie. They believed that authority came from within themselves. *They* validated what they said God had said. 'Everyone had a right to their own opinion.' This meant everyone had a right to believe with "certainty", that is to "know", but without sufficient proof or even logical probability or evidence. They had no concept of demonstrative knowledge -- logically proven, scientific knowledge. What they wanted, determined what they believed, Phillip. It was that simple. It was the triumph of misguided will over objectively informed reason. To serve their own conceits, they were willing to recreate the universe.

"This would lead to total confusion and non-cooperation, Father."

Of course. But to see that, they would have to admit what I just described as their way of dealing the cards. Some were bold enough, the Satanists and other cultists, to openly believe in self-proclaimed human deity, but the majority only presumed this implicitly by their belief in error. Do you understand that?

"Yes. But how many believed in the whole truth, Father, and how many had this sickness."

"Very few listened to the Word of God wholly, without picking and choosing what they wished to keep or reject. These "few" had *Divine Faith*. The others, even though they were

"sure of themselves," were totally skeptical about anyone (but themselves perhaps) being able to know the objective truth with certitude."

"But that seems to contradict what you just said about believing with certitude in their creeds."

"Not really. They claimed private truth, -- as if truth can be private and exclusive of other truth -- even to the point of making themselves a church. This is what Protestant Fundamentalism led to. But all these rejected Catholic Truth, that is, truth *universally* applicable and therefore binding upon all human minds. They rejected *objective* truth, but embraced a wrong notion of Truth as their subjective toy.

"So they contradicted the very notion of truth in their definition of it."

Well put, Phillip. This was the great age of heresy and apostasy, Son. Pluralism and indifferentism reigned supreme. Any belief, no matter how foul, was given credit, *except* the belief that *all* people were capable of and responsible for knowing the *one* truth and that they were *bound* to obey it. And among the few that believed in *this doctrine*, only a very few of them actually believed *the One Truth*. It was a great crisis in authority; for true and certain knowledge is the basis of all authority *and* all truly moral, voluntary human acts. Inevitably the question arose as to who the Author of reality and truth was. This flacid agnosticism finally led to atheism, because it is a form of practical or implicit atheism to even question whether the author of reality is the Almighty God who made us.

"Would you say, Father, that mankind determined to put God out of its mind and go it alone?"

Exactly! It was that spirit of non-dependence.

"Did they hate God, then?"

Intentionally? Not most of the people, Son. But if you think God is someone other than He is ... do you love Him? No. Because love depends on *truly knowing* the object of love. Not knowing God, who is in all ways ever present, is turning one's back on Him, ignoring Him. Such profound ignorance is an implicit rejection of God, a kind of hatred by culpable neglect. Because if we desire to know Him, He *will* reveal Himself to us. But without realizing it fully, people put themselves before God and in God's way, thus implicitly making themselves a "god" in *His* place. Some people called this the religion of Humanism. But Humanism was a defined creed, whereas this universal sickness I called *self love* ran like a ribbon through many creeds, even the creed that professed that one had no creed, no firm set of beliefs. Such agnosticism was

probably seen as the safest road by many, because it required no defense, no commitments, and one's direction or loyalty could be changed in a heartbeat.

"It all would have been so frightening, so dark. How could people live like that?"

"As this evil deepened and fed its own hellfire, Son, more and more people, even the



young, took their own lives. The inversion of values, the loss of meaningful, sustaining values was so great that mothers, by the millions, murdered their unborn children."

"No!! Father!!!"

"All over the world they did this, some boldly and arrogantly boasting of it in front of their Creator and all men. I can see, my son, you are deeply hurt. It is good that you are sensitive to evil. I have avoided this day as long as seemed prudent. But soon I will leave this earth, and you and your progeny will come into the time of all times -- the time of Anti-Christ coming *in person* to rule the earth.

"Do not believe you are too good to experience evil, Son, or that a good God could never permit such evils. The error that God's mercy would not allow evil as a corrective drove many to hate God or "put Him away", as you said, reducing Him to a merely useful *concept* for mankind.

"By what error, Father, will the remnant that is now left on earth again re-invite Satan upon the earth?"

This is the question you must answer in time, Phillip. I want you to look through the telescope of the past with me, in order to develop this power of envisioning what is coming.

"God is so good to us, Father. It is hard to imagine Him allowing such evils."

I know, Son. But remember, you have not witnessed the former wickedness of man as an adult. God ordains that the evil of suffering be a natural consequence of moral evil, in order to correct the sinner, who would otherwise be led to eternal separation from Him without the benefit of that evil consequence warning him in a concrete way. So, on God's part, chastisement is a saving act of love for those who will be brought to their knees, repenting of evil and yearning for the good it has obscured.

"But why does He allow sin to begin with!?"

What He creates out of love, He does not annihilate. Our rational nature, the intelligence and free will that makes us like Him, would evaporate if He removed our freedom to do good *or* evil, because one or the other is the inevitable result of every informed free choice. If He did not permit evil, He would not permit us to be human; for the essence of our rational nature is to know good from evil, truth from falsehood and to freely choose. Not only that, our will always by nature chooses what appears to be good. And our reason naturally apprehends

truth. So, it is only when we choose perversely to go against our higher intellectual nature and be led by our sensuality or imagination that we sin.

Man tends to blame God for the evil that he brings about himself as a natural consequence of his voluntary irrational actions. In fact, I will confess, Son, I have often thought that if God did not allow man to sin and to suffer its evil consequences here on earth, man's presumption of his own goodness would totally corrupt him. His vanity would

absolutely blind him.

"Maybe this love of one's self became a stumbling block for Lucifer in the beginning, Father."

"Yes, perhaps, but also Adam and Eve; they had in the Garden perfect nobility of nature, happiness and peace, until they failed the test of humility. But our first parents and their sin was just another myth to dispense with for the people of my day, Son. Even God's creation of the world many rejected.

"Impossible, Father!"

"Oh, they had a likely story. It was called Evolution. Maybe this is a good place to begin, Phillip. You see, they worked very hard, Satan's agents, to destroy, in a largely Christian or at least God-fearing world, the notion of a Creator and of the Original Sin of Adam and its inherited evil effects in us. *Concupiscence* is this inherited tendency to sin, due to the rebellion of our lower powers of nature, the bodily senses and imagination against the higher faculties of the intellect, will and reason.

When Evolution was accepted, nothing was created by God, not even man; all just magically "evolved" from something that already existed, which magically evolved from ... ad infinitum. So the reality of God the Creator and our first parents were reduced to stories, while the real fiction was that man had slowly evolved from apes; he had no free will to sin, just instincts like animals, only they were highly refined instincts which had adapted to situations; so that there was an *appearance* of free will. The choices man *seemed* to make were actually determined by what appeared to be, in a certain situation, the most rewarding or least painful response, given that individual's past training, thinking and experience. But moral rules, intrinsic commandments did not exist. If men appeared to have such immutable principles internalized as Natural Law, it was due to their common response to the common problems of human existence. But these *responses*, which in this fairy tale seem to take the place of reason itself, were always open to adjustments. So, man was not *individually* responsible for his acts or his fate. He did the best he could with what experience had given to him. Collectively though, man could gather a broader consensus, a more complete picture. Therefore, *collectively*, man could influence his fellows, learn, educate and guide the community or State to build a better world. But he was helpless as an individual. Only an enlightened master race of "experts" or "ascended masters" could guide mankind to utopia *by influencing their collective*

*responses*. These enlightened ones had to be trained in ancient lore that had to be kept secret because the most ignorant among men hated it and called it diabolical. This devilish nonsense, Phillip, was passed on by secret societies through their pagan priests, ancient lore, or Grand Masters, all of whom were possessed by demons, fallen angels. In this way, Satan actually became the ruler of the world.

In Evolution things evolved *from one another!* Nothing had a *set* nature. All was in flux. Change was governed by random material events. Phillip, do you see how the stability of objective truth could be undermined?

"Father, if you first undermine the unchangeable nature of real things, of reality itself; then, what could truth be based on? You have often defined Truth according to St. Thomas as "that-which-is in the understanding." But if there is no "that-which-is," there can be no objective basis for truth, and no "understanding."

"Excellent, Son! And if that which is, is always in flux, always evolving, always becoming whatever chance dictates, is there a Creator who made distinct creatures or anything else of a fixed, designed nature?"

"No, Father. The only "creator", the only design would be random chance which is the opposite of design."

So, there is no use trying to figure out why we are the way we are or the essential nature of anything, because things don't have essential natures. Everything, every law is open to change upon the decision of someone fortunate enough to be more enlightened than us. Therefore, there is no order in the universe, no basis of certainty for everyone. Therefore, there is no truth, no moral imperatives, no natural laws, no basis for *any* science or knowledge.

"I have often heard you say, Father, that only if man can be confidently described as "*rational* animal," can a law for man be prescribed. And our Nation was constituted on this natural law, Father, as you have said. To teach otherwise would seem to be a traitorous act."

"It is. But people were conditioned to accept this error which undermined the founding principles of our nation as a right, guaranteed by freedom of speech under the Constitution. When the letter of the law of freedom becomes license, then one can say whatever they want, no matter how false or destructive. And the right to do wrong is the substance of arrogance and anarchy. Such legalism based on sophistry allows the destruction of the inner law that must live in the heart of the nation that can have true liberty, which remains within the bounds of truth and reason. These scribes, our legalistic enemies, took our laws and perverted them in order to create a lawlessness they were ready to take advantage of.

The intellectual corrosion of this evolutionary propaganda crept into the popular mind and undermined the basis of reason and all that is known through reason, everything from religion to science to good government.

"It sounds like the serpent that tempted Eve, Father. The serpent promised Eve, if she disobeyed and tasted of the Tree of Good and Evil, she would be like a god. So, if by the lie called Evolution, the Creator is dispensed with, who *will* decide, other than man, what is and what is not, and therefore, what is good and what is evil. And that arrogant decider takes the place of God, the real Creator and Lawgiver."

Good point, Phillip. If we look at Evolution carefully, each thing would have to be the

absolute, immediate source of its own existence and destiny, and of its own offspring. This proposes that Evolution replace God. So too, if God and what He created is not the foundation of truth and law, responsibility for the evolution of our mental world is ours alone; we are like God again.

"It would be like saying, Father, 'What is, is what we think -- new truth, born each moment by every man's conception of it.'"

"Our God calls Himself 'I Am Who Am' in Scripture, Phillip. As St. Thomas put it, *God's essence is existence itself*, so that all creatures are necessarily, *given* existence by Him. But Evolution, by implication, tries to make all things God, because it proposes existence aside from Him, in things themselves. The universe is, therefore, God. This is the error of pantheism.

Absurdity, once willingly accepted, blinds the mind, Phillip, because rationality itself is already implicitly rejected and annihilated. This is why all uncorrected error can and does lead to greater error and, finally, to total absurdity or insanity.

I saw Phillip settle down in his bearskin against the dying fire, a perplexed and troubled look stretching across his innocent features. And I recall the tears that rolled down my cheek as I saw what all this was doing to his peaceful soul. I rolled another log into the fire.

"What is it, Phillip? Put into words your difficulties with all this as we go along. I need your help in that way if you are to really understand and own as yours what I say. For I know what I understand, but I don't know all you need to hear to come to that understanding as well.

"Surely, Father, the world did not come to the violence it did because everyone was walking around with errors in their minds?"

"Yes, it did, Phillip. What man believes, he acts upon -- individually and collectively. If he believes lies, he will be led by liars, either malicious ones or just foolish ones. Acts based on lies destroyed the health of our national life.

The American nation built upon the concept of natural law was wholesome. But the socialism or statism that resulted from the error of rejecting the concept of a natural law written in the nature of all men crushed the concept of and the hope for a good order of society that can follow from responsible self-government. We became no longer men accountable *to God*, ourselves creating a State government to aid us in that accountability to God, with civil laws based on

God's Law and the natural law protecting our liberty as long as we obeyed it. When the people turned away from God by believing lies that led to sin -- just like Eve -- they forsook self-government and made themselves accountable to the law of the state of rebellion which they had created by their rebellion to God's Law. Now enters Satan's henchmen to run this State; for it has been given the power to dictate to the people, even as idols did in the past

through the people's sin and foolish beliefs, the agency of Satan. The State became the people's idol, their god, because it replaced the conscience they had abandoned.

"When the Roman Emperors demanded that Christians worship them -- was this the same, Father."

"Essentially yes, because the Emperor represented the State, and all worshipped the power and authority of the State as the 'supreme being' in the person of the emperor."

"Was America pagan in the end, then?"

"The secret State that was hiding in the shadows of our true State was pagan, along with those who gave it their first allegiance. All of us patriots were in a dilemma, Son; if we rebelled before necessary, we would have thrown the baby out with its dirty bathwater."

"What do you mean?"

"Our Nation and its Constitutional Government was the baby worth keeping, but in throwing out the corrupt officers of the state, and the bad laws they had intertwined with the good laws, we risked anarchy by destroying *all* government. There was even a Libertarian Party whose extremists advocated no government, practically speaking. Only if all men were as good as angels and the world was perfectly in order could such a state of non-governance work.

The agents of our evil "shadow government" prodded our private militia groups to rebel, just to create an excuse for imposing martial law to "protect" all of us from the "anarchy" of patriots rebelling against their anti-American tyranny.

"Now, Father, I need to tie my thoughts together. I am only beginning to comprehend how the error of Evolution was a part of what caused the tyranny in America and the world before the Great Chastisement. Can you summarize what you have said so far to make this connection?"

"Son, Evolution was a hoax paraded as science, with the aim of providing a substitute for God the Creator. But when God is removed from the first place in man's accountability, a vacuum exists. The devil takes this empty throne. He rules man by man's own sinful creations. Communism, or militant atheistic One-World Government, was such a creature. It enslaved mankind through the power of the forces of Hell, working behind the scenes through possessed human agents. This power of Hell was the same Serpent that tempted Eve. He was really present in the world. He had a universal church of Satan with a Supreme Grand Master, or "pope," and "bishops," or Grand Masters, each one set up as rulers over

territories in every nation. By the time the Great Warning came, these possessed people effectively ruled the whole world."

"Was it like before the Flood?"

"Worse! God told us it was much, much worse."

"Why didn't He allow man to build a kind of ark, like Noah?"

"He did. For the good, like Noe, there was an Ark. God aided and guided the Noes of all ages to build it. It was the Roman Catholic Church. But we had to enter it and stay in it, the Remnant, to escape the evil waters all around us upon which it floated. And we threw lifelines to all the people. Some reached out and took hold and were saved. But the majority rejected help. In their pride, their ambition to be the one to know and *not* be the student, they stopped their ears to Divine Truth. They believed, up to the end, that each person's own chosen beliefs would be the means of their own salvation.

"What a terrible, terrible obstinacy, Father!"

"Son, let's stop for now. I think you need to rest, as I do. We have, with broad strokes, outlined some major features of the story to follow. I will try later to connect the development of evolutionary thought and tyranny as we go along. There is a vital, lifegiving relationship between these two evils, one philosophical and moral and the other political, one in the realm of thought motivating and the other in the realm of action.

Phillip and I stepped out the back door and drew a dipper of cold spring water from the little cistern. Stars filled the sky like a brilliant dust, each grain of diamond-like purity. I remember looking at Phillip's smooth skin in the moonlight and faintly recalling his childhood, the pure blond hair and tottering steps, which did not slow his eager exploration of the world. There would be some pain in what he was to learn, but also a sense of shouldering the responsibility of knowing the unpleasant truth about mankind and evil. Yet, against this blackness was set all God's wonderful goodness, glory and mercy, like the jewels of a distant *KINGDOM* towards which we journeyed with the compass of *Faith*.

[{TABLE OF CONTENTS}](#)

[{PREFACE}](#)

[{CHAPTER I}](#) [{CHAPTER II}](#) [{CHAPTER III}](#) [{CHAPTER IV}](#) [{CHAPTER V}](#) [{CHAPTER VI}](#)

[{CHAPTER VII}](#) [{CHAPTER VIII}](#) [{CHAPTER IX}](#) [{CHAPTER X}](#) [{CHAPTER XI}](#)

[{Bibliography}](#)

[{Bookstore}](#) [{Order Form}](#) [{Instructions}](#) [{Notice of Permissions}](#) [{Download}](#)

[{Links}](#)

[{FRAMES VERSION}](#)

(Requires a frames-enabled browser)

Website contents © 1999 - 2000, [Web Designs by Doc](#). Literary content ©1999 - 2000, Dave Pedry. All rights reserved.

## CHAPTER II

## BETTER TO OBEY GOD THAN MAN

It rained hard that first night on the mountain, the rain turning to wet snow by morning. The fire was slow to start, but the full shed of dry wood would last three weeks. Mountain raspberry tea in mugs we had turned and baked at home took away the chill of morning. After fifteen minutes of staring into the fire and getting comfortable, I slowly began again.

Tyranny begins when a population is trained to believe that a collective conscience and consciousness takes a legalistic precedence over that of the individual man bound in conscience before the infallible wise God who created men and rules them all equally. This collectivism ushers in the idea that a man is actually *ruled by* the majority thinking of his fellow men, instead of the majority of men subscribing to a law and government made in the image of their One Divine Lawgiver. Collectivism or communism then is the crowning of servile human respect. It is the reign of man cut off from God's rule. It is the rule of Satan, in fact.

There is a subtle line here that when crossed delivers a society into tyranny, which is built on the idea that rule, the measure of things, is based on the current, popular idea of things. And current thinking can be ruled by events, force, emotions, tyranny, all those intimidations which traditional thought has escaped with the passage of time and place and circumstance. Godly rule, of whatever form, for example, monarchy or republic, assumes that man's laws should express and conform to an intrinsically Authoritative, Divine, unchangeable standard or measure. This is stable government. Is that clear, Phillip?

"Perfectly, Father."

The freemen of any nation and the American Patriot believed that God ruled them through a personal relationship in which God is master and man obeys in conscience. He believes that justice is established by obedience to this Creator or by punishment for disobedience, and that in common, voluntary alliances do men cooperate in regulating their communities under the *commonly understood laws of God*. The state serves man.

Collectivism's western version is a corrupt Democracy, its eastern version, communist or socialist Totalitarianism. Collectivism nominates "the State" as representative of a voted consensus in a democracy, and of an assumed consensus in dictatorships, which may or may not pretend to represent the real interests or expressed will of the people. The individual is *less* than the state in collectivism; for the State claims to be the true or at least current representative of *all* the people, and more people is greater than less people. By leaving God out of the picture, man's nature, purpose and created destiny is not represented. He is essentially a number. His governance is, therefore, not based on what is right or wrong for man as created, but on the means of controlling him, which is, *power*. Might makes right.

The end result of collectivism or socialism, regardless of the superficial form of the particular government it takes, is that *the individual serves the State*. He is a pawn, a piece of state property to be moved and sacrificed for more powerful players. He does not owe his first allegiance and service to God, but to the collective conscience or its representative, the State. Therefore, human respect, that is, a subservient respect for the



supposed opinion of others, especially of the majority of others, is the blood of collectivism.

And Evolution serves this form of tyranny well, because it *seems* to prove that man *did not come from God as a direct creation*, and if not, why be ruled by a nonexistent God through an individual conscience which is no more than one man's opinion. It can't be as valid as the collective conscience, which is a multitude of (manipulated) consciences. The fact that tyranny never forgets, of course, is that it is impossible to control millions of individuals ruled by individual consciences informed by God, *if you do not wish to rule them by Godly principles*. Tyranny finds it necessary to "convince" its "citizens," one way or the other, that the authority or standard of rule is *outside* the individual and unknown to the individual until some central opinion collecting agency established a consensus by taking an "opinion poll."

Phillip, Evolution asserts that Adam was not the first man. He was just the product of animal evolution. Matter either always was, or we can't know how it came to be. Life must have first "evolved" from complex matter. Man is the product of a process of evolving lifeforms, the whole process governed mysteriously or by chance.

This "product" called man cannot be governed by a strict internal moral law which he is bound to obey, by reason or by charity, or by his own free will, at the expense of eternal damnation if he doesn't. No, evolution proposes that man is determined by his inherited traits and his particular experiences. He acts, as animals do, according to instincts such as necessity, survival, procreation and various needs. *Therefore*, if man is to better his race, it must be by men's cooperative efforts to build a better world, where all are forced to forego individual desires, ideas or destinies and serve a common, supposedly humanitarian plan to better the collective well being of the existing world and so the future world.

"It reminds me of the way I would imagine those men thought who gathered to build the Tower of Babel, Father."

We shall see later that you are right, Phillip. This futurism or utopianism means that international laws supervene national ones and Federal laws supervene state laws, and state laws, local laws. Collectivist futurism also decrees that the amalgamation of all creeds and authorities and opinions and powers ensures peace, because the self-interest of individuals or nations naturally conflict and produce war. Notice that this view of man assumes he does not have a common good nature that being true to *naturally* leads to harmony and peace, but rather assumes that he is alienated from others and is selfish and intrinsically flawed as Calvin thought. War, therefore, is natural, while peace must be artificially imposed; that is, by man's forceful artifice or politics.

"But we believe, Father, that God created us intrinsically good, and that our sin is unnatural and leads to conflict and war."

Yes, Son. But the collectivists said total slavery by law and its Police State was the only alternative to ubiquitous conflicts of self-interest causing a world war that would destroy the race of man. They held up the nuclear threat -- which they had manufactured for the world to see at Hiroshima -- as evidence of this doomsday destiny.

"I can see how convincing and appealing this view and its solution could be, even to a

good person, Father."

"Yes, but only if the enemy's terms and their staging of the problem is accepted as true. In the 20th century huge wars erupted, surrounded by scores of smaller wars, social

upheavals, famines. But the careful student of history saw that these wars and turmoils were manufactured by the militant collectivists (Communists) in cooperation with their money powers who collected or monopolized the power of all human labor by pretending to represent everyone's earnings as bankers, even to the point of presuming to manipulate the value of currencies for the common good. Through their agents in our governments these two partners in crime and treason instigated trouble and then proposed their explanations and solutions for it. If they wanted to topple a God-oriented national authority, they fomented a rebellion. But ultimately, they did not want mere chaos, they wanted *their* solutions mandated by laws.

"Surely this patient intrigue was the work of the Evil One, Father."

It has always been so, my Son. He tempts man first to sensuality by suggesting he indulge his passions, then to ignorance by proposing he ignore truth and accept a deceitful solution to that problem his sensuality created. Finally, he proposes malice by an unrepentant, wrongful act, as the means to achieve the solution that will end the evil that began with man's sensuality. And so it is that they try in vain to justify these official crimes, saying *the end justifies the means*.

By the accumulated voluntary acts of submission to Satan's will by men of free will, he rules the world with useful idiots, loyal followers, robot-like agents, zealous missionaries and at the top, evil conspirators, possessed masters of murder and deceit, even by demons inhabiting human bodies whose souls are in Hell.

"What was it really like, Father. I mean ... what did it feel like? Wasn't everyone terrified of this evil you describe?"

"Of course not! How could the enemy have succeeded if men saw their works as evil. Man's will naturally chooses only what at least *appears* to be good, hating what is evil. The job of the evil one, therefore, is *always* to make evil appear good and our real good appear evil.

"That seems impossible, Father."

"I know it does to you in this time, Phillip, because it is a special time. It is the time of great peace brought about by the profound repentance of evil by the whole population of the world that survived. This made possible the peace of Christ's kingdom on earth. I will have to show you this evil, son, I will have to create a picture of it for you. You will use your imagination to help me."

I felt like Abraham bringing his son Isaac up the mountain of sacrifice for slaughter at God's command. But I trusted the Lord to protect the innocence and confidence and spiritual

integrity of Phillip, while preparing him for his mission in the times to come.

We who fought in the Second Revolutionary War or helped in any way, Phillip, were branded traitors, rebels, unenlightened anarchists and facists. We were finally hunted down and killed like dangerous criminals. It came about just as Alexander Solzhenitsyn described the reign of terror coming about in Stalinist Russia -- the searches, seizures, and abductions, the twisted charges of treason, the tortured confessions and "voluntary" cooperation with the "authorities." All this coercion was justified on the basis of interpretations of ambiguous civil laws that were secretly designed to provide room for such interpretations at the time of their eventual misuse.

It was all ostensibly legal, every last unconstitutional, and therefore illegal, criminal act the enemy in our local, state and federal governments used. And this fact of

legality was the greatest lever they had in controlling and using 95% of the so-called law abiding citizens.

"Didn't Jesus object to this same use of legality as an oppressive weapon by the lawyers, scribes and Pharisees of His day, Father?"

Yes. In fact, if it hadn't been for the American Machabees imitating Jesus in turning over the tables of the frauds among us, the United States would have fallen without any resistance at all, like a ripe apple falling from the tree.

"The Machabees, Father?"

You remember in the last book of the Old Testament, the Father slew the prominent Jew who went up to give homage on the pagan altar, as all had been ordered by law to do, under threat of death. He then fled to the hills with his four sons and formed the little army of Israel that finally defeated the Syrian giant. Well, there rose up machabees throughout the United States and other nations. They were ordinary, law abiding citizens, with grit and principle, lacking in human respect. They loved God first. They heeded the Word of God as written in the Epistle of St. Peter: "Better to obey God than men."

Human respect, Phillip, during the war and in the many critical years before was the greatest enemy of the people. And our enemies knew that. So they used it. Men are enslaved when they respect the laws and opinions and tastes of their neighbors, or what is reputed by the news managers to be a majority of the people. Because, when men pay more respect to this than to God's Word, disorder and then enslavement ensues; for God's Word is the Truth in a man's own conscience which forms the moral principles that govern all good and godly men peaceably and freely, without coercion. Through their control of the medias the enemy manipulated human respect in order to keep citizens silent when voices should have been raised against the immorality being condoned and finally enshrined in law within our society.

The Machabees were men in the true sense. They stood before God and braved all to obey Him first. Always, Phillip, my beloved Son, *always* remember the words of God spoken

in Holy Scripture through St. Peter, the "rock" of Faith upon which our dear Lord built *His* Church: "Better to obey God than men." Whenever the way of man, whether they be in the few or the many, comes into the slightest conflict with the way of God, he who wishes to save his soul and lead his fellow man by good example must stand forth against that way and correct it, saving the good but rejecting the evil.

"Why are you standing, Father."

Why? ... I don't know, Son. A man is driven by what arises in his heart. My heart is lifted up to the Lord, my Commander, Phillip. Let us read from Scripture and see what word God will give us.

As Phillip searched for the Holy Book, I stepped to the back door to draw in fresh air and drink of the well water. Tears formed easily in my eyes as I gazed towards the heavens, longing for the vision of my Lord and His Glory to appear. I longed for Heaven. But to fight now, even as then, for the Lord was my portion of Heaven on Earth. I asked for God's help to go on. And He gave it to me, as in so many times past. Then I was able to go back with more resolve to relive what we had all thought we could never live through at the time.

For inspiration I "cut" the Good Book ... to 2 Peter chapter 3 and read in a steady voice.

## 16

"BEHOLD this second epistle I write to you, my dearly beloved, in which I stir up by way of admonition your sincere mind: That you may be mindful of those words which I told you before from the holy prophets, and of your apostles, of the precepts of the Lord and Saviour. Knowing this first, that in the last days there shall come deceitful scoffers, walking after their own lusts, Saying: Where is his promise or his coming? for since the time that the fathers slept, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation. For this they are willfully ignorant of, that the heavens were before, and the earth out of water, and through water, consisting by the word of God, Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished. But the heavens and the earth which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of the ungodly men. But of this one thing be not ignorant, my beloved, that one day with the Lord is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. The Lord delayeth not his promise ..."

"I remember, Father, when the heavens turned white and rolled up like a scroll." And, at that moment sounded the Warning, which every man, woman and child on earth heard within them.

"Yes, Father."

But we are safe for now in the justice that reigns after the Second Coming of Christ. Look, is this not a renewed heaven and earth?

"I know everything is different now, Father, but ..."

It is. You cannot know as well as I. It is the difference between a desert and a garden,

and in the heavens, between a murky veil and the purest, sparkling glass.

"Why do we go back now, Father ... in this story?"

There is humility and foresight in passing before the sin and evils of the past, Phillip. Too many will forget, but you have a right to know what they will forget. Remind them, Son, when you *first see* the way of man casting its shadow on the way of God, *stand forth!* Fear not what wagging tongues will say.

"And what *will* they be saying, Father?"

Every heresy begins with a claim to authority from Holy Scripture, because a power must be overcome by an equal or greater power. Now that the whole world is converted to the true Church, the protesters to come will appear to be loyal, while interpreting God's Word on their own authority. It has always been so.

"How will I know who speaks the true word of God, Father? How did the Faithful know in every age? How did the patriots see through the lies of the enemy? And why did all the others, in every age, believe in the lies? I do not feel capable of knowing more than any other man."

Every man is incapable of knowing the truth of God -- *without help!* So, first we always pray for discernment. Then we use our reason. It *alone* is not enough, but we are given the Word of God which cannot contradict the right use of the faculty of reason *which He Himself has made* by His Word and by which He requires each man to act truly, even at the price of his eternal life! Trust in your power of reason, not in all your reasons, but in the power or faculty God has given you.

"And what else is needed to discern the truth, Father?"

Purity of heart, Son. Righteousness. A clean conscience. Honesty, integrity, true repentance for all sin. Here is the *tabla rosa*, the white tablet upon which the Word of God can be written.

"And ... how else can I know?"

There is the Doctrine and Tradition of the Church Jesus established for all time and guaranteed to be true for all time because the Holy Spirit of God is in it. How can anything novel be true which contradicts the past teaching of Christ through His Church? How can anything contradict the Scripture, rightly interpreted, and be true? The Church is a sure guide against error. The Church has interpreted Scripture. It compiled the Scriptures to begin with.

"But the Church was made of only men, too, Father?"

Not only of men, Phillip. That is the mystery of the Church. The Church is Divine, because it is the Mystical Body of Christ who is, Himself, its Head. The true Church is God and Man joined, the Mystical Body of Christ, one congregation of appointed and adopted sons of God, led by the only begotten Son of God, through His appointed and empowered ministers.

I'm afraid I can't directly reveal this Light by which you will know the truth, Son. It is *The Indivisible Light* of God. It is God more than the rays of the sun are, in their effect, the sun. Pure Divine Light, I cannot explain in itself. It *is* the Holy Spirit. The essence of affection is the Spirit of Love. Spirit is mysterious in itself, known only by the effects of its characteristic actions on those things affected by it. For example, the human spirit or soul is known by its characteristic action upon the body, which is suited to be subject to its particular action, which we summarize as *life*. To see the *Indivisible* Light of God then, we must look for its signs, its effects upon Mankind, which is suited to be subject to Its effects. The true Church is the exemplary Sign, the effect of God's Light on Mankind Redeemed. This Church, the Bride of Christ, is seen in its Holiness, its Saints. It is seen in its Oneness, its unity of Doctrine throughout time. And only those apostles of Jesus who have been given the Divine Love of the Father and the Son for each Other can receive the effect of the Holy Spirit; for only Divine Love can recognize Divine Love. And that is why Jesus said, 'not all those who say "Yea, Lord" will enter into the kingdom of Heaven, but only those who do the will of My Father.' And the will of the Father is that we love God, ourselves and each other with the Divine Love which God has first given us.

Light reveals, and it casts shadows. So we will look at the good and the bad in man. The bad or evil is where the Light does not have its full effect, that is, the absence of good. But that very darkness, in negating the light, silhouettes the light -- which is God and what He does.

Time itself, and what it reveals, the natural, mortal world, casts us in shadow, Son. In this shadow of time we live. We can only see spiritual realities by the help of grace, that is, by the Light of God. But the relative darkness delineates all the better the purer things that more readily receive the Light of God. This is why you must go back with me now, into the darkness of history.

"I know that I am safe with you, Father. But these shadows -- it feels like it will be frightening."

It is. For all those who were ever saved, it was only *trust* in the Heavenly Father that allowed Him to lead them through their times and overcome that fear of darkness. *We* were in darkness. But we have *seen* a Great Light. Fear is what all children of God must overcome, fear of the darkness, where the light of God does not shine. We fear to go into the darkness of sin because it offends God and we fear His wrath. But we do not

fear darkness in itself; for darkness has no power over that which is illumined. Rather, it is the opposite, light vanquishes darkness. Darkness is overcome by light. Light is never overcome by darkness, for darkness or evil is only the absence of light or good -- a pure negative, a kind of nothingness.

While these times before the Second Coming were the darkest days the world had ever

known, Phillip, there will be still darker days ahead. Do you want to overcome your fear of the dark?

"Yes, Father."

Then come, let us go on. Already the Light of God is within you, Phillip. I am only going to try and help you recognize it, that is, cogitate upon it, by showing contrasts, divisions between its effects and the absence of its effects, between the light and the darkness. Seeing such darkness will frighten us, so that we will run back to God's Light where we are safe.

In the beginning, in the arms of Divine Love, we passed into time where shadows exist. And if we pass the test of this time, we will pass into eternity, where shadows do not exist, for there is nothing there but Love. When time and what exists in time is flooded, finally, with the Light of Eternity, which is the Light of God, time will pass away. Then all shadows, the distinctions, delineations, definitions and finite limits will cease to isolate things from one another. They will cease to be known by what they are not, in order to be known as God knows them -- only for what they are, emanations of His creative love. For we can know nothing except as it is in and of God, its Creator. The essence of creatures will not change in Heaven, but the means, the viewpoint by which we recognize them will change. For we will see by the brilliance of this Light, which Reveals the inner being of and reason for and cause of all -- the Light of God's Love. You were made out of Love, Son. You were made in Love and through Love and with Love and of Love a subject fully predicated by Love. When the shadow of Time passes away, there will only be Love and the objects which reflect It. And all that does not reflect the Light is in the darkness outside the Light, and there it groans in eternal misery for what it was meant to be became not of its own free will.

"What reflects the Light, Father?"

Those who recognize and give thanks for God's Love are capable of reflecting that Love by loving others in return, thus reflecting the Light of God's Creative Love.

After these words I rose and dressed for the weather. Leaving the cabin, I kept company with the moonlit snow, ice, rock and pine ... until the sun melted into the orange glow of sunset. Phillip was snoring peacefully when I returned. The flickering embers revealed a strong, ruddy youth, with fine light brown hair, squared chin, fine brows and long, handsome features. I would train him to bring up the rear, whipping and driving those of good will who had fallen into laziness or foolishness, gathering and sustaining the weak who had lost the will to go on. What is our life but to emulate, in some degree, in some way, the Divine Shepherd.

The morning sun left us warm and dry above a solid sea of rain clouds 400 feet below. We continued the story on the front porch, our sleeping robes draped over the sapling armchairs our herders had made last spring.

To understand in more than a superficial way what happened to the World in the year 2000 AD, Phillip, I feel it necessary to roughly sketch the conflict between the forces of good and evil as it traveled through the preceding seven thousand years of man's



history. This will be primarily a philosophical discussion, which we will use to try and illuminate the most profound events of history.

Adam was actually the first human being. His soul was created directly by God, as is each and every soul. The elements of the earth were used to create his body. Although God could have created Adam's body out of nothing, He chose to incorporate in him all the elements of the earth, so that in his body man is related to all bodily creatures as their highest expression. Eve was made likewise, except that the material for her body was taken directly from Adam, just as the Bible says. The material for the creation of each person's body is provided by its parents. But the parents do not create, much less does an anonymous force, but God only is Creator.

Many moderns assumed that the story of Adam and Eve was just a useful myth and that other humans or human-like animals preceded them. These conjectures came about largely through the enemy's fabrication of various fossil hoaxes, such as Piltdown and Peking Man and the Leakey "discoveries," along with the theories of their other agent, Charles Darwin. Their aim was to generate evidence for the Evolution Hoax in regard to man.

When God created the nonmaterial soul of man, the body that soul actualized was created at the same time; for no body can exist without a soul, either human, animal, plant or mineral; because soul is the principle *activity* of that body which causes it to have a certain character, structure, consistency, etc. So God creates each body along with its soul. Nor does any soul come about without a body. Man is a composite being. Only the angels have no body; they are pure spirits. No soul can create itself or its own offspring, as Evolution would implicitly require. Every creature must be made by God, bringing it from nonexistence to existence at the moment of conception.

"Why at conception, Father?"

Because before conception it did not exist as a determinate species. God may choose to use other creatures, human, animal, or mineral, which He has before created, in this act of conception, though He is not dependent on them. He chooses freely to use parents, for example, by their cooperative act of generation, but this makes Him no less the creator of the child, which comes from non-child to child, from not being to being at the moment of conception. Only God has existence to give because only God is existence. His very essence is existence. And so Moses was told that God's name is, "I AM WHO AM."

The evolution of man, by leaving God out of the story, necessitates the elevation of generation through the sexual act to an act of God-like creation. This was an ancient pagan error that spawned various fertility rites. But no parent-creature ever had existence to give, and existence is essential to the act of creation, whereby some new individual specifically unique comes into existence from non-existence.

"But Father, the parents have existence; could they not give it to the child?"

No parent is self-creating; therefore, existence does not subsist in them as it does in God. They are totally dependent on God for their existence *each moment they exist*. The error that all things exist independently leads to the heresy of Pantheism (God is all) and the universal soul (all are one) which doctrines, I believe, the enemy inserted into the earliest Semitic religions of the Far East. Note, Phillip, that the modern error of evolution appears to be a concrete, inductive proof of these gravely misleading errors of pantheism and oversouls, from which reincarnation and the reduction of individuality to the idea of

conformity springs. The eastern idea that individuality is subject to the totality of the universal soul is very conformable to the idea of the individual's subjection to the socialist state. The idea of the individual, especially created by God, responsible to God, loved by God, as a person is loved by a person, is a truth sown by the Revelation of Jesus Christ, the Light that will conquer the darkness of these Errors.

Many, if not all, pagan religions, which, of course, had the devil as their creator or spiritual advisor, revolved around the worship of sexual powers. Worship often included sexual acts. For a sexual act that actually produced a being would be the act the act of a god or goddess. *All error is built upon the basic evolutionary lie that beings come from beings*, and that the magic formula for producing something new and valid is to take two or more existing things, conjoin them and, presto, a third thing is supposedly conjured into being. But this is like saying, if you put an apple and a banana in a blender you produce a new species of fruit. No! *Mixing is not creating*.

*Consensus* was a buzz word of 21st century's collectivist propaganda which involved a blending of opinions to produce a new opinion which was assumed to have the authenticity of a new intellectual being, that is, a novel truth. True knowledge is real intellectual being, *it comes from God through His creation of the thing known and of the knowing faculty that perceives it*. But an opinion which pretends to have the attributes of knowledge and a right to the prerogatives of knowing because it was formed by a consensus is a creation of the devil; it is a lie.

"Father, I am beginning to see how evolution tempts man to reduce all being, all species, all distinctions to oneness or nothingness. What I am wondering is whether Adam somehow fell into some error like this in his original sin."

An intriguing question, Phillip. Let me begin exploring it by laying out what I know. Before Adam sinned, they lived in a state of perfection and integrity, or wholeness, for integer means whole. After sinning in direct disobedience to God out of a secret pride suggested by the only source of temptation, Satan, human integrity (the right order or wholeness of man) was lost; so that the five bodily senses and the imagination based on them rose up in rebellion against the intellect. Phillip, the intellect has two powers: intellectual appetite or will, the passive intellect that is moved to desire by the goodness of God's creation, and the apprehending or active intellect, reason, which analyses or identifies things by their universal or essential characteristics, thus arriving at a particular truth. Truth is that-which-is (reality) in the understanding. This is based on an adequate impression of reality itself. Our intellect is made in the image of God's intellect, and that is why we can truly understand what He made. There is a likeness in us to all we can know, because we are like minded with the Creator of all things.

To know something is to be able to name it; thus Adam named all creatures. He knew

all things that it was proper for him to know as man, namely the good, which is all that God created. He did not "know evil" until he disobeyed God's command. In disobeying God's command he implicitly refused to acknowledge God's authority, that is, His authorship of all. (We saw this error in Evolution, didn't we?) Adam rejected, by his willful act, God's Word, His Truth. Adam thereby rejected the intellect God gave him. Thus Adam rejected the core and essence of his own being. Therefore he lost his spiritual life which resided in the integrity or wholeness of his intellectual being or soul. Here is the essence of Adam's error, Son. Adam rejected his own nature and, therefore,

## 21

the law of that nature. In this Adam freed himself from God's law to acquire what the serpent offered Eve -- "you shall be as gods, knowing good and evil."

Evolution also deceives its adherents into believing that man is not of a definite created nature but a present moment in the random evolution of being. It teaches what the Greek philosopher, Heraclitus, said, "all is in flux." Once a man or a society loses the sense of its created nature and of the limits or laws of his nature, he feels free to violate his right judgement by his free will, which is then taken out of the context of reason, which gives it (the will) direction. In this sinning man *actually* steps outside of his created nature into uncreated darkness.

God told Adam not to eat of the tree of good and evil, because evil is the absence of good. And it is evil to disobey the known will and command of God. Nor is it proper or even possible for man to know what is not good, that is, evil in itself: For God did not create anything that was not good, and what He did not create is not knowable because it does not even exist, except as a negative concept. In sinning Adam came "to know" disorder, which is confusion. To voluntarily assent to, or desire or act in accordance with that which is neither true nor good, is a personal act of evil, a sin. Adam did this by eating from the tree of good *and evil*. This act represented his willful desire in contradiction to God's Holy Will. In spirit then, Adam exited God's creation and entered his own creation, which is nothingness or Hell.

Evil is the lack of good, and Adam created that lack from nothing but his will. This is, perversely, a God-like, falsely creative act, and from that springs the special "pleasure" of sin, which is pride -- the imagination or false apparition of one's own excellence in regard to that which he is, that which he does or that which he has. Sin does not humbly *follow* nature, but *leads* the way into the unnatural, the unknowable. Sin, therefore, makes its own terribly exciting "reality" or "world," which mortals may believe in as real, but which is no less than a disguised extension of Hell, the home or abode of all evil.

"But Adam took back his sin, Father. He repented."

Fortunately, for us he did, Son. But it is more true to say that for his part he withdrew his will from the sinful act, and by doing so he *asked* God to forgive him his offense and restore to him the spiritual life of the soul.

"There must have been a certain mysterious attraction in evil for Adam in his perfect innocence to fall for it, Father."

Yes, there is also the pleasurable excitement of *mystery* in evil; for nothingness is truly unknowable. It is not just *beyond* our finite human understanding. The pleasure of sin depends not only on the false appearance of an uncreated *novel* "good", but on the admixture of good with the mystery of evil. Illicit sexual pleasure proceeds from a created good, for example, but from the wrong use of that good. Thus it is from the tree of good and evil. To the sinner, his sin appears to be good in some aspect. If it did not, the will, which can only desire good by its Created nature, could not choose to sin. But while all sin has certain appearances of good, that is, the accidental features of good, our intellect *knows* that what makes it sinful is not good. In sinning we choose the fruit of the tree of good *and* evil, rather than from the fruit of the Tree of Life, which is only good.

Adam's will, in sinning, Phillip, chose the lesser good over the greater good, the apple over the loving obedience to our Creator's infallible Will. For another example,

## 22

sexual pleasure alone is a lesser good than the right use of sexual pleasure, namely, to promote procreation and/or unity between married persons.

So the will or intellectual appetite is free to choose various goods, including a lesser good, at the expense of a greater good. But, in so doing, the will rebels against reason, the apprehensive intellect, thus dividing the complementary powers of the one intellect. This is the spiritual death of the soul, just as the separation of the soul and the body brings about physical death. Thus sin leads to mental, emotional and physical problems, sometimes to the point of producing split personalities -- because sin *is* one source of insanity.

The intellectual appetite or will is also subject to the lack of integrity and subsequent rebelliousness caused by the Original Sin of Adam and by ones personal sins. We call this weakness or tendency to evil-doing, concupiscence, which means "with (con) the sensual love of (cupidity) the knowable (science). This carnal or sensual knowledge is opposed of the *rational* love of the knowable when it claims equal status with it. Concupiscence is traditionally described as threefold: the pride of life, the pride of the eyes, and the pride of the flesh. Pride here refers to a false knowing.

Error, which is essential to all sin, comes in two ways: The reason knows or should know what is right or wrong, but the free will errs in choosing to have a disoriented appetite for another lesser good. This produces a sin of passion or inordinate desire. Ignorance or weakness (lust) underlie this error of the *incontinent* and covetous sinner. The second kind of error deliberately or culpably disorders reasoning which fails to establish the true or proper order of things, thus ruining the priorities of those goods identified. This involves malice; for the error of reason proceeds from a bad will to acknowledge the truth to begin with.

"The second would be a more serious sin, Father?"

Much more serious, Son. An inordinate appetite or will is sensual, because the principle of its choice is the body and its senses, and the imagination which projects the sensual image for the deliberation of the intellect. But in malice the will itself lets its desire for the lesser good be a cause for stifling the reason in acquiring or assenting to true knowledge. This latter sin against the known truth is a sin against God's Love, that is, the sin against the Holy Spirit.

By nature the will is subject to the reason, which it depends on to identify the nature of the real things, or goods from which it must choose the proper means to our created end, eternal happiness.

Humility is real self-knowledge. Pride is the exact opposite. One of the themes throughout history is Satan's attempts to convince man to follow him in his own great error, namely, the pride behind the notion that *God* is to be credited as the author of evil, rather than evil being due to the free will of His Creatures, Lucifer first of all. This false accusation against God is why there is a multiplicity of gods in pagan religions accounting for both good *and* evil events. The false reasoning would be, if God is the creator of evil, no one but Him can be held accountable for evil acts. Therefore, it is God-like to do evil acts. And since evil gods like evil acts, then acts of evil by human worshippers placate these gods, so that they will not do evil to the worshippers. These abominable and blasphemous errors are found in the darkest of satanic cults. But these same incredible errors underlie much sin, especially all manner of deliberate, malicious sin.

Phillip, the distinction is that God *permits* evil. This shows His forbearance and mercy. For if He did not permit sin, who would be alive to repent of their sins and be saved.

"Father, please let me interrupt with a question."

Yes, Son, please do so as often as you wish. I know it is hard to interrupt me.

"Why do we, the children of Adam and Eve, inherit Adam's sin and its consequences, when we did not actually commit the Sin? Shouldn't Adam have been punished, not us. How do we see God's mercy in our inheritance of Adam's evil?"

First, Adam *was* punished, severely. He did penance for 900 years. He lost all his perfections and Paradise. God commanded him to toil for his sustenance, and now he would have to suffer death. If he had not fallen, Adam would have simply entered Heaven without death. Suffering is measured by loss. Adam lost much and so suffered much.

Secondly, we inherited Original Sin because Adam's sin brought disorder into man's *nature*, nature which Adam alone contained fully and entirely within himself in the beginning. And disorder brings disintegration, sickness, deformity and eventually death. All earth's creatures, being subject to Adam as their representative before God also suffered the disintegration that his nature suffered. The nobility and dignity of all creatures suffered. In nature, we are all Adam in a sense. He acted in our behalf, because he was the entirety of our nature at that seminal time. This common nature is why man is a family. Angels are not like

this. Each one is a separate genus and species of being, for there is no common body shared among them.

"So your point is that we naturally and necessarily inherited the consequences of Adam's sin."

Yes. And thirdly, would any man have bettered Adam? No. By our sins all men have *ratified* Adam's sin. Thus we share in his guilt. Mankind is like one being; we affect each other in the past and in the future. If God is not unmerciful in creating man as one race and allowing him the free will to love Him or to sin against His love, then He is not unmerciful in allowing us to inherit the concupiscence due to Adam's sin which causes a disintegration of our nature.

Furthermore, Phillip, God used the familial nature of man to save us; for that is why *one* Man, Jesus Christ, could save *all* men by His merits alone. This was so because in His Divinity and His perfect human integrity or wholeness, Christ contained the whole nature of Man as Adam did before the Fall.

And, only God could save man, because man's offense against God was infinite; because God, the offended One, is infinite. Man is finite, thus his reparation for sin, his ability to repair is finite. *Only* the God-Man, then, could save man, first, as *God* repairing the infinite offense that only God could repair and, secondly, as *Man* who assumed the nature and who took the punishment of all men in order to expiate for the guilt that all men incurred.

"Jesus re-established Justice then, Father. That was His mercy."

Yes, Son. You are exactly right. And His Eternal Life as the God-Man immediately overcame Eternal Death, because the positive principle of life comes before the negative principle of death, which is just the lack of life. Therefore, Jesus' victory over death on the Cross paid the eternal debt of man's sin against the infinite God.

"But how can God die, Father?"

As God, Jesus did not die, Phillip. That is why He overcame eternal death. But as Man, Jesus' soul was separated from His body and He died as a man. But since He was both God and Man, His humanity was raised to life again. This is how the elect are saved from eternal death in being united to the Christ by the means of Faith and Baptism.

"So Jesus was the second Adam? He took Adam's place."

Yes.

"And Adam had within him in the beginning the whole of humanity. And Jesus, with the recreative power of God, became New Man."

Yes, He assumed the entire nature of Man.

"Was Man recreated, then? And if so, wouldn't all men be saved?"

Man was recreated in Christ. But that helps us personally only if we unite ourselves with Christ in His Church, the Ark of Salvation. That is our choice. Only in this Holy Union

are our good works become salvific acts of Faith, Hope and Charity. If we do not unite ourselves to Christ, we have crucified Him in vain by our sins. He *offers* us redemption through adoption, as sons of the Father and brothers of the Son. But, by refusing the same gift, we earn damnation since we do not participate in this Life that overcame our death in sin. Since adoption is offered, it is in mankind's power to possess it. That is, all men have it *potentially*; but it is ours *actually* by our acts of Faith in Christ, which means believing in the Word of God.

"What is Faith in the Word of God, Father?"

I can *say* it in a few words, but it will be understood only at length and partially in the telling of this story and in considering all that is said.

Satan told Eve to disobey God, and said that instead of dying the result would be that "your eyes will be opened: and you shall be as gods, ...", that is, that you will be like adopted sons of God and win immortality by disobedience to God's Law or Word. In person, this Word or Law, is Christ. So, Satan is playing the Saviour's role deceitfully, saying, to be saved, follow me in sin, "Do evil and adopt yourself to this God who is not all powerful or noble but jealous of his powers, purposely misleading those who wish to be like Him and to share His power. At the same time he is maligning and misidentifying God. Sin is also spiritual blasphemy and idolatry inasmuch as God is portrayed falsely.

*Jesus* told us, on the other hand, you will become like God by *obeying* God, by being true to your created, unfallen nature. By *way of* his obedience to God's Law, the just man will be freely given divine Faith, by which he will be saved. God is not forced to do this by justice. Sin calls for evil. Faith is given by God's mercy. Faith is the *divinely assisted act of hearing the Word of God, and of having an absolutely certain belief in and assent to the truth of that Word*. But this *certainty* could not come from human evidence. Therefore, we know that this Faith is *divine*.

"What is belief and assent, Father?"

Belief is passive acceptance of a proposition; assent is the active acceptance of that proposition. These are the respective acts of the passive intellect (will) and the active intellect (reason) which indicates full intellectual acceptance.

"Can unjust men, unrepentant sinners have Faith?"

How could they? To be unjust is to refuse to *obey* the Word of God, which means, first of all, that you do not *accept* or *believe* in the Word of God, as we are commanded by God. But there is no Faith without this belief.

"But how then can one be just who does not already believe in what he is commanded by the Word of God?"

Without Faith one cannot be justified, Son. But it is every man's choice to first believe in and then obey The Natural Law written in his own heart by God. The knowledge of God's

Law written in the heart and his ability to believe in it as God's Law is a grace given to *every* man who lives to the age of reason. Obedience to the Law of God then allows a man to hear the Divine Word of God, the Christ, and believe Him to be God's Word. But if a man *chooses* not to believe what he knows in his own nature, by the natural law, he has already rejected God and His Divine Law with which natural law agrees. And every man is given the natural law, to know right from wrong, which means he is also given the basic truth behind these laws.

"So, can every man be saved?"

Yes, every man who ever lived or ever will live can be saved. If God is Just, how could it be otherwise? In the Churches' doctrine of the Baptism of Desire, the just man of any time or any place in history who obeys God's Word written in his human nature as a law will be given the choice, exteriorly or interiorly, to have Faith in and obey that Law or Word for the right motive -- because *God* commanded it -- not because it is natural or rewarding or pleasant or politically correct. And the obedience to that command is the assent of Faith. It is the personal response of a man to the personal command of God. It is an agreement and a covenant that results in an adoption. Salvation by Baptism of Desire is the reward of those who have not heard Christ's doctrine preached but who submit to God's authority. Such a one would have believed if the actual words of the Saviour had been preached to him. And some whom these words of Jesus were preached will say, "Yeah, Lord," but will not be saved, because they chose to superficially believe and pretend to obey for motives of self-interest. This is not true Faith. It is a human spirit, not a divine spirit that generated it. Therefore, there is no Justification in it; for it is by *Divine* Faith that we are saved. The very *ability* to first know then obey God's Word because God commanded it is a gift from God *offered to every* man.

"Father, I understand Faith now, but I need, for some reason to go back again to the question of why we must suffer the punishment and degradation of our fallen nature that Adam earned by his *sin*. Why should we inherit concupiscence, this tendency to evil. Can you explain more?"

This punishment of concupiscence is a means of correction for our fallen nature. Our reason tells us what is right, but our rebellious, concupiscent powers, the "flesh" lead us to do the opposite. And the ensuing war within us is painful. This pain resulting from concupiscence corrects the pride of the life, which *is* concupiscence, by humbling us. We all fell with Adam. Concupiscence is a natural effect of the Fall. If we learn the lesson this suffering shouts out to us, we will use that suffering as a material means of salvation, and this curse will become a blessing. Man's sin brought upon us a great curse, but because this sinful condition was the material cause of Christ's saving us, the curse was erased and a blessing came in its place. God's goodness overcomes and replaces our evil. That is the only reason we have any good left upon the earth. But nothing is credited as a man's spiritual possession, whether good or evil, unless he makes it so by his freely choosing it for what it is. This is why although God's blessings and especially divine Faith are gifts from God, we actually receive them with merit and justification only with



our active acceptance, which includes our proper use of them and our thanksgiving for them. We must and will cooperate in our own damnation or salvation.

"Is God's mercy greater than His Justice, Father? Is His Love for us greater than His Righteousness?"

Justice was not set aside for the sake of Love and Mercy. Justice or Righteousness was actually *reestablished* by the Loving Sacrifice of God's Son, and because that repayment of God was far greater than any debt man accrued, there is actually a great surplus of merit Christ earned. This He placed in the keeping of or treasury of His Holy Church, and we can obtain this merit by asking for it by way of certain token works that have "indulgences" as a reward. These indulgences earned by Christ for us relieve us of some or all of the punishment due to our sins which remains even after their guilt is removed. So, Righteousness suffered nothing, but was, rather, restored and renewed by God's generosity.

"But Jesus suffered Unjustly, Father. Why wouldn't a greater Injustice exist than before?"

Christ *willingly* suffered. No injustice was imposed on Him because of this free choice. It was an act of love. He took our place. Could I not willingly accept and hide your insults to me in order to refrain from punishing you so you had time to see your evil and repent? So too God suffered *willingly* for our injustice to Him, both in sinning and in crucifying Him by way of our sins. By His Love, the *willingness* to endure evil for our sake, He destroyed our injustice. Love is stronger than hate, just as God is stronger than our common enemy, the Devil.

"Was this the cause of your courage and hope in the gruesome days ..."

"Yes! You have said it well, Son. So to answer your question, Christ's Love was sacrificial. His love is greater than simple justice. Love is greater than justice, but without Justice suffering any loss of integrity. Remember the employer who answered the man he had hired in the morning who was complaining he was paid the same amount as one hired late in the day? He said that no injustice was done according to their agreement and that his choosing to be generous was not a fault.

Love suffers wounds willingly with the objective of doing good. The sacrifice of animals was the sign given to the children of Abraham and Jacob that mysteriously signified the Christ promised them, who would also be sacrificed. The sign of sacrifice is blood being shed. They were told to stretch out the lamb during the Passover in the same way Jesus would be stretched out -- in the form of a cross, a sign of contradiction between two opposing force or movements, which we can see as the horizontal, balancing force of justice demanding the eternal death of the sinner and the vertical ascending and descending force of God's Love desiring his salvation unto eternal life.

"But many have not been saved, Father. Didn't Jesus die for them too?"

Yes, He did. But they did not let their sinning die for His sake. They did not imitate His Sacrifice of Love by obeying God before man, that is, before their own desires as fallen humans. We have to let the old man in us, the fallen nature that tends to sin, die, if the seed of Divine Life is to germinate into new life. Nature follows this pattern always. Sin was worth more to the reprobate than God or their own eternal happiness. They allowed themselves to

become stuck in time and therefore lost sight of eternity. They rejected their own salvation, Son. They *chose* to refuse God's goodness,

by refusing to simply repent of their sins; for this alone is needed to gain the grace of Christ's saving action.

"How could they reject life, Father!"

In loving the image they had made of themselves more than the God who made *them* they ended up hating their beginning and their end, and therefore, their life. But to hate life is to love death.

"Why!!!"

They saw and still see this undying Love of God's Son given to others and *Envy takes hold of their heart*, and they hate the goodness of the giver and the good gained by the receiver, *because they don't have it*. They loved the false image of themselves more than they loved their real, immortal selves, their souls. They did not have eternal life because they did not admit and repent of the evil they had done; this would have been an application for the return of the good in themselves that their sin had rejected. They loved themselves, in pride, more than they loved God, in humility. They adored themselves as if *they* were a god. In the end, God gave them what they wanted.

We are not to be sad for them, Phillip. The evil has come upon *them*, and it is they who will be eternally sad. But we have chosen the eternal life of God, and we are glad. God is the efficient and final cause of your having that life. You only cooperated with God in acquiring it, just as your mother and I only cooperated with God in bringing about your human life. Do not be proud of this great fortune of divine life, but always be *thankful!* Petition, repentance, thanksgiving and praise -- these are the four ways of praying. But self-love and self-admiration is the *face of the enemy!* And sadness is the backside of the enemy, the trail of tears which we must avoid traveling. St. Thomas Aquinas said that sadness, which depresses the heart, is the most unhealthy of all the emotions. This can be true in a spiritual sense, too. We are sad that we have sinned, but sadness, the awareness of *present* evil, is not the normal state of a Christian, who is repentant and has Faith that the presence, the Love of God is with him and who has a firm hope that this seed will blossom forth into love eternal when he sees God in His fullness and rests in the pure joy of knowing that happiness is secure for eternity.

Let us break off now for three days, son, to go down and gather the sheep, for the shearers will be done with them. Then we will lead them up here to these higher pastures for the summer.

I knew this labor would lighten the heart of my son, who had suffered much because his love for God had been cruelly wounded by the knowledge that many had turned away and lost their souls, two thirds of the human race according to one tradition. The Cross had been laid on Phillip's shoulders now, for his suffering love was the same suffering love of Christ on

Calvary. Now he could hear the rest of the story. Now it could make sense and be endured, for sacrificial love can endure all trials.

[{TABLE OF CONTENTS}](#)

[{PREFACE}](#)

[{CHAPTER I}](#) [{CHAPTER II}](#) [{CHAPTER III}](#) [{CHAPTER IV}](#) [{CHAPTER V}](#) [{CHAPTER VI}](#)

[{CHAPTER VII}](#) [{CHAPTER VIII}](#) [{CHAPTER IX}](#) [{CHAPTER X}](#) [{CHAPTER XI}](#)

[{Bibliography}](#)

[{Bookstore}](#) [{Order Form}](#) [{Instructions}](#) [{Notice of Permissions}](#) [{Download}](#)

[{Links}](#)

[{FRAMES VERSION}](#)

(Requires a frames-enabled browser)

*Website contents © 1999 - 2000, [Web Designs by Doc](#). Literary content ©1999 - 2000, Dave Pedry. All rights reserved.*

## CHAPTER III

## THE PATRIARCHS: THE PROMISE AND THE BLESSING

Phillip, the faith of Modern Christians before the Great Chastisement was so weak that very few believed Adam and Eve were actual individual people or that Methuselah and the other Patriarchs lived 800 to 969 years. If Paradise, where Adam and Eve lived before the Fall, was just a particularly lush material place, then it is difficult to believe that Adam existed on a higher spiritual and material level than he did after the Fall. But if the ethereal Paradise is accepted, the superior nobility of character, the greater stature of mankind can be imagined as a remnant of this lost glory even after the Fall from Paradise. The decreasing longevity of the patriarchs from Adam to Jacob would suggest that as actual sins increased over time, the stature and nobility of man, and therefore, his longevity, decreased in proportion to the loss of innocence of the human race. Adam, Cain, Seth, Methuselah, and all those mentioned did live to great ages. Men were of a stature beyond the imagination of later times. The visions of Anne Catherine Emmerich, the 19<sup>th</sup> Century German nun who lived for 22 years on the Eucharistic Host alone, envisioned the history of those who descended from Adam until the death of Christ. Reading of her visions later will help us grasp man's former nobility of stature and reveals much to us of these mysterious times.

"Tell me about her. I am curious, Father."

"Anne Catherine Emmerich was born on September 8, 1774, at Flamske, near Koesfeld, Westphalia, in West Germany, and became a nun of the Augustinian Order on November 13, 1803, in the Convent of Agnetenberg at Dulmen (also in Westphalia). She died on February 9, 1924. Although of simple education, she had perfect consciousness of her earliest days and could understand the liturgical Latin from her first time at Mass.

During most of her later years she would vomit up even the simplest food or drink, subsisting for long periods almost entirely on water and the Holy Eucharist. She was told in mystic vision that her gift of seeing past, present and future was greater than that possessed by anyone else in history.

From the year 1812 until her death, she bore the stigmata of Our Lord, including a cross over her heart and wounds from the crown of thorns. Though Anne Catherine Emmerich was an invalid confined to bed during her later years, her funeral was nevertheless attended by a greater concourse of mourners than any other remembered by the oldest inhabitants of Dulmen.

Her mission in life seems to have been to suffer in expiation for the godlessness that darkened the "Age of Enlightenment" and the era of the Napoleonic wars, a time during which she saw her convent closed and her order suppressed by Napoleon.

During the last five years of her life the day-by-day transcription of her visions and mystical experiences was recorded by Clemens Brentano, poet, literary leader, friend of Goethe and Gorres, who, from the time he met her, abandoned his distinguished career and devoted the rest of his life to this work. The immense mass of notes preserved in his journals forms one of the most extensive case histories of a mystic ever kept."

People were too scientifically enlightened for such a wonderful book to become popular reading, Phillip. Noah's Ark was also a fable in the popular imagination. Noah

took 100 years to build the Ark, amid the jeers of unbelievers. This massive ark was found at 17,000 feet above sea level on Mount Ararat in the earliest times and as late as the 20<sup>th</sup> Century. History records many sightings of it there, even before the time of Christ.

I first heard an eyewitness account from a man who was taken to it during World War II by its traditional guardians, the Kurds. He said that as he stood before it, encased in blue ice and broken in half, an awesome spiritual presence seemed to guard it. He saw many artifacts, some kept by Kurds as relics in their homes, which had come from inside the Ark. They testified to its occupation by humans and animals.

The Catholic Czar of Russia, Nicholas II, sent two companies of soldiers to examine the ark. They measured it to be exactly those dimensions found in Genesis, 80 x 50 x 30 cubits.

"What is a cubit, Father?"

It is the length from a man's elbow to his fingertips. Which makes for a handy ruler. The Russian soldiers entered the Ark, gathering detailed information. Their report was later suppressed by the Communists, who assassinated Nicholas and his family, and took over Holy Russia, which was 98% Catholic.

I remember saying to a friend in 1998, "You find a massive boat, measuring the exact dimensions given in Genesis for Noah's Ark at 17,000 feet, much of it encased in solid blue ice, and you have to ask, how did it get up there if it wasn't floated to that great height? No race of men were ever so stupid that they would build a boat that far from water and forest, dragging huge pieces of lumber up an incredibly high, rugged, steep mountain to there construct a useless boat that would never float.

And there was evidence of a recent massive flood in the stratigraphy of that area of the world. But, as a geologist, I also had to ask, how could water materialize to create a worldwide flood to 17,000 feet above sea level? The answer most probable seemed to be the near collision of a fiery comet with the earth that released much heat, melting the two polar ice caps, while causing by evaporation of ocean waters a huge amount of water vapor, which precipitated massive rains. An earth-wide tidal wave caused by the comet's passing could have carried a floating object to an even greater height than the added water from the melted ice caps could account for. We had already supposed such a comet as the destroyer of the dinosaurs and many other species in the Cretaceous Age, 430 million years BC. If God used a celestial comet to punish the world 13 years ago, Phillip, why not in the ancient past? Of course, this speculation is not meant to suggest that God could not have miraculously brought about such a flood. The only inconceivable thing to me is that God would lie to us about such a Flood in Holy Scripture.

"Why did Christians lose their faith in the truth of Scripture, Father?"

Caught in the pride of life, Man casts off sacred truths that God has given us for a warning and an instruction, just as he would throw away the peel of an orange. There is

nothing more amazing in the history of the world than this careless conceit and mockery by man. It is like the vomiting of a drunken brute lying in the gutter of ignorance.

"Father, another question?"

"Yes, Son."

"If the universe was created in seven days, as it tells us in Genesis, and Adam was created on the 6<sup>th</sup> day, and he lived around 5000 BC, how could rocks on earth be 430 million years old or the earth be 4.6 billion years old?"

They could not be that old if the "days" of creation are to be interpreted as meaning twenty-four hour days. But if that use of "day" referred to an indefinite period in God's time, as expressed in, "a 1000 years is as a day to the Lord," then neither a 6 billion year old earth nor a 9 billion year old universe is challenged by Scripture. Trying to make the earth 7000 years old or even 20,000 makes an absolute joke out of geologic and astronomical facts. Phillip, in Scripture, phrases like, "in the day of Abraham" are used. This "day" referred to an indefinite time, not just 24 hours. Man has always used such an expression, even in the 20<sup>th</sup> Century. The true interpretation of Scripture is not a mechanically literal interpretation that does not need the inspiration of the Holy Spirit or the common sense and knowledge that man is given by God otherwise.

The order in which Creation came about in Genesis agrees with the sequential order with which astronomical objects appear and fossils of creatures appear. And the nine-mile thick layer of sedimentary rock found on the earth would easily take the estimated 630 million years (not 6 days) to be deposited at the observed rate of sedimentation for those various kinds of rock, which the earth is always forming by weather erosion and deposition. To form a mere 100 feet of sandstone or carbonate rock would take tens of millions of years.

The diabolical human agents had their phony wise men interpret Scripture non-literally when it suited their aims and literally, as in this case, when that suited their aim – which was, in either case, to make the Bible seem unbelievable to intelligent, educated men.

"So the enemy posed as Protestant fundamentalists defending Scripture against atheistic evolution?"

Exactly so, Phillip. How better to lead men away from the many valid philosophical and scientific reasons why Evolution is an error, while making a pseudoscientific case for the unreasonableness of the creation account in Scripture. Christians are made out to be ignorant diehards, spurning scientific facts. A phony criterion for creating a false Christian identity was also cultivated by such unnecessary and foolish beliefs, as well as the pride and arrogant ignorance necessary to sustain such an identity.

"I can see where the devil's agents reaped a nice harvest by that fraud, Father."

Before advanced science, this matter of the seven days may have been accepted as a possible interpretation by most in the Church out of simple ignorance of the scientific

evidence to the contrary. For there is nothing impossible in God creating all things in seven 24-hour days. In fact, some theologians think the universe was created in eternity, in which case time has no relevance. But with all the geological evidence in, it was mainly the Fundamentalists or Protestant literalists who expounded this belief in the 7 days in the face of overwhelming scientific evidence to the contrary. They considered this a chance to stand out against popular opinion and the scientific establishment as valiant men of faith, a feather in their cap, with another sign that they alone were true to God's word, which they limited to their interpretation of the Protestant Bible, as edited by Martin Luther and others, while leaving the whole problem of the Divine Authority on

Earth needed to compile Scripture to begin with and then *rightly* interpret it totally unsolved.

Each heresy needs some exclusive, doctrinal error to separate it from other heresies and from the whole truth. The devil often creates heresy by pitting one lie against another greater lie, in order to make it appear good. For example, the Fundamentalists were one of the last Protestant sects manufactured, and they preached much that countered the moral laxity and theological corruption of the liberal or modernist heretics of their day, who were themselves, of course, another creation of the enemy. But this did not validate the principles of Fundamentalism. It just gave Fundamentalists a convenient scapegoat to flail with righteous indignation.

One disproof of Evolution was the second Law of Thermodynamics which declared that all material things, life forms included, will inevitably disintegrate or return to dust if an outside energy source does not actively inform them. This means that nothing can continue to exist as it is except by the creative energy of God.

Similarly, the law of dissolution and death is seen in all protest movements to the Divine Church; for they continue to divide and disintegrate because the outside energy source of God's Holy Spirit does not inform them with truth and life. God's Church He continually fills with Life. It is not equivocally divided against itself, but remains one, integral and unchanged over time. And this is one proof of its being divine.

By maintaining the preposterous seven 24-hour days of creation scenario, the Fundamentalists, initially at least, led by the enemy's *agent provocateurs*, fueled the rush of many, who couldn't buy this story, towards godlessness and into the camp of the Evolutionists. This was probably a well-planned maneuver by the atheists. Why else did it receive so much Press, which the enemy controlled almost totally. Another sign of the enemy's hand was that this Fundamentalist error of literalism was too readily assigned as the position of *all* those who believed in Creation.

"Father, I agree that all this is a little more than suspicious."

The question of creation versus evolution does not depend on a time frame anyway, Phillip. So the whole 7-day issue as framed was phony. A God who can bring all into

existence can do so in time or eternity, and if in time, in 9 billion years or 2 seconds. What God could *not* do, however, is give concrete evidence of the ancient age of the universe in order to deceive us, while actually creating it in seven days. So, unwary Christians were steered towards the vortex of confusion, which eroded faith. In the latter times, logical thought, solid syllogistic arguments were considered junk food for the ancients.

"How deep and pervasive this darkness seemed to be, Father. I am eager to begin the historical review of the world you promised to tell."

You are right in pulling me back, Phillip. Your father is a great wanderer. I tend to screw my mind into problems in order to get to the roots, and then I wake up and wonder how to return to the trail I was following.

I remember Phillip laughing heartily at this confession, and it gave me a glimmer of joy, which helped me continue on with renewed vigor.

Let's try to follow the essential thread or theme of history before Christ. This theme was *the Promise*, Son, the promise of a Redeemer, as first recorded in Genesis 3: 15. When speaking to the serpent (the devil), God said: "I will put enmity between you and the woman (Mary, the Mother of God) between your seed (Lucifer and the wicked)

and her seed (Jesus Christ and, by adoption, His followers); she shall crush your head, and you shall lie in wait for her heel." The Woman is Mary the Mother of God and, therefore, the Mother of the Church, the Mystical Body of Christ and the mother of God's People. She crushes the head of Satan in every age *through the power of her Son* and His adopted brethren, her spiritual children. By the way, any Bible which has "he" in place of "she" in this passage is a corruption of the original.

This promise of a holy offspring was repeated throughout history, Phillip, to Noah, Abraham, Moses, David, etc., because the Redeemer was also to be of their offspring in the flesh as patriarchs in the genealogical lineage of Christ. Spiritually, *God's People* were always defined by their belief in and hope in the doctrine of this Great Promise as one given first to Adam by God Himself. The acceptance of this Promise was the root of Divine Faith, which was fulfilled in Faith in Jesus Christ and all He taught. By this root of Faith the Patriarchs were saved through the Baptism of Desire.

And God said to Noe, "All that are on the earth shall die. But I will establish my covenant with you." God makes a solemn agreement and promise here with Noe, the just man, 'serve me all the days of your life, and I will give life (that is *God's Life*) to you and those descendants who follow your example in justice, which is obedience to My Law.'

"Is this covenant and promise repeated in every generation then between God and those who know, love and serve Him?"

Yes, Phillip, for He says to us, 'obey My Law, My Word, and I promise you Heaven through the mediation of My Son.' The People of the Promise are hated through the Envy of



those who know they *will not* to obey God's Law and to serve Him, even as their spiritual Father, Lucifer, also refused. Therefore, these reprobates, as such, *cannot* enter into the professed agreement or covenant with their Lord and Master. They are cut off from this living thread of history, though they may pound against the great hull of this Ark of the Covenant as they flounder in the terrible seas, drowning forever in its wake, as it passes over the ocean of time.

In envy and hatred they war against the good, seeking to steal all goods from them, as if they could really enjoy them. This issue is the pulse of history on which we will try to keep our fingers. The good are robbed of their goods, their earthly peace and even their life. This theft causes pleasure in the reprobates, but eternal life in those who will not forsake their eternal goods in order to save these earthly goods stolen from them. This fidelity and perseverance of the elect, by the grace of Christ, is in a manner the "heel" that crushes the enemies' head, that is, his pride.

"And is not the great example of fidelity, Father, when Mary said, "I am the handmaid of the Lord. Be it done unto me according to thy word."

You remember your lessons well, Phillip. And just as Mary's fidelity and obedience caused her to be chosen to bear the Life of God within her, so too the follower of Christ carries on the life of God himself through those works that depend on his Faith in Christ.

The "Sons of God", the term Genesis used for the spiritual progeny of Able and Seth, were keenly aware of what had been lost by Adam, their grandfather and great-grandfather. They must have personally spoken with Adam for up to 900 years! Oral tradition was so powerful a vehicle that all was only written down, finally, in the time of Moses, who wrote the first five books of Holy Scripture.

Organized religion began soon after the Fall; for we read in Genesis "at this time men began to call upon God," a standard Hebrew phrase for worship. Cain and Abel offered sacrifice, calling upon God. But God answered only the just man, Abel. Cain, the firstborn, who did not "do well," was *envious* of Able. Envy is hatred of the good of another, which good is seen as an evil because the one who hates does not have that good.

"But if I do not have some good, it does not make that good an evil, for I desire it as a good."

But the envious hate that good they cannot have under the aspect of it being in the possession of another. Envy is the great sin which gives birth to many others. Next to pride itself, it is the greatest sin, I believe, and one that often exists undetected in the hearts of sinners. In wisdom 2:23 we read: "*God created man incorruptible (before the Fall Adam would not have died) but by the **envy** of the devil, death came into the world.*"

It must be remembered, as the Patriarchs well knew, that Adam spoke *with God* in the Garden. Therefore, what Adam passed on was of tremendous, most sacred authority.

Oral tradition was powerful, for Adam spoke with Methuselah, who knew Sem, who lived in the days of Abram, whose son Isaac was a contemporary of Moses' father, Amram, so that only six persons might keep up the memory of thing that happened 2500 years before.

These Patriarchs, known as the Sons of God, were those to whom God entrusted the Word of God, historically, literally, figuratively, physically, and spiritually. Those who mocked them were called the "Sons of Men," descended spiritually and probably physically for the most part from Cain. Notice, Phillip, that in Genesis it was after the "Sons of God" took the "Daughters of Men" in marriage that "the wickedness of man on earth was great" and God decided to send the Flood. In mixing good with evil, the good is contaminated.

The bond of charity, which is the *action* of the Holy Spirit, unites God and the just man – but only through the merits and salvation of Jesus Christ, only begotten Son of God, the Second Person of the Blessed Trinity become Man. Charity, the divine Love of God for God, the Personification or Spirit of the Love of the Father for the Son and of the Son for the Father, is the fire and breath of Life itself. Because of this Love, alone, all things came to be and live in existence. To have this Love is to have Sanctifying Grace, that is, God's Life. Having it, man has the *Promise* of eternal life, the pearl of great price, for which a man will sell all that he has to obtain.

The Promise of a Redeemer, and therefore, of this Divine Eternal Life was physically carried through ancient history to Christ's birth in the generative power of certain just men, and was called the *Blessing for a Holy Offspring*. This Blessing would bear final fruit in the Immaculate Conception, that is, the special, non-carnal generation of Mary, the Mother of God, the spotless, pure vessel, the Ark of the Covenant, the Tabernacle of the Promised Redeemer, who was the Mystical *Fruit* of the Tree of Life, which stood in the center of the Garden of Eden. For Mary offered to Jesus the material of purified and perfect human life, which God then animated with *His Life*. This union of God and Man in one person could not have taken place without the Blessing which provided the pure and perfect human mother.

The body cannot be left out of Redemption, Phillip, for man is, by *God's design*, a composite being made of *both* body and soul, matter and spirit. Their separation is, by

definition, death. They are lost together or saved together. This is why the Resurrection of the body is a necessary doctrine of Christianity.

Mary made the offering of her immaculate body and soul to God, in behalf of mankind and in union with the charity of all just men of all times, for she was the perfection of all humanity, and therefore, the perfect representative of human good and the receptacle of God's Life, God's Mercy, God's Goodness, Power, Knowledge, Wisdom ... The Blessed Virgin Mary was God's gift to us, His *chosen* Tabernacle. Though pretending to be truly Christian, any sect denigrates, de-emphasizes, dishonors or ignores the place of the Virgin Mary in Redemption is known to be a work of the devil, her mortal enemy, who wishes to generate

insult to the Goodness of God and *His* means of Redemption.

Phillip, the whole idea of Religion, of a Divine Liturgy (ritual of the word) is that man notes what *God* had done and what *God* wishes man to do in serving and worshipping Him. God wishes us to humbly *intercede* through His Saints, whom *He has fashioned and used* to bring us, in every age, to Salvation. His greatest instrument, promised to us in the beginning (in Genesis) is the Mother of Jesus, the Mother of *God!* God *demands* that we use *her* to come to Him, *just as He humbled Himself to come to us through her*, His own creature. *We must be like Him in humility.* Therefore, in these end times, the devil was conquered only through the invocation of the Blessed Mother of God, that is, by the means God had supplied us. Our praying the Holy Rosary and wearing the Brown Scapular of Mt. Carmel (her habit), and through devotion to her Immaculate Heart we were united with her in prayer before God, she whom God could not refuse because she knew His Will. Those who invoked the intercession of Mary through the celebration of the Divine Mysteries contained in the Mass and the other devotions comprised the Army that defeated the antichrist and "crushed the head of the serpent" in the latter times.

Those who were led away from the Church by the wiles of Satan's agents had rejected Mary and the prayer of the Rosary, Mary's Psalter, the parts of which we find recorded in Scripture itself. The Hail Mary prayer is virtually complete in the first chapter of Luke's Gospel: vs. 28 "And the angel being come in said to her: Hail, full of grace, the Lord is with thee; blessed art thou among women." And the next line of the psalter reads, "and blessed is the fruit of thy womb, Jesus." Vs. 31 says "Behold thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and shalt bring forth a son; and thou shalt call his name Jesus." The last lines of the Hail Mary are "Holy Mary, Mother of God, pray for us sinners, now, and at the hour of our death." What person, who would seek the prayers of his neighbor in a time of need, could object to these lines.

Consider how proud the devil is. Humiliation crushes him. And what humiliated him even more than being shown that God would become the God-Man and rule over him was that God would choose His Mother from among mere humanity to be *the instrument* for His first Advent and the crushing of Satan's head (which is synonymous with his pride).

It takes *true* humility to recognize the Mother of God as *God's chosen instrument of salvation* and, therefore, the Co-Redemptrix of Mankind, just as it takes true humility to accept the Divine Church, bearing its imperfect human crew and passengers, as God's instrument for our Redemption.

"It has always been taught, 'Outside the Church there is no salvation', Father. Why is it so hard for our pride to accept God's mediation to us through the Church and its priests and through Mary and the Saints?"

Phillip, if your brother comes and tells you to do a work for me, is it harder for you to

bear this than if I had come and commanded you myself?

"It would be harder for my pride to bear it coming from my brother, Father."

Then so too human pride pretends that it is too good to be approached by God's chosen instruments. Even when the owner of the vineyard sent his son, they killed him. What the proud will not admit, Phillip, is that they would secretly, at least, reject God the Father in person, if they would reject His Holy messengers and instruments. This is why they too will be condemned on the last day -- for the parable ends: 'what do you think the owner of the vineyard will do when he sees what these evil ones have done?'

Here is another mystery for you to ponder, Phillip, one which a certain tradition hands down to us: though Man was created in time, on the 6<sup>th</sup> day, the Mother of God must have existed in God from eternity. Femininity and motherhood represents fertility, the place in which something good can be planted and there be nourished and grow to viability. Is Mary eternal Wisdom incarnate as the language of the Book of Wisdom may suggest? For Wisdom is the perfect virtue that receives and nourishes, like a mother, the truth and love of God's life.

Let us return from our digression.

"I love your digressions, Father. When you wander I experience the freedom of wondering. I see myself on a great journey, an adventure, led by the Spirit. Where I go I do not know. But I know I am led by God. My Faith breaks through all fear of the unknown; for I believe with all my heart that what I come to see on this journey will be a blessing to me."

Tears welled in my eyes. I secretly wiped them away and waited to regain a steady voice before continuing. "And the skeptic would ask how you knew that you were being led by God and not by an evil spirit of error.

"And I would answer him, when you are led by the Holy Spirit you know not where you go or how but that you are led by Him you do know, for He comes from within you, and not from without as would the imposter."

This is called infused knowledge, Son. As good an answer as I could have given.

The just, whom Mary represented before Christ were the Patriarchs and especially those who had passed on the Blessing. For remember, there would be enmity between the devil and "her" seed, that is, Mary's seed, which also, by extension, means the just offspring of Eve whose end of fulfillment would be in Mary's Immaculate Conception -- which led to the divine offspring. The New Eve, which name means "mother of all the living", is the Virgin Mary, truly the *Spiritual Mother* (since she is the Mother of the Saviour) of *all* the living, that is, of *all* those who have or will ever gain eternal life, which is the life of Her Son, which He gave to all who would believe in Him. He said, 'I will give you my flesh to eat and my blood to drink so that you will have life within you that will never die.'

Adam and his descendants knew they were under the sentence of death, for God had said to Adam, "In the sweat of your brow you shall eat bread, till you return to the ground, since out of it you were taken; for dust you are and unto dust you shall return." In and of himself, as a mere creature, man is mortal. Nor does he even exist without God. It is God who is the end man was made to enjoy, who holds out to him *super-natural* life,

the life of *God*, which is not material or temporal. Man was made for union (Love) with God, and without a reunion after Adam's sin and separation from God, he cannot be happy; that is, he cannot arrive at his true end, the true *reason why* he exists, his final cause for being.

To enter into the Covenant of the Promise Adam and all the just had to have Faith that they would live forever and not die spiritually if they rejected the works of the flesh, the lusts of their now fallen nature, a lust that appeared to be life. The spiritual descendants of Cain's type did not have this Faith; therefore, they did not reject these works of lust.

The great act of faithful work that God asks of each man who wishes to be saved is to hold his natural life, which has fallen from grace, in subjection to the supernatural life of God, which in the end will redeem his natural life and restore it and even elevate it above its original glory. But this requires a leap of faith, from the visible here and now to the invisible hereafter, seen through belief in the Word of God. We must reach *up* for God's life.

"So, by submitting our fallen nature to the God-Man's Nature, we will reestablish ourselves in the right order of Creation, Father?"

In a higher order, actually, Son. God asks us to believe what we cannot see. This only is Faith. For the Beloved that we can see is not the subject of faith and hope but is the possession of enjoyment. Our joy on earth is contained in the Promise of our Faith. That Faith is, by analogy, the Ark of the Covenant that carries the hope and the promise of eternal life, the seed of Eternal Life. The tabernacle of the altar at Mass is made to resemble the Ark of the Covenant containing the Ten Commandments. And the Ark was traditionally made to resemble the ark of Noe, in which God passed over him and those in it during the Flood. But in this tabernacle of the altar is Eternal Life Itself, the Body, Blood, Soul and Divinity of Christ, hidden under the "veil" of the appearance of bread and wine. This veil is the test that continually exercises our Faith, which is *not* in seeing but in *believing*, on the Word of God. We cannot see this Life under the veil. It is ours *only by Divine Faith*, not the *human* faiths of those outside the True Church; for *human* faith is too weak to believe in the veiled Word of God, which is the only way the Word of God comes to us in this life. For no one in this life can look upon God as God and live.

Those who eat the Holy Eucharist without Faith, eat as if it were only what it appears to be, bread and wine; and they eat and drink unto damnation, as Scripture declares.

"Father, do you think Protestants and Neo-Protestants or Modernists rejected the Eucharist and the role of the Mother of God and her glory because they could not humble themselves before these mysteries?"

Yes, Phillip, I do. Pride balks at submission to a superior, but so much more to one inferior by nature, as bread is to God or as a woman is to a man. Many who tested God by their protest of His way demeaned the dignity of women. Only the People of God throughout history have honored women as they should be, without giving them authority over men. But the devil errs one way or the other, either by enshrining woman as a lustful goddess of love, or in modern times, as man's equal or even superior, or by degrading her as man's slave, as in times past. God confounded these errors with His Holy Mother.

The role of woman was perfected in Mary. Being the weaker vessel, the helpmate of Man, Eve should not have *led* Adam by suggesting he eat of the forbidden fruit. This was not her place; a woman's place is to follow. And so, "to Adam God said, 'Because you have listened to your wife (instead of Me) ... cursed be the ground because of you; in toil shall you eat of it all the days of your life...' And to Eve God said, 'he, your man,' "shall have dominion over you." The weakness of Eve is in every woman, and it rebels against this corrective command of submission, which God gave for the good of woman and of man. The devil has always sought to use this rebelliousness to snare mankind and snatch away eternal life. The arrogance of woman under Satan's influence appeared literally, stark naked, in the latter times, Phillip.

It is also good to recall in this matter what God said, "It is not good that the man is alone; I will make him *a helper* like himself." Woman was created to follow man and help him, and she was made from man. This implies, as we are taught, that she is, in some sense, incomplete while he is complete though both need the help of the other. Woman is contained in man, not the other way around. Even genetic evidence shows this subjugation in the material order. (Female = 2 "x" chromosomes; Male = one "x" *and* one "y" chromosome. The male has what the female does not, but not vice versa.)

"So you are saying, Father, there is both a created primogeniture in man, a natural superiority and authority and also a divinely commanded authority for the subjection of woman to the leadership and rule of man."

Yes. And rebellion and sin ensue when this order is broken, as the 20<sup>th</sup> century so sadly proved. But this subjection of woman is not to be understood as an arbitrary, despotic, total subjugation of woman to man; for spiritually, woman stands beside man before God, for both were made in God's image and likeness. But, the hierarchical order God *does* establish *must* be honored, or there *will* be evil to contend with.

"Father, several hours ago you seemed ready to read to me from the *Life of Christ* by Sr. Emmerich. My interest wishes to lead you ..."

... from my wanderings. Thank you again, Phillip – no, I mean it. Thank you. We could be here till the end of the world if you fail to reel me in once in a while.

What I am about to read to you does not have a substitute, for these are the words of the Venerable Anne Catherine Emmerich describing what God showed only her in vision and understanding concerning our first parents. Phillip, this is the dramatic question of all history, the answer to which determines man's actions: Will man allow himself to be impregnated by God's Life; will man be passive to God's creative power; or, will man try, in vain, to seize the active role and try to rule himself and creatures by his own self-guided will. Will he be like Eve or like Mary, like Adam or like Christ?

Consider this analogy, Son, as a preface to our readings. If I have a son who follows my direction, my will in all good things, I will give him authority and possession and enjoyment over all I have. He will be the instrument of my power and my will, an extension of me; so that in a certain sense I will share with him the very life within me. But if I have a son who is

self-willed, disobedient to my will, deaf to my direction, or dull in heeding it, I cannot use him as my own instrument. I will give him a corrective penance and only what he needs to sustain life so his pride will not soar even higher; for I want him, in yearning to live without the earthly comforts he tends to love too much, to return to me, as the prodigal son did in the parable Jesus preached. For my heart yearns

for what I have pro-created. This is how God had to treat with our first parents and the whole human race.

Let me read this true, mystical vision of our first parents:

Paradise is still in existence, but it is utterly impossible for man to reach it. I have seen that it still exists in all its splendor. It is high above the earth and in an oblique direction from it, like the dark globe of the angels fallen from heaven.

I saw Adam created, not in Paradise, but in the region in which Jerusalem was subsequently situated. I saw him come forth glittering and white from a mound of yellow earth, as if out of a mould. The sun was shining and I thought (I was only a child when I saw it) that the sunbeams drew Adam out of the hillock. He was, as it were, born of the virgin-earth. God blessed the earth, and it became his mother. He did not instantly step forth from the earth. Some time elapsed before his appearance. He lay in the hillock on his left side, his arm thrown over his head, a light vapor covering him as with a veil. I saw a figure in his right side, and I became conscious that it was Eve, and that she would be drawn from him in Paradise by God. God called him. The hillock opened, and Adam stepped gently forth. There were no trees around, only little flowers. I had seen the animals also, coming forth from the earth in pure singleness, the females separate from the males.

And now I saw Adam borne upon high to a garden, to Paradise.

God led all the animals before him in Paradise, and he named them. They followed him and gambled around him, for all things served him before he sinned. All that he named, afterward followed him to earth. Eve had not yet been formed from him.

I saw Adam in Paradise among the plants and flowers, and not far from the fountain that played in its centre. He was awaking, as if from sleep. Although his person was more like to flesh than to spirit, yet he was dazzlingly white. He wondered at nothing, nor was he astonished at his own existence. He went around among the trees and the animals, as if he were used to them all, like a man inspecting his fields.

Near the tree by the water arose a hill. On it I saw Adam reclining on his left side, his left hand under his cheek. God sent a deep sleep on him and he was rapt in vision. Then from his right side, from the same place in which the side of Jesus was opened by the lance, God drew Eve. I saw her small and delicate. But she quickly increased in size until full grown. She was exquisitely beautiful. Were it not for the Fall, all would be born in the same way, in tranquil slumber.

The hill opened, and at Adam's side arose a crystalline rock, formed apparently of precious stones. At Eve's lay a white valley covered with something like fine white pollen.

When Eve had been formed, I saw that God gave something, or allowed something to flow upon Adam. It was as if there streamed from the Godhead, apparently in human form, currents of light from forehead, mouth, breast, and hands. They united into a globe of light, which entered Adam's right side whence Eve had been taken. Adam alone received it. It was the germ of God's Blessing, which was threefold. The Blessing that Abraham received from the angel was one. It was of similar form, but not so luminous. Eve arose before Adam, and he gave her his hand. They were like two unspeakably noble and beautiful children, perfectly luminous, and clothed with beams of light as with a veil. From Adam's mouth I saw issuing a broad stream of glittering light, and upon his forehead was an expression of great majesty. Around his mouth played a sunbeam, but there was none around Eve's. I saw Adam's heart very much the same as in men of the present day, but his breast was surrounded by rays of light. In the middle of his heart, I saw a sparkling halo of glory. In it was a tiny figure as if holding something in its hand. I think it symbolized the Third Person of the Godhead. From the hands and feet of Adam and Eve, shot rays of light. Their hair fell in five glittering tresses, two from the temples, two behind the ears, and one from the back of the head.

I have always thought that by the Wounds of Jesus there were opened anew in the human body portals closed by Adam's sin. I have been given to understand that Longinus opened in Jesus' Side the gate of regeneration to eternal life, therefore no one entered heaven while that gate was closed.

The glittering beams on Adam's head denoted his abundant fruitfulness, his glory, his connection with other radiations. And all this shining beauty is restored to glorified souls and bodies. Our hair is the ruined, the extinct glory; and as is this hair of ours to rays of light, so is our present flesh to that of Adam before the Fall. The sunbeams around Adam's mouth bore reference to a holy posterity from God, which, had it not been for the Fall, would have been effectuated by the spoken word.

### 39

Adam stretched forth his hand to Eve. They left the charming spot of Eve's creation and went through Paradise, looking at everything, rejoicing in everything. That place was the highest in Paradise. All was more radiant, more resplendent than elsewhere.

In the centre of the glittering garden, I saw a sheet of water in which lay an island connected with the opposite land by a pier. Both island and pier were covered with beautiful trees, but in the middle of the former stood one more magnificent than the others. It towered high over them as if guarding them. Its roots extended over the whole island as did also its branches, which were broad below and tapering to a point above. Its boughs were horizontal, and from them arose others like little trees. The leaves were fine, the fruit yellow and sessile in a leafy calyx like a budding rose. It was something like a cedar. I do not remember ever having seen Adam, Eve, or any animal near that tree on the island. But I saw beautiful noble looking white birds and heard them singing in its branches. That Tree was the Tree of Life.



Just before the pier that led to the island, stood the Tree of Knowledge. The trunk was scaly like that of the palm. The leaves, which spread out directly from the stem, were very large and broad, in shape like the sole of a shoe. Hidden in the forepart of the leaves, hung the fruit clustering in fives, one in front, and four around the stem. The yellow fruit had something of the shape of an apple, though more of the nature of a pear or fig. It had five ribs uniting in a little cavity. It was pulpy like a fig inside, of the color of brown sugar, and streaked with blood-red veins. The tree was broader above than below, and its branches struck deep roots into the ground. I see a species of this tree still in warm countries. Its branches throw down shoots to the earth where they root and rise as new trunks. These in turn send forth branches, and so one such tree often covers a large tract of country. Whole families dwell under the dense foliage.

At some distance to the right of the Tree of Knowledge, I saw a small, oval, gently sloping hill of glittering red grains and all kinds of precious stones. It was terraced with crystals. Around it were slender trees just high enough to intercept the view. Plants and herbs grew around it and they like the trees bore colored blossoms and nutritious fruits.

At some distance to the left of the Tree of Knowledge, I saw a slope, a little dale. It looked like soft clay, or like mist, and it was covered with tiny white flowers and pollen. Here too were various kinds of vegetation, but all colorless, more like pollen than fruit.

It seemed as if these two, the hill and the dale, bore some reference to each other, as if the hill had been taken out of the dale, or as if something from the former was to be transplanted into the latter. They were to each other what the seed is to the field. Both seemed to me holy, and I saw that both, but especially the hill, shone with light. Between them and the Tree of Knowledge, arose different kinds of trees and bushes. They were all, like everything else in nature, transparent as if formed of light.

These two places were the abodes of our first parents. The Tree of Knowledge separated them. I think that God, after the creation of Eve, pointed out those places to them.

I saw that Adam and Eve were little together at first. I saw them perfectly free from passion, each in a separate abode. The animals were indescribably noble looking and resplendent, and they served Adam and Eve. All had, according to their kind, certain retreats, abodes, and walks apart. The different spheres contained in themselves some great mystery of the Divine Law, and all were connected with one another.

I saw Adam and Eve walking though Paradise for the first time. The animals ran to meet and follow them, but they appeared to be more familiar with Eve than with Adam. Eve was in fact more taken up with the earth and created things. She glanced below and around more frequently than Adam. She appeared the more inquisitive of the two. Adam was more silent, more absorbed in God. Among the animals was one that followed Eve more closely than the others. It was a singularly gentle and winning, though artful creature. I know of none other to which I might compare it. It was slender and glossy, and it looked as if it had no bones. It walked upright on its short hind feet, its pointed tail trailing on the ground. Near the head, which was round with a face exceedingly shrewd, it had little short paws, and its wily tongue was ever in motion. The color of the neck, breast, and under part of the body was pale yellow, and down the back it was a mottled brown very much the same as an eel. It was about as tall as a child of ten years. It was constantly around Eve, and so coaxing and intelligent, so nimble and supple that she took great delight in it. But to me there was something horrible about it. I can see it distinctly even now. I never saw it touch either Adam or Eve. Before the Fall, the distance between man and the lower animals was great, and I never saw the first human beings touch any

of them. They had, it is true, more confidence in man, but they kept at a certain distance from him.

When Adam and Eve returned to the region of shining light, a radiant Figure like a majestic man with glittering hair stood before them. He pointed around, and in few words appeared to be giving all things over to them and to be commanding them something. They did not look intimidated, but listened to

## 40

him naturally. When he vanished, they appeared more satisfied, more happy. They appeared to understand things better, to find more order in things, for now they felt gratitude, but Adam more than Eve. She thought more of their actual bliss and of the things around them than of thanking for them. She did not rest in God so perfectly as did Adam, her soul was more taken up with created things. I think Adam and Eve went around Paradise three times.

Again I saw Adam on the shining hill upon which God had formed the woman from a rib of his side as he lay buried in sleep. He stood alone under the trees lost in gratitude and wonder. I saw Eve near the tree of Knowledge, as if about to pass it, and with her that same animal more wily and sportive than ever. Eve was charmed with the serpent, she took great delight in it. It ran up the Tree of Knowledge until its head was on a line with hers. Then clinging to the trunk with its hind feet, it moved its head toward hers and told her that, if she would eat of the fruit of that tree, she would no longer be in servitude, she would become free, and understand how the multiplication of the human race was to be effected. Adam and Eve had already received the command to increase and multiply, but I understood that they did not know as yet how God willed it to be brought about. I saw too that had they known it and yet sinned after that knowledge, Redemption would not have been possible. Eve now became more thoughtful. She appeared to be moved by desire for what the serpent had promised. Something degrading took possession of her. It made me feel anxious. She glanced toward Adam, who was still quietly standing under the trees. She called him, and he came.

Eve started to meet him, but turned back. There was a restlessness, a hesitancy about her movements. Again she started, as if intending to pass the tree, but once more hesitated, approached it from the left, and stood behind it screened by its long pendent leaves. The tree was broader above than below, and its wide leafy branches drooped to the ground. Just within Eve's reach hung a remarkably fine bunch of fruit.

And now Adam approached. Eve caught him by the arm and pointed to the talking animal, and he listened to its words. When Eve laid her hand on Adam's arm, she touched him for the first time. He did not touch her, but the splendor around them grew dim.

I saw the animal pointing to the fruit, but he did not venture to snap it off for Eve. But when the longing for it arose in her heart, he broke off and handed her the central and most beautiful piece of the clustering five.

And now I saw Eve draw near to Adam, and offer him the fruit. Had he refused it, sin would not have been committed. I saw the fruit break, as it were, in Adam's hand. He saw pictures in it, and it was as if he and Eve were instructed upon what they should not have known. The interior of the fruit was blood-red and full of veins. I saw Adam and Eve losing their brilliancy and

diminishing in stature. It was as if the sun went down. The animal glided down the tree, and I saw it running off on all fours.

I did not see the fruit taken into the mouth as we now take food in eating, but it disappeared between Adam and Eve.

I saw that while the serpent was still in the tree, Eve sinned, for her consent was with the temptation. I learned also at that moment what I can not clearly repeat; namely, that the serpent was, as it were, the embodiment of Adam and Eve's will, a being by which they could do all things, could attain all things. Here it was that Satan entered.

Sin was not completed by eating the forbidden fruit. But that fruit from the tree which, rooting its branches in the earth thus sent out new shoots, which continued to do the same after the Fall, conveyed the idea of a more absolute propagation, a sensual implanting in self at the cost of separation from God. So, along with disobedience, there sprang from their indulgence that severing of the creature from God, that planting in self and through self those selfish passions in human nature. He that used the fruit solely for the enjoyment it affords, must accept as the consequence of his act the subversion, the debasement of nature as well as sin and death.

The blessing of a pure and holy multiplying out of God and by God, which Adam had received after the creation of Eve was, in consequence of that indulgence, withdrawn from him; for I saw that the instant Adam left his hill to go to Eve, the Lord grasped him in the back and took something from him. From that something, I felt that the world's salvation would come.

Once on the Feast of the Holy and Immaculate Conception, God gave me a vision of that mystery. I saw enclosed in Adam and Eve the corporal and spiritual life of all mankind. I saw that by the Fall it became corrupted, mixed up with evil, and that the bad angels had acquired power over it. I saw the Second Person of the Godhead come down and, with something like a crooked blade, take the Blessing from

Adam before he had sinned. At the same instant, I saw the Virgin issuing from Adam's side like a little luminous cloud, and soaring all resplendent up to God.

By the reception of the fruit, Adam and Eve became, as it were, intoxicated, and their consent to sin wrought in them a great change. It was the serpent in them. Its nature pervaded theirs, and then came the tares among the wheat.

...Marriage is a state of penance.

...Adam and Eve before sin were very differently constituted from what we, poor, miserable creatures now are. With the reception of the forbidden fruit, they imbibed a material existence. Spirit became matter; flesh, an instrument, a vessel. At first they were one in God, they sought self in God; but afterward they stood apart from God in their own will. And this self-will is self-seeking, a lusting after sin and impurity. By eating the forbidden fruit, man turned away from his Creator. It was as if he drew creation into himself. All creative power, operations, and attributes, their commingling with one another and with all nature, became in man material things of different forms and functions.

Once man was endowed with the kingship of nature, but now all in him has become nature. He is now one of its slaves, a master conquered and

fettered. He must now struggle and fight with nature – but I cannot clearly express it. It was as if man once possessed all things in God, their Creator and their Centre; but now he made himself their centre, and they became his master.

...Man was created to fill the choirs of the fallen angels. Were it not for the Fall of Adam, the human race would have increased only till the number of the fallen angels was reached, and then the world would have come to an end. Had Adam and Eve lived to see even one sinless generation, they would not have fallen. I am certain that the world will last until the number of the fallen angels has been filled, until the wheat shall have been reaped from the chaff.

...The first man was an image of God, he was like heaven; all was one in him, all was one with him. His form was a reproduction of the Divine Prototype. He was destined to possess and to enjoy earth and all created things, but holding them from God and giving thanks for them. Man was however free; therefore, was he subjected to trial, therefore was he forbidden to eat of the Tree of Knowledge.

...Mankind at first numbered two, then three, and at last they became innumerable. They had been images of God; but after the Fall, they became images of self, which images originated in sin.

Sr. Emmerich saw the Blessing for a pure and holy offspring, which was given to Adam and taken back before his Fall "descending from first-born to first-born, and always transmitted with a sacramental action ... I saw the transmitting of this Mystery through the ancestry of Jesus Christ down to Joachim and Anne (the parents of the Virgin Mary) the purest and holiest couple who ever existed ..." "in order that Mary might be as pure and stainless in her conception as was Eve upon coming forth from the side of the sleeping Adam." "I saw Mary become the living Ark of God's New Covenant." As the Mother of Christ, she is the mother of His Church, the Bride of Christ wherein His Holy Union with Mankind resides.

Phillip, the living Ark after Christ's death is the One, Holy, Catholic Church, which bears within it, Jesus, the salvation of the whole world. By its seven sacred acts, the Sacraments, the Holy Spirit proceeding from the Father and the Son works through the Church to save us. Mary bore Christ within her as His Mother, but the Church is united to Christ as a bride to the groom, so that other Christs (Christians) are borne of this union. The Church bears children of the Promise in those who are conceived by it in Baptism. The Church was conceived when on the cross Jesus gave to His disciple John His own Mother, and to Mary, John. It was born when the lance pierced Jesus' Sacred Heart. And this Holy Catholic Church made its epiphany or was manifested on Pentecost Day when the Holy Spirit descended upon the Apostles and Mary.

As I spoke those words I looked at Phillip with love. It seemed that we were spiritually elevated in a holy moment. I remember the sweet and mysterious silence that followed. Then we must have fallen asleep before the glowing coals of the hearth.

The next morning was especially cold. We huddled close to the fire with our cups of tea in both hands. "What I am now to tell you, Phillip, may shock you somewhat. It is a mystery I have tried to prepare you for yesterday. Let your Faith precede you as I explain the Blessing. The Blessing for a pure and holy offspring was the preserved actuality of the original plan of God *for mankind to conceive offspring without carnal intercourse*. This Blessing finally came to fruition in the Immaculate Conception of Mary by Joachim and Anne, her parents, without carnal intercourse being involved. Let us read again from *The Life of Christ* by Sr. Emmerich.

"When Anne had long besought God not to separate her from Joachim, her pious husband, although he had been pleased to deprive her of children, an angel appeared to her. He hovered above her in the air. He told her to set her heart at rest, for the Lord had heard her prayer; that she should on the following morning go with two of her maid-servants to the Temple of Jerusalem; that there under the Golden Gate, entering by the side of the valley of Josaphat, she should meet Joachim, who was even now on his way thither, that Joachim's offering would be accepted that his prayer would be heard, that he (the angel) had appeared also to him. The angel likewise directed Anne to take some doves with her as an offering, and promised that the name of the child she was soon to conceive should be made known to her.

Anne thanked the Lord and returned to the house. When, after her lengthy prayer, she lay on her couch asleep I saw light descending upon her. It surrounded her, yes, even penetrated her. I saw her, upon an interior perception, tremblingly awake and sit upright. Near her, to the right, she saw a luminous figure writing on the wall in large, shining Hebrew characters. I read and understood the writing word for word. It was to this effect that she should conceive, that the fruit of her womb should be altogether special, and that the Blessing received by Abraham was to be the source of this conception. I saw Anne's anxiety as to how she should communicate all that to Joachim; but the angel reassured her by telling her of Joachim's vision. I received then a clear explanation of Mary's Immaculate Conception. I saw that, in the Ark of the Covenant, a Sacrament of the Incarnation, of the Immaculate Conception, a Mystery for the restoration of fallen humanity was contained. I saw Anne, with surprise and joy, reading the red and golden letters of this luminous writing. Her gladness increased to such a degree that, when she arose to set out for Jerusalem, she looked far younger than before. I saw on Anne's person at the instant the angel appeared to her a beam of light and in her a shining vessel I cannot better describe it than by saying that it was like a cradle, or a tabernacle which had been closed but was now opened, and made ready to receive a holy thing. How wonderfully I saw this, is not to be expressed; for I saw it as if it were the cradle of salvation for the whole human race, and also as a kind of sacred vessel now opened, and the veil withdrawn, I saw it quite naturally as if one and the same holy thing.

I saw too the apparition of the angel to Joachim. The angel commanded him to take his offering up to the Temple, promised that his prayer should be heard, and told him that he should pass under the Golden Gate. At this announcement, Joachim was troubled. He felt very timid about going again to the Temple. But the angel assured him that the priests had already been enlightened with regard to him.

... The angel now removed something from the Ark of the Covenant, though without opening the door. It was the Mystery of the Ark, the Sacrament of the Incarnation, the Immaculate Conception, the Consummation of the Blessing of Abraham. I beheld it under the appearance of a luminous body. The angel blessed or anointed Joachim's forehead with the tip of his thumb and forefinger; then he slipped the shining body under Joachim's garment and it entered into him, how I cannot say. He also gave him something to drink out of

a glittering chalice which he held supported by two fingers. The chalice was of the same shape as that used at the Last Supper, but without a foot. Joachim was directed to take it with him and keep it at his home.

Those who carried the Blessing and those united to them by justice are the subject matter of the Old Testament. In an unbroken genealogical thread, the history of the Sons of God and then the "People of God" begun under Moses' leadership is recorded in the story of our salvation as a spiritual race. Noe and Abraham in Babylon, and the Israelites in Egypt were each about to be overwhelmed by the diabolical paganism around them. Satan had worked his spell on men and was set to destroy these human vessels that could, in token of their righteousness and Faith, carry the Blessing. Satan wanted to wipe out the

human transmission of the Blessing. So God Himself, in a miraculous way, comes to rescue them and to cleanse the earth of wickedness. And He did this for His remnant on the grandest scale in the "Day of the Lord," Phillip.

"It appears, Father, that the salvation of the world has often hung upon the thread of a single man's or single nation's fidelity to God."

Yes, there does seem to be this real life drama, both before and after Christ's first advent. Likewise, the salvation of every man hangs upon the final perseverance of his fidelity to God – not necessarily flawless fidelity, but that of one who, though frail, always returns by repentance to God in the end.

Imagine the Blessing passing from Noah to his first-born son, Sem, the father of the Semetic race from which Jesus would be born. Ham became the father of the black race and Japeth of the white race. Those few cultures in my time, Phillip, who had preserved ancient records of their genealogy could easily, even in the year 2000 AD, trace their ancestors to one of these three men. That the 6 billion people living in 2000 AD had been generated from one man in the intervening 6963 years is easily computed. Yet most modern, "educated" men in that year believed they had descended from apes!

"Father! That men would believe that seems both laughable and sickening."

Evolution demands such a connection, Phillip. Eventually, by its twisted thinking one must conclude that our ancestors are one-celled animals. But a great 20<sup>th</sup> century geneticist named Glass, studying all peoples, said that all women could be traced to a single woman and all men to a *later* single man. The man was Noah; the woman would have been the common matriarch of the wives of Noah's three sons. This genetic evidence disproves the "evolution" of man from a race of ape-men descended from apes. And Glass' distinct genetic line of women versus men hints at the separate creation of a first man and a first woman.

"Apes, Father!?"

In Scripture it is called the "operation of error", Son. When justice is willfully expelled from a soul's life, and it lives in habitual unrepented sin, the intellect cannot apprehend the

truth, for though it is naturally capable of doing so, the will, due to sin, is sick and perversely forbids reason to deliberate on or assent to the truth as the good that it really is, that is, as the truth. This is a sin against the Holy Spirit, which always involves malice, or bad will. This explains why the wicked can see but not see, hear but not hear. Wickedness blinds a man from the truth, no matter how much the truth is proved logically, or how great is the authority or sign attesting to the truth. There is a stopping of the ears, a refusal to concede even what is obvious. If God Himself stood before them performing miracles, *as Jesus did*, they would not believe. The problem is inside, in their mind and heart, not outside them in the lack of evidence or persuasive logic. Jesus said, 'if they will not believe you, my followers, they will not believe me.'

"Father, before the Second Coming was the spiritual condition of mankind like it was just before the flood?"

Yes, but the graces given to man in the last age were much clearer and more convincing for men than at any time since Paradise, and the conflict between good and evil before the Final Judgement will be even more strikingly unequivocal, for spiritual things, as they are now, will be more manifest to the senses. And the more clear and irrefutable the truth which is rejected, the greater the evil done in rejecting it.

"Perhaps in these latter times all will become more spiritualized, as if we were heading in the direction of Paradise where Adam and Eve were."

Perhaps.

"Father, some say that this time we live in and this renewed earth is Heaven, and that when Jesus came upon the clouds of Heaven, that was the final judgement."

At this final judgement, Phillip, Apocalypse 20:11 tells us that the heavens and the earth will pass away and will be no more and that all the dead will rise, but neither of these things happened after the Second Coming of Christ. These false prophets you speak of, who say heaven is here, beware of them, for they are the kind who will lead men astray again by their errors, saying, since this is Heaven, you are now free to do as you please; you are a god. The Mormons, the New Agers and other utopian sects such as the Jehovah Witnesses prophecied similarly because their mentor, Satan, knew that this age we are in would appear wonderful. He always mocks the truth, repeating it with a twist of error. This is not Heaven, for we still labor for our daily bread. This time we live in is still a material place. Heaven is in eternity, where time and place and matter do not exist. Our only heaven here is the peace of the kingdom of Christ which reigns in our hearts and is evidenced in our mutual charity. It is a spiritual *foretaste* of Heaven.

Again we are beginning to feel the call of sleep, Son. Let us retire, but awake early and hurry on through the ages with our story. Already we will have to send word to your mother by one of the shepherds that we will be delayed a week, and ask her if she needs anything in

the meantime.

After we broke fast the next morning, I pocketed a book and we walked along the mountain rim for miles. I continued to the best of my limited knowledge to summarize the view of history in which I saw the struggle of our salvation amidst the ongoing battle with the forces of Satan on earth, which would end in the "War of the Spirits," and the Second American Revolutionary War, which was part of WWIII -- one battle, a battle in which I had fought as one of the commanders under the generalship of St. Michael the Archangel.

"Father, if Sr. Emmerich saw many interesting things in her visions of Adam and Eve, can we read more of this today?"

Yes, I will read more about the "Promise and the Blessing which we discussed yesterday. It will help you understand much better.

After the Fall of Man, God made known to the angels His plan for the restoration of the human race.

I saw the throne of God. I saw the Most Holy Trinity and a movement in the Divine Persons. I saw the nine choirs of angels and God announcing to them the way by which He would restore the fallen race. I saw the inexpressible joy and jubilation of the angels at the announcement.

I saw Adam's glittering rock of precious stones arise before the throne of God, as if borne up by angels. It had steps cut in it, it increased in size, it became a throne, a tower, and it extended on all sides until it embraced all things. I saw the nine choirs of angels around it, and above the angels in heaven, I saw the image of the Virgin. It was not Mary in time; it was Mary in eternity, Mary in God. The Virgin entered the tower, which opened to receive her, and she appeared to become one with it. Then I saw issuing from the Most Holy Trinity an apparition which likewise went into the tower.

Among the angels, I noticed a kind of ostensorium at which all were working. It was in shape like a tower, and on it were all kinds of mysterious carving. Near it on either side stood two figures, their joined hands embracing it. At every instant it became larger and more magnificent. I saw something from God passing through the angelic choirs and going into the ostensorium. It was a shining Holy thing, and it became more clearly defined the nearer it drew to the ostensorium. It appeared to me to be the germ of the divine Blessing for a pure offspring which had been given to Adam, but withdrawn when he was on the

point of hearkening to Eve and consenting to eat the forbidden fruit. It was the Blessing that was again bestowed upon Abraham, withdrawn from Jacob, by Moses deposited in the Ark of the Covenant, and lastly received by Joachim, the father of Mary, in order that Mary might be as pure and stainless in her conception as was Eve upon coming forth from the side of the sleeping Adam. The ostensorium likewise went into the tower.

... Then I saw in pictures the mystery of Redemption from the Promise down to the fulness of time, and in side pictures I saw counteracting influences at work. At last over the shining rock, I saw a large and magnificent church. *It was the One, Holy, Catholic Church, which bears living in itself the salvation*



*of the whole world.*

...At last, I saw a vision on earth such as God had shown to Adam; viz., that a Virgin would arise and restore to him the salvation he had forfeited. Adam knew not when it would take place, and I saw his deep sadness because Eve bore him only sons. But at last she had a daughter.

I saw Noe and his sacrifice at the time in which he received from God the Blessing. Then I had visions of Abraham, of his Blessing, and of the promise of a son Isaac. I saw the Blessing descending from first-born to first-born, and always transmitted with a sacramental action. I saw Moses on the night of Israel's departure from Egypt, getting possession of the Mystery, the Holy thing, of which none other knew save Aaron. I saw it afterward in the Ark of the Covenant. Only the High Priests and certain saints by a revelation from God had any knowledge of it. I saw the transmitting of this Mystery through the ancestry of Jesus Christ down to Joachim and Anne, the purest and holiest couple that ever existed, and from whom was born Mary, the spotless Virgin. And then I saw Mary become the living Ark of God's Covenant.

After some time, I saw Adam and Eve wandering about in great distress. They were no longer beaming with light, and they went about, one here, the other there, as if seeking something they had lost. They were ashamed of each other. Every step they took led them downward, as if the ground gave way beneath their feet. They carried gloom wherever they went; the plants lost their bright colors and turned grey, and the animals fled before them. They sought large leaves and wove them into a cincture for their loins. They always wandered about separate.

After they had thus fled for a considerable time, the region of refulgent light whence they had come began to look like the summit of a distant mountain. Among the bushes of a gloomy looking plain, they hid themselves, but apart. Then a voice from above called them, but they would not obey the call. They were frightened, they fled still further, and hid still deeper among the bushes. It made me sad to see that. But the voice became more imperative and, in spite of their desire to flee and hide, they were compelled to come forth.

The majestic Figure shining with light again appeared. Adam and Eve with bowed head stepped from their hiding places, but they dare not look upon their Lord. They glanced at each other, and both acknowledged their guilt. And now God pointed out to them a plain still lower than the one on which they stood. On it were bushes and trees. On reaching it, they became humble and, for the first time, rightly understood their miserable condition. I saw them praying when left there alone. They separated, fell on their knees, and raised up their hands with tears and cries. I thought as I gazed upon them how good it is to be alone in prayer.

Adam and Eve were at this time clothed in a garment that reached from the shoulders to the knee, and which was girded at the waist by a strip of the inner bark of a tree.

... Adam and Eve had been only one day in Paradise. I now see Paradise far, far off like a strip of land directly under the point of sunrise.

... I saw Adam and Eve reach the earth, their place of penance. Oh, what a touching sight! – those two creatures expiating their fault upon the naked earth! Adam had been allowed to bring an olive branch with him from Paradise, and now he planted it. Later on, the Cross was made from its wood.

... It was to the region of Mount Olivet that I saw Adam and Eve come. The country was very different from what it is at present, but I was assured that it was the same. I saw Adam and Eve living and doing penance on that part of Mount Olivet upon which Jesus sweat blood. They cultivated the soil. I saw them surrounded by sons. They were in great distress, and they implored God to bestow upon them a daughter, for they had received the Promise that the woman's seed should crush the serpent's head.

Eve bore children at stated intervals. After each birth a number of years was always devoted to penance. It was after seven years of penance that Seth, the child of promise, was born of Eve in the Grotto of the Crib, where, also, an angel announced to Eve that Seth was the seed given her by God in the place of Abel. For a long time, Seth was concealed in that Grotto, likewise in the cave in which Abraham was afterward suckled, for his brothers like those of Joseph sought his life.

## 46

Once I saw about twelve people: Adam, Eve, Cain, Abel, two sisters, and some young children. All were clothed in skins thrown over their shoulders like a scapular and girded at the waist. The female dress was large and full around the breast where it served as a pocket. It fell down around the limbs, and was fastened at the sides and once under the arm. The men wore shorter dresses, which had a pocket fastened to them. The skins from which their dresses were made were, from the neck to the elbow, exceedingly fine and white. They all looked very noble and beautiful in their clothing. They had huts in those days, partly sunk in the earth and covered with plants. Their household was quite well arranged. I saw orchards of low, but tolerably vigorous fruit trees. There was grain also, such as wheat, which God had given to Adam for seed.

I do not remember having seen either grapevines or wheat in Paradise. None of the productions of Paradise had to be prepared for eating. Such preparation is a consequence of sin and, therefore, a symbol of labor and suffering. God gave to Adam whatever it was necessary for him to sow. I remember having seen men who looked like angels, taking something to Noe when he went into the ark. It appeared to me to be a vine branch stuck in an apple.

A certain kind of grain grew wild at that time, and among it Adam had to sow the good wheat. That improved it for awhile, but it again degenerated and became worse and worse. The wild grain was excellent in those early times. It was most luxuriant further to the east, in India or China, where as yet there were but few inhabitants. It does not thrive where wine is largely made and fish abound.

The milk of animals was drunk in those days, and they likewise ate cheese dried in the sun. Among the animals, I noticed sheep in particular. All that Adam had named followed him from Paradise, but afterward they fled from him. He had to entice them back with food, that is the domestic animals, and familiarize them to himself. I saw birds hopping about, little animals running around, and all sorts of bounding creatures, such as antelopes, deer, etc.

The household order was quite patriarchal. I saw Adam's children in their separate huts, reclining around a stone at meals. I saw them also praying and giving thanks.

God had taught Adam to offer sacrifice; he was the priest in his family. Cain and Abel also were priests. I saw that even the preparation for their sacrifice took place in a separate hut.

On the head, they wore caps made of leaves and their stalks woven together. They were shaped like a ship and had a rim in front by which they could be raised from the head. Those first human beings had beautiful skin of a yellowish tinge, which shone like silk, and their hair was reddish yellow like

gold. Adam wore his hair long. His beard was short at first, but later he let it grow. Eve at first wore her long hair hanging around her; but later on she wound it around her head in a coil like a cap.

Fire I always saw like a hidden flame, and it appeared to be in the earth. It was given to man from heaven, and God Himself taught him the use of it. They burned for fuel a yellow substance that looked like earth. I saw no cooking going on. In the beginning, the food was merely dried in the sun; and the wheat, after being crushed, was exposed under twisted covers to the heat of the sun to dry. God gave them wheat, barley, and rye, and taught them how to cultivate them. He guided man in all things.

I saw no large rivers in the beginning as, for instance, the Jordan; but fountains sprang forth whose waters were conducted into reservoirs.

Flesh meat was not eaten before Abel's death.

I once had a vision of Mount Calvary. I saw on it a prophet, the companion of Elias. The mount was at that time full of caves and sepulchres. The prophet entered one of the caves and from a stone coffin filled with bones he took up the skull of Adam. Instantly an angel appeared before him, saying: "That is Adam's skull," and he forbade its removal. Scattered over the skull, was some thin yellow hair. From the prophet's account of what had occurred, the spot was named "The Place of Skulls" (Calvary). Christ's Cross stood in a straight line above that skull at the time of His Crucifixion.

I saw that Cain conceived on Mount Olivet the design to murder Abel. After the deed, he wandered about the same spot frightened and distracted planting trees and tearing them up again. Then I saw a majestic Figure in the form of a man refulgent with light appear to him. "Cain," He said, "where is thy brother Abel?" Cain did not at first see the Figure; but when he did, he turned and answered: "I know not. He has not been given in charge to me." But when God replied that Abel's blood cried to Him from the earth, Cain grew more troubled, and I saw that he disputed long with God. God told him that he should be cursed upon the earth, that it should bring forth no fruit for him, and that he should forthwith flee from the land in which he then dwelt. Cain responded that everywhere his fellow-men would seek to kill him. There were already many people upon the earth. Cain was very old and had children. Abel also left children, and there were other brothers and sisters, the children of Adam. But God replied that it would not

be so; that whoever should kill Cain should himself be punished seven-fold, and He placed a sign upon him that no one should slay him...

God pointed out to Cain a region to which he should flee. And because Cain said: "Then, wilt Thou let me starve?" – (the earth was for him accursed) – God answered no, that he should eat the flesh of animals. He told him likewise that a nation would arise from him, and that good also would come from him. Before this men ate no flesh.

Cain went forth and built a city, which he named after his son Henoch.

Abel was slain in the valley of Josaphat opposite Mount Calvary. Numerous murders and evil deeds took place there at a subsequent period. Cain slew Abel with a kind of club that he used to break soft stones and earth when planting in the fields. The club must have been of hard stone, for it was shaped

like a pickaxe, the handle of wood.

We must not picture to ourselves the earth before the Deluge as it is now. Palestine was by no means so broken up by valleys and ravines. Plains were far more extensive, and single mountains less lofty. The Mount of Olives was at that time only a gentle rising. The Crib Cave of Bethlehem was as later a wild cavern, but the surroundings were different.

The people of those early times were larger, though not out of proportion. We would regard them with astonishment, but not with fright, for they were far more beautiful in form than people of a later period. Among the old marble statues that I see in many places lying in subterranean caves, may be found similar figures.

Cain led his children and grandchildren to the region pointed out to him, and there they separated. Of Cain himself, I have never seen anything more that was sinful. His punishment appeared to consist in hard, but fruitless labor. Nothing in which he was personally engaged succeeded. I saw that he was mocked and reviled by his children and grandchildren, treated badly in every way. And yet they followed him as their leader, though as one accursed. I saw that Cain was severely punished, but not damned...

I saw Cain's descendants becoming more and more godless and sensual. They settled further and further up that mountain-ridge where were the fallen spirits. Those spirits took possession of many of the women, ruled them completely, and taught them all sorts of seductive arts. Their children were very large. They possessed a quickness, an aptitude for every thing, and they gave themselves up entirely to the wicked spirits as their instruments. And so arose on this mountain and spread far around, a wicked race which by violence and seduction sought to entangle Seth's posterity likewise in their own corrupt ways. Then God declared to Noe His intention to send the Deluge. During the building of the ark, Noe had to suffer terribly from those people.

I have seen many things connected with the race of giants. They could with ease carry enormous stones high up the mountain, they could accomplish the most stupendous feats. They could walk straight up trees and walls just as I have seen others possessed by the devil doing. They could effect the most wonderful things, they could do whatever they wished; but all was pure jugglery and delusion due to the agency of the demon...

Enoch, Noe's ancestor, opposed that wicked race by his teachings. He wrote much. Enoch was a very good man and one very grateful to God. In many parts of the open field, he raised altars of stone and there the fruits of the earth flourished. He gave thanks to God and offered sacrifice to Him. Chiefly in his family was religion preserved and handed down to Noe. Enoch was taken up to Paradise. There he waits at the entrance gate, whence with another (Elias) he will come again before the last day.

Cham's descendants likewise had similar relations with the evil spirits after the deluge, and from such connection sprang so many demoniacs and necromancers, so many mighty ones of the world, so many great, wild, daring men...

I saw Noe, a simple-hearted old man, clothed in a long white garment. He was walking about in an orchard and pruning the trees with a crooked bone knife. A cloud hovered over him and in it was a human Figure. Noe fell on his knees. I saw that he was, then and there, interiorly instructed upon God's design to destroy mankind, and he was commanded to build an ark. I saw that Noe grew sad at the announcement, and that he prayed for the punishment to be averted.

Phillip, we read that God taught Adam how to offer Him sacrifice; and through Adam this teaching and priestly office was passed on to the other Patriarchs. At the time, then, the true religion of God consisted of these priests and the people they offered sacrifice for. God

passed the Blessing on through these Patriarchs and priests, such as

Noe and Abraham. Melchisedech came to foreshadow the perfect priestly sacrifice of Christ. Finally, Moses placed the Blessing within the Ark of the Covenant which contained the tablets of the Ten Commandments upon which the Covenant was based, and the whole people of Israel, God's church, carried it with them. They were assigned a priesthood by God too, first of Aaron and his sons, who then passed this holy office on to the firstborn sons of Levi. All former and future priestly offices and sacrifices took their value and meaning from Jesus, the Divine Priest and Mediator, who died upon the altar of the Holy Cross. After his death He bestowed the power of that *perpetual* priesthood He had established, by which all men in every age were saved, onto the Twelve Disciples. They had been ordained at the Last Supper by Christ, Who commanded them to offer the Unbloody Sacrifice of Calvary, bread and wine become the Body and Blood of Christ until the end of time for all who would believe in Him, so they could have life in them by eating His body and drinking His Blood, as He commanded in St. John's Gospel. He commissioned them and those whom they would commission in future times to teach all nations His Word and Baptize them in the name of the Trinity. He gave them the power to forgive sins: 'whose sins you shall forgive they are forgiven them; whose sins you shall retain, they are retained. Whatever you bind on earth, shall be bound in Heaven.' (John 20:23, Matthew 18:18) This is clearly the bestowal of complete Divine Authority to the ministers of His One, Holy Church.

"So are you pointing out that the people of God have always had a priesthood from the beginning, Father?"

Yes, Phillip, and that where there is no priesthood, God's Church is not present. The ritual words and actions of the Mass parallel the rituals of the people of Israel and of the Patriarchs. Even the sacrifice God taught Adam prefigured the Mass in a rudimentary way. These prechristian rituals were signs and archetypes of the Bloody Sacrifice of Calvary and the unbloody sacrifice after the Last Supper, the first Mass. The prechristian rituals were advance applications for the graces that would come from the one Sacrifice of Christ.

The Protestants, sadly, cut themselves off from the Ark by denying the priesthood Christ established. In this they lost sight of the organized, objective, divinely empowered and constituted Church, with an Apostolic succession of leadership. The Church of England and all other heretical movements that kept a priesthood, but were cut off from the Church lost touch with the Divine Priesthood and their priesthood lost all its power and died on the vine.

From Adam on God assigned *certain* people to be priests, not *all* people. Christ did the same. If he had not, total confusion as to the identity and guidance of the Church would have begun as soon as the first heretics appeared. Eventually, the heretics had to admit that they had no leadership or guidance, for *all* were prophet, priest and "other christs" with his own creed, liturgy and congregation. Such chaotic fundamentalism was the inevitable, logical end

of the principle of protestantism: total dis-integration.

The real meaning of the priesthood of the people or laity is that of a lower order: the offering of personal sacrifices and virtuous acts to God in union with Christ, Who joins them with His Priestly Sacrifice to make them worthy to be offered to the Father in Christ's One Sacrifice, perpetually reenacted by His priesthood.

The principle of mediation is important to understand, Phillip. Just as a king rules a nation through various kinds of mediators and representatives, so too does Christ save

man and rule His Church through the priests He empowers. All power and good comes from Him, but he *chooses* to rule by delegation of His power. And if men can mediate and pray for and intercede for each other, cannot the Saints in Heaven do so for us in the Church. The power all comes from God. But who can say He cannot use creatures, or even blessed objects as channels of His grace.

"Father, it would seem that because God had chosen these means, they would be the most effective and natural means of ministering to and saving mankind and each person in all particular circumstances and times."

Yes, son.

"So is it true that no one of another creed can be saved then, Father?"

Not unless they be in the state of *invincible ignorance* of the true Faith. This does not mean stubborn, willful, and therefore, culpable ignorance. In such a case, they *should have known* the truth. But those who did all in their power to sincerely live a just life, repent of sin and search for the truth, but had not the opportunity to hear the fullness of Catholic truth preached to them, they would be saved, if they would have accepted the Faith had it been presented to them, which God alone can judge. In such cases God deals with the soul interiorly, binding them to the true Church, outside of which no man can be saved, by a *Baptism of desire*. But all who actually possessed the true Faith and cast it away until their death will be condemned; for this is apostasy, where one sins against the known truth, the sin against the Holy Spirit.

Many in my day seemed to have unanswered questions that presented obstacles to their belief. One who asks seeking an answer will find the answer if there is one, but many pose questions as immovable obstacles intended to defend their present ignorance. The former is on the road to finding the true Faith or as having unconquerable ignorance, but the latter will discover nothing more than they have, which is what they wanted.

"Father, did some ask why the Holy Sacrifice is repeated in every age, when only the one Sacrifice of Christ sufficed to save all men who would so choose.

The anticipatory grace of the Sacrifice of Calvary flowed, in a swense, through all true Divinely ordained ritual before Christ for the benefit of those who truly worshipped God. These valid but imperfect sacrifices of God's people were like promises which were filled

after Christ's Death when He released from Limbo all these, including Adam who had died before Christ's time with a Baptism of Desire. But the Mass *infinitely* supercedes these pre-Christian rituals because each Mass is the ritual but *actual* enactment of the Bloody Sacrifice of the Cross and the unbloody Sacrifice of the first Mass conducted by Jesus immediately after the Last Supper. There was but One Sacrifice in Eternity, which is continually expressed throughout time, which does not limit or divide eternity but, rather, is informed by it.

The Israelites, after the Paschal supper, commemorated the sacrifice of Melchisedech and Abraham, by eating unleavened bread and drinking the last cup of wine. The Israelites' sacrifice and eating of the lamb as a journey food in preparation for their escape from Egypt, prefigured the bloody Sacrifice of Calvary, while their drinking the cup of wine after the meal with the unleavened bread prefigured the Mass, which Jesus first said with His Apostles.

"How can a sacrifice in one time be one with sacrifices in other times, Father?"

How can it be that with a few loaves of bread and two fishes Jesus fed 5000 families, or that the substance of bread becomes Christ's Body and the substance of wine

becomes His Blood? It is not by the power of God, who created all things *from nothing!* God's power is mysterious. And so too it is a *mystery* how each Mass can be the same as the one Sacrifice of Christ.

"It is only a wonder why I wonder, Father."

The intelligent wondering of the good at heart is a blessed wandering after the truth of God, Son. Do not be ashamed of any intelligent question, only of sheer obstinacy, of unreasonable skepticism, or of unbelief. These three are truly detestable. For to love God's Word is to embrace *mystery*. Only the proud, loving to know all by their own efforts, ridicule mystery, which is the heart of Religion; for man *cannot* know all that God knows.

Let us continue following history with Sr. Emmerich's work. From her we learn that the Tower of Babel was a work of pride. It was a project taken on solely from man's ideas, without the guidance of God; and for this reason God caused division among the tribes or families of the chief architects, who under the leadership of Nemrod had forced labor out of the descendants of Japeth and Ham and tribute out of the descendants of Sem who would not voluntarily participate. For this the Semites were called a stupid race. But Sr. Emmerich said of the father of the Hebrew language:

Upon Heber ... God cast His eyes; and amid the general disorder and corruption, He set him and his posterity apart as a holy nation. God gave him also a new and Holy language possessed by no other nation, that thereby his race should be cut Off from communication with all others. This language was the pure Hebrew or Chaldaic. The first tongue, the mother tongue spoken by Adam, Sem, and Noe was Different, and it is now extant only in isolated dialects. Its first pure offshoots are The Zend, the sacred tongue of India.

All Languages are traced by scientists to one mother tongue. Phillip, much science supports Scripture's so-called "myths." When I heard that astronomers had found that the universe had begun with a Big Bang from a single infinitesimally small point in space, I thought, "Why doesn't everyone see in this the scientific evidence of God's Creation of the Universe from nothing."

God caused the work to cease after 30 years on the Tower of Babel – which some say was meant, in the conceit of its builders, to be so tall that another Flood could not cover it. God meant to separate families into separate tribes, which eventually became nations; for He saw that the power of Satan, working with human respect and pride and the least-common-denominator principle, was welding men together to serve a foolish purpose, spurning to consult the Wisdom of God. God, therefore, ruled against internationalism, where the good and the bad in peoples (nations) are mixed and the least common denominator, evil, is all that remains acceptable -- to the detriment of all. But the tradition of patriarchs, the fathers of nations, tends to lead back to Adam and God. While the idea that men in consensus can guide themselves alone, leads to their least common denominator – foolishness – which is the "wisdom" of Satan.

"Do you mean that God purposely ordained that each family of that time become the beginning of a nation by causing them to speak a different language, Father?"

Yes. Of the nations formed, their languages were related, but God allowed them to drift apart and cause a kind of natural division of understanding between people. The purpose of this was to preserve the truth, to seal off error from the truth and to prevent the leaven of hypocrisy from corrupting the whole mass of humanity. After listing all 72

sons and grandsons of Noe, God said in Genesis 10:32 *"By these were the nations divided on the earth after the flood."*

God has always been against empire building, where the powerful enslave the weak, whether it is called Babylon or Assyria, Rome or Greece or the United Nations or a One-World Government or a League of Nations. Modern empire builders are the true spiritual ancestors of all those who followed Nemrod in building the Tower of Babel. Then Nemrod took the stones of Babel and built the city of Babylon. The diabolical empire emanating from this city and its "internationalist" spirit boasted that 'we, the enlightened ones conducting the "census" are wiser than thee, oh stupid little ones, who are being counted; for you cannot see our exalted vision.' Recognize the voice, the pride of Satan.

Phillip, man must, as a *dependent* spirit, be governed and guided by a higher spirit, ultimately either by God's Spirit or by His adversary's spirit. This is the key to really understanding every point of human history, Phillip. History is a war for human souls by two supernatural powers. One Power is real, Creative. The other power is illusory, a mere negation of what is real, which seeks by force of threats and promises to gain "credit" as being



real, and, thereby, to gain real *human* power at least from men of pride and passion in every age.

"Father, I am fascinated by the image of the ancient sacrifices of the Patriarchs. Did Sr. Emmerich see these things too?"

Yes, let us learn more about Abraham when he received from an angel the Sacrament of the Old Testament, the Blessing, which he knew only as a pledge of the promised posterity.

I saw that in a vision he received from God the order to depart from his own country. God showed him another land, and Abraham next morning, without asking any questions, led forth all his people and departed. I afterward saw him pitching his tent in a region of Palestine which seemed to me to lie around the place where Nazareth subsequently stood. Abraham himself erected here an oblong altar of stone with a tent over it. Once when kneeling before the altar, a light descended from heaven upon him. An angel, a messenger from God, appeared, said something to him, and presented to him a shining, transparent gift. The angel spoke with Abraham, and the latter received the mysterious Blessing, the Holy thing from heaven; he opened his garments and laid it upon his breast. I was told that this was the Sacrament of the Old Testament. Abraham, as yet, knew not what it contained. It was hidden from him as from us is concealed the substance of the Most Holy Sacrament. But it was given to him as a sacred thing, as a pledge of the promised posterity. The angel was exactly of the same kind as the one that announced to the Blessed Virgin the conception of the Messiah. He was also as gentle and tranquil as Gabriel in the execution of his commission, not so hasty and rapid as I see other angels under similar circumstances. I think Abraham always carried the mysterious gift about with him. The angel spoke to him of Melchisedech who was to celebrate before him the sacrifice which, after the coming of the Messiah, would be accomplished and which should be continued forever.

Abraham then took from a casket five large bones which he laid upon the altar in the form of a cross. A light burned before it, and he offered sacrifice. The fire burned like a star, the centre white and the rays red.

Abraham's sacrifice was almost accomplished when he beheld the three Angels appear on the high road. On they came in their girded garments, one after another, an even distance between them. Abraham hurried out to meet them. Bowing low before God, he saluted them, and led them to the tent of the altar. Here they let down their garments and commanded Abraham to kneel. I saw the wonderful things that now happened to Abraham through the ministry of the angels. He was in ecstasy,

and all the actions were rapid, as is usual in such states. I heard the first angel announce to Abraham as he knelt that God would bring forth from his posterity a sinless, an immaculate maiden who, while remaining an inviolate virgin, should be the mother of the Redeemer, and that he was now to receive what Adam had lost through sin. Then the angel offered him a shining morsel and made him drink a luminous fluid out of a little cup. After that he blessed him, drawing his right hand in a straight line down from Abraham's forehead, then from the right and the left shoulder respectively down under the breast, where

the three lines of the blessing united. Then with both hands the angel held something like a little luminous cloud toward Abraham's breast. I saw it entering into him, and I felt as if he were receiving the Blessed Sacrament.

In this next passage, Phillip, we read of Melchisedech and the sacrifice of bread and wine that prefigured the Mass. Melchisedech represented the saving action of Christ before His coming. All had meaning and power only in reference to the future event of Christ's Crucifixion.

When about to come for the sacrifice of bread and wine, Melchisedech sent messengers to command Abraham to make his coming known and to announce him as the King of Salem. Abraham went out to meet him. He knelt before him and received his blessing. This took place in a valley southward from the fertile vale that lies toward Gaza.

Melchisedech came from the region where Jerusalem afterward stood. He had with him a very nimble animal of a grey color. It had a short, broad neck, and it was laden on both sides. On one was a vessel of wine, flat on the side that lay against the beast; on the other, was a box containing rows of flat, oval loaves, likewise the Chalice that I afterward saw used at the Last Supper for the institution of the Blessed Sacrament. It had cups in the shape of little barrels. These vessels were Neither of gold nor silver, but transparent as of brownish precious stones. They did not appear to me to have been fabricated by man, they looked as if they had grown. The impression made by Melchisedech was similar to that produced by the Lord during His teaching life. He was very tall and slight, remarkably mild and earnest. He wore a long garment so white and shining that it reminded me of the white raiment that surrounded the Lord at His Transfiguration. Abraham's white garment was quite dingy compared with it. He wore also a girdle with letters similar to that worn later by the Jewish priests, and like them his head was covered with a small gothic mitre during the sacrifice. His hair was shining yellow like long glittering strands of silk, and his countenance was luminous.

All were very grave and solemn, full of reverence for Melchisedech whose presence inspired awe. He stepped to the altar upon which was a kind of tabernacle wherein he placed the Chalice. There was also a recess in it, I think for the sacrifice. Abraham had laid upon the altar the bones of Adam which Noe had had in the Ark. They now prayed before them that God would fulfil the promise made to Adam of a future Messiah. Melchisedech spread upon the altar first a red cover, which he had brought with him, and over that a white transparent one. The ceremony reminded me of the Holy Mass. I saw him elevate the bread and wine, offer, bless, and break. He reached to Abraham the Chalice used afterward at the Last Supper in order that he might drink. All the rest of those present drank from the little vessels which were handed around by Abraham and the most distinguished personages. The bread too was passed around in morsels larger than those given at Holy Communion in the early times. I saw these morsels shining. They had only been blessed, not consecrated. The angels cannot consecrate. All that partook of the food were filled with new life and drawn nearer to God.

Melchisedech gave bread and wine to Abraham, the former more luminous Than that received by the others. Abraham derived from it great strength and such energy of faith that later on at the command of God, he did not hesitate to sacrifice his child of promise. He prophesied in these words: "This is not what Moses upon

Sinai gives the Levites." I know not whether Abraham also offered the sacrifice of bread and wine, but I do know that the Chalice from which he drank was the same used by Jesus at the institution of the Most Holy Sacrament.

When Melchisedech at the sacrifice of bread and wine blessed Abraham, he at the same time ordained him a priest. He spoke over him the words: "The Lord said to my Lord, sit thou at My right hand. Thou art a priest forever according to the order of Melchisedech. The Lord hath sworn, and he will not repent."

He laid his hands upon Abraham, and Abraham gave him tithes. I understood the deep signification of Abraham's giving tithes after his ordination. But The reason of its importance, I no longer recollect.

I saw also that David when composing this Psalm had a vision of Abraham's Ordination by Melchisedech, and that he repeated the last words prophetically. The Words, "Sit thou at my right hand," have a peculiar signification. When the eternal generation of the Son from the Father was shown me in vision, I saw the Son issuing from the right side of the Father as a luminous form surrounded by a triangle, as the Eye of God is depicted, and in the upper corner I saw the Holy Ghost. But it is inexpressible!

I saw that Eve came from the right side of Adam, that the Patriarchs carried the Blessing in their right side, and that they placed the children to whom they delivered it upon their right. Jesus received the stroke of the lance in His right side, and the Church came forth from the same right side. When we enter the Church, we go into the right side of Jesus, and we are in Him united to His Heavenly Father.

I think that Melchisedech's mission upon earth was ended with this sacrifice and the ordination of Abraham, for after that I saw him no more. The Chalice with the six cups he delivered to Abraham.

"It is beautiful, Father, the mysteries of God's Sacramental Love. Why did Melchisedech come as 'the King of Salem', Father?"

Salem means "peace," and Jerusalem means the city of peace. Peace between God and Man is what Jesus bought by His Sacrifice, and he offered it to all believers in all times under the appearance of life-giving food, bread and wine, but substantially *as divine food* for the journey through the desert of this life to the Promised Land of heaven, our true Home with God our true Father. This Food is Christ's Body, Body, Blood, Soul and Divinity for the life that gains us entrance to heaven is *the Life of God Himself*. When Jesus enters our person, we are recognizable by the Father as related to His Son, a vessel containing Him, welded to Him by the Love of the Holy Spirit, that is, the Love of God for God. Therefore, as Christians we are, by God's grace, higher than the angels, who, in created nature, are superior to us.

The Host is manna for the soul in this earthly pilgrimage. But Faith requires forsaking belief in appearances, in exchange for belief in the substantial. Substance cannot be seen, only its accidental characteristics. God left the appearances of bread and wine as a necessary test of Divine Faith, for all merit is gained by test.

The price of taking Innocent Blood is the Guilt of Sin and Death. But when Jesus, as the God-Man *offered* Himself, His Body and Blood, to the Father who loved Him, and the Father accepted it, Peace was established forever between God and Mankind. This Sacred Act is celebrated in the Mass as our Thanksgiving (Eucharist) for this Peace, the fruit of which is

eaten as spiritual food from the Tree of Life which we lost when Adam descended from Paradise. Eucharist is the Food of Eternal Life, the very substance of God, the Fruit of the Tree of the Holy Cross, the Altar upon which the sins of Mankind were consumed by the Fire of Divine Love which continually ascends to the Father from the Son and descends from the Father to the Son.

Now let me read what St. Paul says about this mysterious person, Melchisedech. He says in Hebrews 7:1-3,

*"For this Melchisedech, King of Salem, priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him. To whom Also Abraham divided the tithes of all: who indeed first by interpretation is King of justice: and then also king of Salem, that is, king of peace, without Father, without mother, without genealogy, having neither beginning of days, Nor end of life, but likened unto the Son of God, continueth a priest forever."*

St. Paul also shows that Christ was greater than Melchisedech, who was greater than Abraham and Abraham greater than Levi, so that the sacrifice and covenant of Abraham, the Father of Faith, was greater than the sacrifice and covenant given to Moses, which was the Mosaic Law, the priests of Levi being its priestly intercessors. Thus the Old Law guarded by the Levites was meant to be superceded by the new Law of Christ, as *prefigured* by the sacrifice of bread and wine offered by Melchisedech and Abraham.

Phillip, a new law is made for a new creation. In Christ, we are a new creation, a new Man, needing a new law. Law is a command or prescription based on the description of the being for whom the law expresses his proper activities and relations with other beings, including the Supreme Being. Before Christ, man was without God's life, dependent humanity, fallen from grace, abandoned in a sense by God's chastisements and destined to return to dust. So God offers Moses' people a Covenant – 'Obey my law, and I will be your God' to prepare them and us for the New Covenant, where Christ says to us, have Faith in Me, and We (the Trinity) will come to you and live in you.

We naturally have human life as human beings, but we have the *gift* of divine life, because we were not born a divine being like Christ. We ruined our nature by sin; then God lent us His nature to regain what we had lost and more. We become other christs, so that our new Law is the *Law of Christ, which is to love God and self and neighbor*; for the nature of God is His Holy Spirit, which is Love Itself. Therefore, our New Law is an expression of the Divine Nature in the form of a command to love God and one another. Do you understand enough to repeat it, Phillip?

"I think so, Father. The Old Man was begotten of Adam's sinful nature; the new man was begotten by the Love of the Son of God, which is the basis and substance of the New Law – love God with your whole soul and your neighbor as yourself, for God's sake."

Good.

"But, Father, I have one difficulty. When I see how the Blessing was given and taken away – even the Ark of the Covenant was stolen from Israel in Saul's time, and Israel was later sent into captivity, and many other times they were abandoned by God to great evils. How could they or any Christian have been secure in his hope of obtaining entrance to the Promised Land of Eternal Life?

Human beings, *alone*, can never be secure; but, *in union with God*, they can be absolutely sure of salvation. God is faithful; man is not. But if man will just turn back, God will save him. I believe, Phillip, that in God's Infinite Mercy, no man is ever condemned who would have *ever* turned back to God for good. God would have foreseen that conversion, and He would have extended his life. That is how absolutely and mercifully I believe God is faithful to His Promise. *Chance is not involved in the issue of Salvation*, Son. But to begin to understand why God allows His beloved to be

## 55

visited by temporary evils, you must feel the deep misery of unrequited love that He suffers.

All history is the story Jeremia tells of God, the lover, whose marriage partner, His chosen people, has been unfaithful to him through sin. The epitome of this harlotry is idolatry, the love, worship and union (fornication) with another as one's highest good or god – a strange god taking God's place -- the breaking of the First Commandment. But throughout this adultery God keeps *His* Promise; in the end He saves those who come back to Him, who are faithful to the end. And considering the fickleness and waywardness of man, this return too is a miracle of His Mercy and grace. Let us read:

**Jeremia 3: 6-9:** "And the Lord said to me in the days of King Josias: Hast thou seen what rebellious Israel hath done? She hath gone of herself upon every high mountain, and under every green tree, and hath played the harlot there. And when she had done all these things, I said: Return to me, and she did not return. And her treacherous sister Juda saw ... yet her treacherous sister Juda was not afraid, but went and played the harlot also herself. And by the facility of her fornication she defiled the land, ...

Just as a man loves his wife so dearly that he will take her back, if only she abandons her adultery, so God desires the return of individuals and nations gone astray. For the will or heart of the one who loves is bound by the *desire for that good* he loves. For love is a passion. This means that the will is passive to the good it sees, which is acting upon it. This is why the devotion to the Sacred Heart of Jesus, given to us by God through a chosen soul, St. Margaret Mary Alacoque shows Jesus as helplessly in love with the souls He has created out of love.

"I had always thought of God as more cold and uncaring and strong, never dependent on what we choose to do, Father."

Remember, God became a Man, Son. Christ, who is God, has a human heart. This

awareness of God's love for us should make us consider more seriously our part, our every action. For we are constantly before our Beloved, either pleasing or displeasing Him. Because man's will is free, he can return God's love by being the good that God made and loves; or he can voluntarily lose that good. In man's life these extremes ebb and flow like a tide. This accounts for the constant turmoil in the relationship between God and mankind we read of in Scripture and see in our own life and world history. So it is God who, in a sense, is at the mercy of man's fickleness, whereas man has a rock of love and fidelity to hang onto.

"Why, Father, did God allow Himself to be so bound; surely He knew before creating willful creatures that they would wander away from Him."

God knew that the greatest of all goods was love. He gave to men and angels His love, and He wishes it returned to Him in kind. And the faculty of voluntariness or free will is the only power capable of loving in return. Can we fault God for this most generous act of creation? God knew from eternity what suffering Love, unrequited, would cost Him. For He who loves deeply will search for his beloved who has been seduced by another until he is exhausted by worry and sadness and pleading – all because of the great good he had which is now lost. Some say that the physical cause of death for Jesus on the Cross was a broken heart. We know that this was true spiritually. Why shouldn't the physical heart express the agony of the heart, since the former is subordinate to and dependent on and caused by the other. The heart is not just

metaphorically the seat of the passions or emotions, Phillip. Its strength and rhythm and entire actions cause each emotion their peculiar expression.

"Father, your words are leading my human heart to really fall in love with my Jesus. I believe now that He wants and really needs my love."

He does, Son. It's okay for you to shed these tears. By them your heart speaks. Likewise, do you not see the tangible expressing the spiritual in the history we have been telling. So, life is truly a richly symbolic narrative, a good story, poetry, a book bridging the invisible and the visible worlds. And yet it is this very concrete expressiveness that invites the joking mockery of unbelievers, who, ironically, are addicted to the concrete but cannot see its spiritual roots.

"Here is all I see now, Father. God gave all that he had to give, His very Life, even in the face of ungratefulness. It is like a man giving up his life to save another; Jesus said there is no greater love than this. I want to give Him my whole life, my whole self. It is all I have to give."

A gift, Phillip, is a token of love. The greatest gift is the token of one's life poured out for or shared with another, whether the life of spouses lived in blissful harmony, or the life of a saviour given up in agony for the sake of a victim of justice. The token of giving one's life is spilled blood, which signifies sacrifice. Jesus, the Second Person of the Triune God, gave

us this token of His love, the Sacrifice of His Body upon the Cross, His Blood upon the very earth from which the first man was taken, and His Blood for all men for all time in the Chalice of the Eucharist. *In this fallen world we live in, love and sacrifice are one.* This is why true Christians wear the crucifix.

I must retire now, my Son. My heart is feeling weak. I am sad unto tears, I know not why. Tomorrow we will go on. But I must pass over much.

[{TABLE OF CONTENTS}](#)

[{PREFACE}](#)

[{CHAPTER I}](#) [{CHAPTER II}](#) [{CHAPTER III}](#) [{CHAPTER IV}](#) [{CHAPTER V}](#) [{CHAPTER VI}](#)

[{CHAPTER VII}](#) [{CHAPTER VIII}](#) [{CHAPTER IX}](#) [{CHAPTER X}](#) [{CHAPTER XI}](#)

[{Bibliography}](#)

[{Bookstore}](#) [{Order Form}](#) [{Instructions}](#) [{Notice of Permissions}](#) [{Download}](#)

[{Links}](#)

[{FRAMES VERSION}](#)

(Requires a frames-enabled browser)

*Website contents © 1999 - 2000, [Web Designs by Doc](#). Literary content ©1999 - 2000, Dave Pedry. All rights reserved.*

## CHAPTER IV

## THE BRIDE OF CHRIST AND THE HARLOT

Phillip, we know that on the sixth day God finished the work of Creation with the creation of our first parents. Since that time we are in the seventh day when God rested. If Adam's creation was in 3997 BC, as was revealed to Sr. Emmerich, then it was early in the morning of the "4<sup>th</sup> hour" or 4<sup>th</sup> millennium that God the Son came to redeem the world by His grace and His rule, so that it could become all that God intended for it to be. He did not change the nature of creation; but repaired the damage man's free will had done to creation, washing and reanimating it with supernatural Life. He came to announce the establishment of His Kingdom, which His elect had awaited and prepared for. At Christ's first advent He offered His Life to all, because they had lost it through Adam's sin. Two thousand years later he came in a Just Judgement of the nations on the "Day of the Lord" to destroy wickedness and establish justice and peace. And He will come, in the final, Universal Judgement, to reveal all things hidden, ending all speculation, all deliberation. Then all mercy and forbearance, all patience, all longing and desire will pass away, along with Time itself, and eternal Glory will Reign forever. Woe to those who do not recognize the time of His coming in their age.

"He comes then in every age, Father? His coming lasts until His coming again?"

Yes, that is exactly right, Phillip, now that you put it that way. When He came on Christmas day the true people of God were those born of the Faith of Abraham, whether they were descendants of Jacob or not. These same people entered into the eternal and real Ark of the Covenant at Jesus' death through the wound in His right side, where the spear had pierced His Sacred Heart. *In the Love of this Heart is carried all people who would ever be saved.*

At Christ's first advent *all* were invited to enter this Ark of the Church, but some refused, including many of those descended from Jacob or who pretended to be so descended. These sensually minded ones supposed that salvation came from the loins, by a fleshly right of inheritance, regardless of their spiritual state. Those elitists who presumed this forgot that God chose Israel as an *instrument* to save *all men who willed to serve God in truth and spirit*, not just in the repetition of words, ritual, sacrifices and genealogical pedigrees.

St. Paul took great pains to convince those who were descendants of Israel that it was not the flesh of their ancestors to whom the Promise had been made and a covenant established, but to those who were spiritual children of Abraham, who was justified by his faith.

"Wasn't it true, Father, that those of other nations not descended from Jacob could be adopted by Israel, even from Moses' time, if they converted to the worship of the true God?"

Yes, a good point to prove that salvation was not just a matter of blood or heredity but was a matter of spirit.

"Who were the chief enemies of Christ in His time, Father?"

Those would seem to be Herod and the other descendants of Esau (Edomites) who misleadingly for later generations were even then *called* Jews only because they had come to occupy and reside in the land of Juda. These Edomites, traditionally, were the enemies of Israel, hating Israel because Israel's descendants had, through the justice and



Faith of Jacob, acquired the Blessing of his father, Isaac, by God's will, although, by the flesh, by the custom of primogeniture, Esau "should" have received it. This, of course, is another sign that God does not save by mere birthright, but by the possession of a right spirit.

"Cain was the elder brother of Abel, Father, yet his sacrifice was not accepted. God seemed to repeat this lesson in history with Esau and Jacob."

Yes. For by the order of primogeniture alone, all Israel was the first nation invited into the Promised Land of Heaven upon earth, the true Ark, the Catholic Church, instituted by the Messiah, the Son of God. Yet most of these went the way of their flesh, which is not the way of God and misinterpreted God's universal Love, blinding themselves to His own Son.

"But, Father, how did an Edomite, like Herod, rule over the people of Israel?"

It is said that Edomites occupied Judea after the true descendants of Juda had been taken into the captivity at Babylon. They assumed political power in Judea, and because they lived in Judea, they called themselves Jews. In that position certain evil ones among them could hide their malice and treachery behind the name of Juda, the prophesied ancestor of the Messiah. It was these evil elitists, chiefly, who wrestled with Caesar for the political autonomy and control of Israel, which resulted -- as they may well have foreseen and planned -- in the destruction of Jerusalem in 70 AD and the dispersion and complete dissolution of the actual race of Israel.

The religion of Israel may also have contracted certain heresies and impurities of various sorts during the Babylonian captivity which the Scribes and Pharisees later promulgated. Phillip, there is a thread of evil knowledge and deeds in history, just as there was the thread of good knowledge and good deeds as passed on through the Patriarchs. A rather clear outline of this evil thread that I will follow now is found in this book by Stephen Mahowald, entitled She Shall Crush Thy Head. Evil "knowledge" is called occult (hidden or secret) gnosticism (knowledge). Adam and Eve were tempted by gnosticism, namely the secret knowledge that God did not want them to know -- the knowledge of good *and* evil. All they had to do was perform the secret ritual of sinful disobedience. When they did this lustful sensuality poured into them as a result. Thus the Serpent himself sowed the seeds of all diabolical religions or mystery religions and their wicked rituals and customs. The Pharisees claim that a higher more complete *secret* knowledge and law was revealed to seventy elders (called the Sanhedrin in later times) at the foot of Mount Sinai, while Moses was being given the written Law by the same God. A likely story; no doubt invented to upstage and counter God's revelation. This kabal or "body of teachings" was thenceforth passed on by oral tradition until it was set down in the Babylonian Talmud, which was passed on through the secret initiation of gnosticism to all succeeding generations.

Upon examination this Kabala is seen to contradict the Ten Commandments on all counts. And it was, a little too conveniently, said to *take precedence over* the publicly proclaimed, written Law of Moses. The Talmud (the written version of the Kabala) contains

hideously immoral doctrine in places.

The Kabala could have been simply a collection of diabolical lore from these same Israelites who demanded a golden calf to worship and who were most likely also those who had been contaminated in Egypt by its pagan religion. These evil ones may also have broken God's command to the people of God *not* to intermarry with other races

and peoples, like the Egyptians who had descended from Ham. Some of these seventy ancient paganists may also have been descendants of Esau pretending to be converts or descendants of Israel. They may have been under secret orders to infiltrate the people of God and try to lead them away from true religion by sowing the seeds of error and tempting them with those sins which the diabolical arts and rituals cultivated.

The high court of Israel at the time of Christ was composed of the "spiritual" descendants of these seventy ancients, plus the High Priest, who represented the Spirit of God. The Scribes and Pharisees, some of whom harbored paganism within Israel, were a sect born in the time of the Babylonian Captivity. These Kabalists and elitists laid Talmudic prescriptions on the common people that they were exempt from. These were the enemies of the Son of God. He condemned them:

*"But woe to you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; because you shut the kingdom of heaven against men, for you yourselves do not enter in; and those that are going in, you suffer not to enter." (Matthew 15:7-9) "Woe to you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; because you go round about the sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he is made, you make him the child of hell twofold more than yourselves ... You serpents, generation of vipers, how will you flee from the judgment of hell?" (Matthew 23: 15, 33) "You are of your father the devil, and the desires of your father you will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and he stood not in the truth; because the truth is not in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father thereof." (John 8:44)*

Manichaeism and most other heresies have roots in Gnosticism or Luciferianism. Therefore, it is no surprise to find such secret societies behind the Protestant Reformation. We note, Phillip, that the Church excommunicates those who join secret societies, because God does not do His work in the dark. The devil does because the common morality and good sense of mankind condemns evil and legislates against it, thus affirming the law of God.

The secret knowledge passed on through Cain, Ham, Nemrod and perhaps King Solomon was *a Lie*. Perhaps its essence was the Serpent's lie to Eve, "you shall become as God." I see it expressed as, "You can *have* your cake and *eat it* too." That is, you can have the pleasure of doing wicked sensuous things *and* you can have the suspension of prosecution for the same, as well as immortality, just as gods get away with -- *if* you will have "faith" in Lucifer and believe in what he tells you to be true (his lies) through his chosen priesthood.

Personal initiation into this covenant with Lucifer is a parody of Baptism. Other "sacred" acts eventually follow initiation such as the real or symbolic murder of an innocent victim and the eating of his flesh and drinking of his blood. This so-called Black Mass blasphemously parodies the true Mass of Christ's Church.

It would probably be true to say that Judaism had been infiltrated by its enemies and corrupted in a certain degree by the time Jesus arrived. Many of the common people must have been aware of this, therefore, they flocked to Jesus, who preached the pure doctrine, while others were led astray by the false shepherds.

"Just as it happened in the Catholic Church in the 20<sup>th</sup> century, Father?"

Very much so, Phillip. And again, Jesus came when His people were being led by false shepherds – wolves in sheep's clothing. Let us read an example from Scripture of the characteristic work of those I choose to call frauds. Their spiritual children appear throughout history, Son.

## 60

Matthew 15:1-9 "Then came to him from Jerusalem Scribes and Pharisees, saying: Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the ancients? For they wash not their hands when they eat bread. But He answering said to them: Why do you also transgress the commandment of God for your tradition? For God said: Honour thy father and mother: and he that shall curse father or mother, let him die the death. But you say: Whosoever shall say to his father or mother, The gift whatsoever proceedeth from Me, shall profit thee. And he shall not honour his father or his mother: and you have made void the commandment of God for your tradition. Ye hypocrites, well hath Isaias prophesied of you, saying: This people honoureth me with their lips: but their heart is far from me. And in vain do they worship me, teaching doctrines and commandments of men.

These frauds feared that the sway of Jesus over the people would be the ruin of their dominion over Israel. Imagine, Phillip, the effect of the stupendous public miracles of Jesus – true miracles being God's signature written on the wall of the temple of God's People. Who could deny it but the devil and his children. The generic integrity and identity of Israel, signified by the physical temple in Jerusalem, disappeared in 70 AD when both that temple was destroyed and the people of Israel were widely dispersed.

"Do you mean, Father, that the generic identity of Israel continued to disperse as the people intermingled and intermarried with other peoples throughout the world?"

Exactly, Son."

"Then there are more left in the world who can trace their ancestry to Jacob by a pure genealogical line of ancestors?"

That is correct. God saw fit that the seed He had planted should die, so that which it was made to become should spring up, that is, the true descendants of Jesus Christ in the order of the true Faith. The dispersion of Israel in 70 AD totally obliterated the instrument of

the flesh, in order that the Temple of God Himself, Jesus Christ, would have no earthly veil or obstacle hiding Him. To signify this, at the moment Jesus died, the great veil in the Temple concealing the Holy of Holies split asunder. The false Jews or Edomites and their followers in Israel pretended to patch this veil by maligning and covering up the divinity of Jesus.

"Father, is that why they bribed the guards of Jesus' tomb not to tell of His Resurrection?"

Yes, and since then the Frauds and their fellow travelers have milked their false Jewish credentials to the limit, crying out in hypocrisy that *they* are God's people still awaiting the Messiah. How could He have come, they say, when we see all this evil in the world -- which they themselves have inspired and instigated by their diabolical perfidy.

Above all, the Herodians' diabolically guided purpose, Phillip, was to discredit and misrepresent Christ, casting him in a bad light as a blasphemous imposter -- when it was they who were the only imposters and blasphemers. Jesus boldly rebuked them to their faces for a witness to His people, pointing out the wolf in sheep's clothing prowling in their midst. Jesus said in Luke 12:1, "Beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy." Beware of this hypocrisy, Phillip. It is *the* sign of evil, the odor of evil. Let me read from God's Word about hypocrisy:

"Then was offered to him one possessed with a devil, blind and dumb; and he healed him, so that he spoke and saw. And all the multitudes were amazed, and said: Is not this the son of David! But the Pharisees hearing it, said:

## 61

This man casteth not out devils but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils. And Jesus knowing their thoughts, said to them: Every kingdom divided against itself shall be made desolate: and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand. And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself: how then shall his kingdom stand? And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? Therefore they shall be your judges. But if I by the Spirit of God cast out devils, then is the kingdom of God come upon you. (Matthew 13:22-28)

Therefore I say to you: Every sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven men, but the blasphemy of the Spirit shall not be forgiven. And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but he that shall speak against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, nor in the world to come. (vs. 31-32)

O generation of vipers, how can you speak good things, whereas you are evil? For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. A good man out of a good treasure bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out of an evil treasure bringeth forth evil things. But I say unto you, that every idle word that men shall speak, they shall render an account for it in the day of judgment. For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned." (vs. 34-37)

Jesus' death conveyed to us this message: It is better to give up the body to death than

to save it and lose one's soul and eternal life. Some things are passing and some are forever. Jesus crowned and magnified the lesson of spiritual ascendancy over the flesh by teaching that the vehicle or instrument of our mortal bodies and our earthly existence should be totally subject to the Word of God.

"Therefore fear them not. For nothing is covered that shall not be revealed: nor hid, that shall not be known. That which I tell you in the dark, speak ye in the light: and that which you hear in the ear, preach ye upon the housetops. And fear ye not them that kill the body, and are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him that can destroy both soul and body in hell. (Matthew 11:26-28)

Everyone therefore that shall confess me before men, I will also confess Him before men, I will also confess him before my Father who is in heaven. But he that shall deny me, before men, I will also deny him before my father who is in heaven. Do not think that I came to send peace upon earth: I came not to send peace, but the sword. For I came to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law. And a man's enemies shall be they of his own household. He that loveth father or mother more than me, is not worthy of me; and he that loveth son or daughter more than me, is not worthy of me. And he that taketh not up his cross, and followeth me, is not worthy of me. He that findeth his life, shall lose it: and he that shall lose his life for me, shall find it. He that receiveth you, receiveth me: and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me. He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet, shall receive the reward of a prophet: and he that receiveth a just man in the name of a just man, shall receive the reward of a just man. And whosoever shall give to drink to one of these little ones a cup of cold water only in the name of a disciple, amen I say to you, he shall not lose his reward." (vs. 32-42)

"Father, why did God allow the enemy to enter His church before His first and His second comings?"

Think of it this way, Phillip. Jesus Christ is the Groom; the congregation or Church of His people is His Bride, His Mystical Body, of which He is the Head. And

then, ... there is, lurking in the shadows of history, the Harlot, who hates the spouse of Christ out of envy.

A harlot tempts men to violate their marriage vows by tempting them to pay homage to the will of their flesh and its pleasures at the expense of breaking his marital promises. The legacy of the harlot's victims is disease and death. Who is the Harlot in history? Let us follow her trail – a trail of treachery, violence, lies, of blood, sweat and tears.

After the death of Christ it is said that Edomite conspirators, led by a man they called "Hiram," conscripted Herod Agrippa III, the great grandson of the murderous Herod the Great, as the leader of their secret society, the aim of which was to destroy Christianity by

treachery, infiltration, misrepresentation of its doctrines, instigation of heresies, murder and sorcery. They swore to each other by a bloody oath, under pain of assassination, absolute secrecy and fidelity to the cause. They often styled themselves Jewish Christians or Christian Jews, neither of which they were, in order to become as leaven in the new Church, seeking disciples and victims of their lies. One of these held that every Christian must be circumcised *in the flesh* according to the custom of Israel. But St. Paul preached mightily against them. And Jesus said of them, 'You call yourselves sons of Abraham, but you are sons of Satan, going about the world making proselytites two fold more the children of hell than yourselves.'

It is said that the false "Jews," pretending to be pious adherents of Judaism whenever it suited their public relations' purpose practiced usury and sacrificed (murdered) Christian babies in parodies of the Masses during the first millennium. Black masses are still held by satanists the world over. To excuse and authorize their criminal acts, they added to that collection of non-canonical Jewish literature called the Talmud their own corrupt doctrines and then hid these versions from all who were not initiated into their secret society of diabolical worship.

In the first centuries they were behind the scenes inciting and coercing the Roman Emperors to annihilate the Christian sect in wave after wave of persecution. Here we clearly see the wrathful face of Satan on an historical scale. By loaning large sums of money to the Emperors for war, they wielded a silent but real political control through indebtedness. In later centuries their diabolical brotherhood also used this device of usury to effect events on an historical scale. There is a connection between Nemrod and his usurious Babylonian priesthood, these "Jewish" frauds and the Yiddish Banksters of the later centuries. These are all the spiritual sons of Satan. It is a definite spiritual brotherhood that will exist from the beginning to the end of the world. Their spirit is always anti-Christ and anti-Catholic.

In addition to their usurious money power, they added in these first centuries false accusations and misrepresentations of Christians in order to give a plausible cause for 300 years of laws and edicts calling for the extermination of Christians, whose beliefs, supposedly, threatened civil order and the commonwealth.

Using this same ploy, they had asked Jesus whether tribute should be given to Caesar or not. They intended to trap Him if he said "yes" with the accusation of abandoning the cause of Israel's independence, which they secretly promoted through the Zealots, to the point of compelling Rome to crush them and all Israel. But if Jesus said "no", they would report Him to Rome as an instigator of civil unrest advising tax evasion.

By such hypocrisy or pretense of virtue the Frauds have hounded God's people from the time of Adam. Their rage comes from the jealous, murderous lust of Satan, who first wanted to destroy the human race through the temptation to sin of Adam and Eve. He wanted

them to destroy the ancestors of the Saviour by whose power his (Satan's) head would be crushed, which became in time the nation of Israel. But when he failed to destroy the mission of the Church of Israel and its child, Jesus, who was born and crucified and taken up to Heaven, he (Satan) chased the Woman (the Church) and her children down through the ages.

Apocalypse 12:1-6 "And a great sign appeared in heaven: A woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and on her head a crown of twelve stars: And being with child, she cried travailing in birth, and was in pain to be delivered. And there was seen another sign in heaven: and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads, and ten horns: and on his heads seven diadems: And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman who was ready to be delivered; that, when she should be delivered, he might devour her son. And she brought forth a man-child, Who was to rule all nations with an iron rod: and her son was taken up to God, and to his throne. And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she had a place prepared by God, that there they should feed her a thousand two hundred sixty days."

"Father, I am a little confused. What or who is the Harlot of which you spoke? Is it a race of people?"

The Harlot is how Satan appears in history after Christ. He appears as a Harlot who attempts to seduce Christians who are spiritually married or united to God in His Church, the "Bride of Christ". How does Satan materially appear in history but in *those who act in His spirit*. And this evil spirit of his is enough to infect the whole world – so great and powerful is the nature of this fallen angel. Cain and Esau were prototypes of the prostitutes of Satan (regardless of whether they were personally saved or not), as were certain diabolical sects of the descendants of Esau who pretended to be Jews in order to rule Israel for Satan. These I have called Frauds. But they went on to perpetuate their kind throughout history in the form of secret societies, such as I will identify. These are the Harlot, or by another title, the *head* of the Serpent. The Serpent's body were those in history that, in some degree of ignorance, followed and served the head. This spiritual brotherhood of evil arose all over the world, out of every nation and race, in all those who imbibed the spirit of Satan.

Most all of the heresies of the Church were probably instigated through the mediation of the secret societies of the false Jews or Frauds, who were possessed by Satan. Their "religion" is satanic, far from the traditional Judaism they may hide behind.

It is said that the anti-christ sect formed by Hiram under Herod Agrippa III first called themselves "The Force" because in their enemy, the Church of Christ, surrounded by Saints and miracles was seen as a "Mysterious Force." So they would be the opposing "Force." They even made a movie called "Star Wars" in the latter times to glorify the Force as good.

In later centuries this secret, diabolical society was exposed to public scrutiny to some extent, and they chose to change their name to Freemasons, passing themselves off as a benevolent guild or brotherhood of artisans. They love to parade before the people as illustrious persons and generous benefactors, while in fact, at the heart of their society,

the devil uses them to work against Christ. They attract many unwitting devotees, but their rituals and oaths are full of ancient pagan and diabolical imagery. These antichristian conspirators in every age, I call, the Force of Antichrist. They lead and coordinate all evil forces and sects, as well as all sinners and all systematic evil. They tempt mankind just as Eve was tempted by Satan through the instrumentality of the Serpent, whose spiritual principle is *self will born of pride*. They are the Church of Antichrist, the Harlot wedded to the Red Dragon. Their mode of operation is always to mimic and mock truth and goodness by the manipulation of those words and appearances, etc. that represent them.

"Surely, Father, if they never told the truth, all would know them to be liars."

If I tell you a story that is 99% true, but deceive you intentionally in the critical 1% that I wish to deceive you about at present, have I used that 99% truth to my advantage by making a lie appear to be the truth? "I see what you mean, Father."

I would be manipulating or using truths for the purpose of recommending a concealed lie. The Truth, Son, is always known by its integrity, its *wholeness*, which involves completeness, 100%. The truth is the Indivisible Light, not divided against itself, not equivocal but wholly and perfectly univocal, having but *One Voice*.

Phillip, almost every pope of the infant Christian Church, starting with St. Peter, was martyred for the first 300 years, a parallel to the slaughter of the infants at Bethlehem. Shortly after the deliverance of Christians by Constantine's conversion, barbarian hordes, one after another, descended on the Roman Empire, until they conquered all. But the Church through her monasteries conquered these people for Christ and civilized them in time. The civilizing and conquering power of Christianity is unparalleled throughout all history. It is a miracle of God's grace. But you will see that Satan will always struggle with Christ for the conquest of the world.

It is an error to say that Christ wishes us to quit the world and let Satan take it over for evil. No, we are to quit the evil ways of the world, in order to build the Kingdom of God on earth, first within ourselves and then in the world around us. This warfare is both spiritual and temporal, mystical and political. Christ will not conquer the world for us as we sit in our armchairs and watch television. I used to tell people that before the end.

I told you how Satan used a certain element of the Semetic race, Edomites, to do his work, because they had, as a people, cultivated an historical hatred for Israel, God's people. Now we see another people emerge who were fitted for Satan by their past diabolical worship. In 700 AD the Kazars, by their own account descended from Japeth, the father of the Caucasian or white race through his grandsons, Gog and Magog, were forced to abandon paganism and choose between Christianity, Judaism, or Islam. They chose Judaism. Soon Christian Europe was dotted with their ghettos, and the extortion they had formerly practiced on travelers over the trade routes of lower Russia, their ancestral homeland, they now exacted through usurious moneylending throughout Europe. They began to build over the centuries a powerful international banking power.

"Why were they international, Father?"

They were ostracized as nonchristians and usurers, so they became a separate nation whose members were scattered among all the nations, in which they lived as parasites, feeding off the labor and wealth of others through usury. Since they had no



inherent national loyalties, they became internationalist in character. Though there were pious adherents of Judaism among this race of non-Jews, Satan, as among the Edomites, raised up his own servants among them who joined the Force. They used Judaism as a shield and cloak for their diabolical hatred of Christianity and the subversive political and religious activities they engaged in to undermine the people of God. Remember, Satan wanted to enslave the world to evil so that *he* would be worshipped. Finally, in the 16<sup>th</sup> century the great anti-Christian offensive was ready. While they tore Europe apart from within by the Protestant Revolt, they incited Mohammedan zealots to attack Europe from Asia Minor.

"What was Mohammedanism, Father?"

It was a Christian heresy which denied the Incarnation but adopted most of the other doctrines. By promising its converts freedom from slavery and debt and a sure place in paradise, it was in continual acquisition of new adherents over the centuries. "It seems like creating slaves and debtors would be a ready means of providing converts, Father."

Good insight, Phillip. Perhaps this is another reason why we always find the Frauds instigating wars, for they create public debt, which soon becomes private debt, and also slavery among the conquered. Militant Islam is very anti-Christian. Those who die in battle for its cause are guaranteed heaven. Military service might have been required of many male converts as a price of admission. Thus, Islam took the Holy Land and threw huge armies at Christianity through the Balkans and Spain.

"Why were they particularly anti-christian, Father?"

Since they denied the Incarnation of Christ, God become man, Christians were seen as idolaters, blasphemers, and corrupters of true religion. So the heretics of Islam attacked the Church from without and the Protestants attacked it from within.

The unity of Christendom was seduced by the Protestant Revolt. A Protestant Harlot has since pretended to be the Church or part of the Church. Christian civilization was penetrated and split apart by the hideous errors of Calvin, Luther and others. A massive excommunication or divorce of these heretics finally took place. Christ in every age purifies His Church by casting out the unbelievers hidden within. It has been said that 11 million souls apostacized, abandoning the integrity of the Faith, to be led into Hell by the so-called Reformers. At this Revolt we must look more closely, Son, for with this Protestant Revolt began a series of religious, political and social events that, by a chain of cause and effect, led directly to the Great Chastisement. The world would never be the same again. This Protestant Revolt was analogous to the "harlotry" of Israel, for which reason it was cut off or excommunicated from the people of God for its errors.

"Did the protestors of the 16<sup>th</sup> Century worship other gods then, Father?"

Let us say that they redefined their relationship with God. In doing that they redefined His Church for Him and *the nature and identity of God Himself*. Thus they created an idol by

their own ideas. Under the pretense of remaining Christians, they invented a new christ and a new church of this false christ. But this church could be none other than an extension of anti-christ, which takes many forms.

First of all, Phillip, to understand the Protestant Reformation as an event in history, it must be noted that it was universally acknowledged by nearly all sincere Catholics, at least by the 16<sup>th</sup> Century, that there were many abuses and evils in the Catholic Church that needed to be ended. This was accomplished by the Council of Trent

66

in 1545-1563. But the anti-Catholic party took advantage of these abuses as convenient excuses to launch an attack against the Church itself and its Holy Doctrine, received from Christ Himself.

Calvin articulated the formally heretical doctrines of Protestantism such as fatalistic predestination, which attacked in turn the basic doctrine of free will upon which depends the moral responsibility of man for procuring, through the merits of Christ, his own salvation. But the more useful and widespread definition of the heresy of Protestantism was its rejection of the central, divine, universal authority of *one* Church extending from Christ to the present. This spirit of rebellion seemed to ruin the unity of Christendom. Actually, it cut what was *not* Christian or Catholic out of the Church. One could say that Divine Providence was the surgeon from this point of view.

"Who was orchestrating this revolt, Father?" Satan's followers, the antichristian usurers, who worshipped Mammon. Besides separating whole regions of Catholics from their spiritual Mother in Rome, the great social effect of the Revolution was the wholesale introduction of interest banking in these regions. This usury radically altered the course of history.

In the Catholic world the common man was protected from the ravages introduced by interest banking, which can be used to great advantage by men of wealth over the peasants, consumers and wage earners. These criminally rich can fluctuate prices and payments for labor until all competitors are at their mercy.

Let me read the great historian, Hillaire Belloc in his description of this usurious power from his book, *The Great Heresies*:

"To take one example: in the Protestant culture (save where it was remote and simple) the free peasant, protected by ancient customs, declined. He died out because the old customs which supported him against the rich were broken up. Rich men acquired the land; great masses of men formerly owning farms became destitute. The modern proletariat began and the seeds of what we today call Capitalism were sown. We can see now what an evil that was, but at the time it meant that the land was better cultivated. New and more scientific methods were more easily applied by the rich landowners of the new Protestant culture than by the Catholic traditional peasantry; and, competition being

unchecked, the former triumphed.

Again, inquiry tended to be freer in the Protestant culture than in the Catholic, because there was no one united authority of doctrine; and though in the long run this was bound to lead to the break-up of philosophy and of all sound thinking, the first effects were stimulating and vitalizing.

But the great, the chief, example of what was happening through the break-up of the old Catholic European unity, was the rise of banking.

Usury was practiced everywhere, but in the Catholic culture it was restricted by law and practiced with difficulty. In the protestant culture it became a matter of course. The Protestant merchants of Holland led the way in the beginnings of modern banking; England followed suit; and that is why the still comparatively small Protestant nations began to acquire formidable economic strength. Their mobile capital and credit kept on increasing compared with their total wealth. The mercantile spirit flourished vigorously among the Dutch and English, and the universal admission of competition continued to favor the growth of the Protestant side of Europe."

So England, Holland and Prussia in northern Germany gained great economic and military strength and began to dominate and colonize the world. Religion everywhere declined, but ...

"...The decline of men's adherence to the old doctrines of Christendom did not weaken Protestant society. The whole tone of mind in that society called every man free to judge for himself, and the one thing it repudiated and would not have was the authority of a common religion.

A common religion is of the nature of the Catholic culture, and so the growing decline of belief worked havoc there. It destroyed the moral authority of the Catholic governments, which were closely associated with religion, and it either cast a sort of paralysis over thought and action, as happened in Spain, or, as happened in France, violently divided men into two camps, clerical and anti-clerical.

Still, though we can see what was at work in the eighteenth century, the men of the time did not. England through her sea power had got a stranglehold on India; Prussia had established herself as a strong power; but no one foresaw that England and Prussia would overshadow Christendom. India was going to produce wealth and power for those who should exploit her and, with her as a base, establish their banking power and commerce throughout the East. Prussia was going to absorb the Germans and overthrow Europe.

...Very few foresaw what the new republic in North America was going to mean for the future; its vast and rapid expansion in numbers and wealth immensely strengthened the position of the Protestant culture in the world. It was much later that a certain proportion of Catholic immigrants somewhat modified this position, but even so, the United States remained during their astonishing increase an essentially Protestant society."

So an anti-Catholic spirit gained ascendancy and power in the world in the wake of the

Protestant Revolt, laying the groundwork for the evils of the modern age of atheism, the age of antichrist -- the French Revolution and the Communist Revolution being its signal events.

Belloc noted that later the "auto-toxic conditions of the Protestant culture" caused its "breakdown," which was "the result of that very spirit of skeptical inquiry upon which Protestantism had always been based."

"...(Protestantism) had begun by saying, 'I deny the authority of the Church: every man must examine the credibility of every doctrine for himself.' But it had taken as a prop (illogically enough) the Catholic doctrine of Scriptural inspiration. That great mass of Jewish folklore, poetry and traditional popular history and proverbial wisdom which we call the Old Testament, that body of records of the Early Church which we call the New Testament, the Catholic Church had declared to be divinely inspired. Protestantism (as we all know) turned this very doctrine *of the Church against the Church herself*, and appealed to the Bible against Catholic authority.

Hence the Bible -- Old and New Testaments combined -- became an object of worship in itself throughout the Protestant culture. There was a great deal of doubt and even paganism floating about before the end of the nineteenth century in the nations of Protestant culture; but the mass of their populations, in Germany as in England and Scandinavia, certainly in the United States, anchored themselves to the literal interpretation of the Bible.

Now historical research, research in physical science and research in textual criticism, shook this attitude. The Protestant culture began to go to the other extreme; from having worshipped the very text of the Bible as something immutable and the clear voice of God, it fell to doubting almost everything that the Bible contained."

Belloc noted also that the usurious society destroyed the wealth and strength of the common man, who is the basis of good government of any kind but especially of the self-government of say, a democratic republic like the United States.

"There was also another example of the spirit of Protestantism destroying its own foundations, but in a different field -- that of social economics.

Protestantism had produced free competition permitting usury and destroying the old safeguards of the small man's property -- the guild and the village association.

In most places where it was powerful (and especially in England) Protestantism had destroyed the peasantry altogether. It had produced modern industrialism in its capitalistic form; it had produced modern banking, which at last became the master of the community; but not much more than a lifetime's experience of industrial capitalism and of the bankers' usurious power was enough to show that neither the one nor the other could continue. They had bred vast social evils which went from bad to worse, until men, without consciously appreciating the ultimate cause of those evils (which cause is, of course, spiritual and religious) at any rate found the evils unendurable.

But the later wealth and political power of the protestant culture had been based upon these very institutions, now challenged.

Industrial capitalism and the usurious banking power were the very strength of nineteenth-century Protestant civilization. They had especially triumphed in Victorian England. They are, at the moment in which I write these words, still on the surface all-powerful -- but we every one of us know that their hour has struck. They have rotted from within; and with them the Protestant hegemony which they so powerfully supported in the generations immediately before our own."

"Father, what spiritual illness among the people do you believe was fertile ground for the success of the Revolution of Protest in the Christian world in the 16<sup>th</sup> Century."

I would not hesitate in pointing to the relative surge of pride, worldliness and sensuality that followed the exaltation of humanity in the preceding Renaissance period. In themselves the achievements of science and art were good. But in conceiving pride in them, they produced a humanistic independence and an anti-religious spirit of skepticism in all that could not be proved by logic or demonstrated empirically. So, the mysteries of Divine Revelation, especially the mystery of the One, Holy Catholic Church, which is the Mystical Body of Christ, *Christ present in the world*, became the object of skepticism before the pride of human reason. We call the error Rationalism. Science triumphs in what we can know through reason and its tools, the senses and imagination. But revealed religion triumphs in believing and reasoning upon what we *cannot* see or know completely, which we call a mystery. The loss of reverence for the mysteries of religion is the same as a loss of respect for God, who is infinitely Mysterious to man's finite mind. So it was, this rationalistic skepticism led to revolt against authority in the 16<sup>th</sup> century and later on to atheism, which is the spirit of antichrist in the 19<sup>th</sup> and 20<sup>th</sup> centuries.

The average Protestant of my time, Phillip, had inherited many errors, had never known the truths of the true Church and was fully a victim of what his ancestral heresy had produced -- the anti-Christian age. But the latter day Protestant blue bloods who were heretics in principle, not just heredity, ironically cursed the antichrist evils their spiritual forefather's errors had brought into existence. Until the bitter end, they never realized in all truth and humility that they imbibed the very spiritual seeds of that anti-Christian wave that swamped the world.

We see the earliest *seeds* of the Protestant error, Phillip, sewn back in the time of St. Paul by the "Jews" he preached against. The principle false doctrine that Paul and the other Apostles condemned was *salvation by faith without works!* This is the devil's essential lie: just *believe you are saved and you are*. You are excused, saved and even deified by your willful boldness, just as Lucifer pretended in his rebellion against God. Did Satan not say to Eve, to his pagan priests and priestesses and their followers and to every heretic that ever

broke from the Church: believe what *you will to believe*, and you will save yourself and all your followers, for then my spirit will be with you forever

"Forever in Hell, Father."

Yes, but that he never tells his followers. He pretends to be their saviour, their christ. God's Church is defined in explicit, unchanged doctrine. But the only continuity among all those who have redefined God's Word for their own sake throughout history is this principle that *self will rules all else*. And that is, precisely, Satan's creed. Therefore, it is *his* spirit that is behind all religions and churches but the One, Holy, Catholic, Apostolic Church of Jesus Christ, however much some of the members of those sects are in ignorance of what they are a party to.

For fifteen hundred years Satan tried to conquer the Church by sowing various errors of doctrine. He failed. His new approach in the 16<sup>th</sup> century was to preach the smorgasbord heresy of believing what you will among the doctrines of the Church, but do not worry about acting on these beliefs, for your works cannot save you. Even your faith is not a definite work of believing one true, divine set of doctrines. Faith is a private, subjective feeling and notion -- that is enough to save you.

"But this is sheer pride, Father, not a work of Faith, not a Gift of Faith from one, unequivocal God speaking the same Truth to *all* men."

The Calvinists loved to say only the work of Christ can save you, not your works. How clever, to sever a man's acts from his beliefs, taking all responsibility away from man for cooperating in his salvation, except the mere assertion of belief. I agree, Phillip. This is sheer mockery of the true Faith.

"So, you are simply saying, Father, that sincerity requires that our works match our beliefs."

Yes, and those works of ours, by God's Grace, are united with Christ's works *in us*. He saved us through His sacrifice *united with* our works of Faith.

"So, if I worship God as He directs on Sunday and I help the poor man obtain food and shelter, I have not gained merit before God towards eternal life unless those works are united to Christ's work of the cross by my true Faith in Him and all He said, which are the doctrines of His Church."

A very good summary, I think, Phillip. Let us study a few points of refutation for these heresies of "faith without works" and "once saved, always saved" promulgated three times by the Frauds, first in the time of St. Paul, secondly in the Albigensian revolt of the 13<sup>th</sup> century and third, in the Protestant Revolution.

Let us just read a passage from Scripture, Phillip.

**James 2:14-26** "What shall it profit, my brethren, if a man say he hath Faith, but hath not works? Shall faith be able to save him? And if a brother or sister be naked, and want daily food: And one of you say to them: Go in peace, be ye warmed and filled; yet give them not those things that are necessary for the body, what shall it profit? So faith also, if it have not works, is dead in itself. But some man will say: Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me the faith without works; and I will

shew thee, by works, my faith. Thou believest that there is one God. Thou dost well: the devils also believe and tremble. But wilt thou know O vain man, that faith without works is dead? Was not Abraham our father justified by works, offering up Isaac his son upon the altar? Seest thou, that faith did co-operate with his works; and by works faith was made perfect? And the scripture was fulfilled, saying: *Abraham believed God, and it was reputed to him to justice, and he was called the friend of God.* Do you see that by works a man is justified; and not by faith only? And in like manner also Rahab the harlot, was not she justified by works, receiving the messengers, and sending them out another way? For even as the body without the spirit is dead; so also faith without works is dead.

James and Paul, the other Apostles too, probably, had to preach against this heresy from the beginning. The heart of the Protestant error is very ancient.

Here are some other quotes I have long ago written down.

**II St. Peter 1:20** "*Understanding this first: That no prophesy of the Scripture is made by private interpretation.*"

**St. James 2: 10** "*Now whosoever shall keep the whole law, but offend in one point, is become guilty of all.*" The commentary says, "That is, he becomes a transgressor of the law in such a manner that the observing of all other points will not avail him to salvation."

**St. Augustine**, 430 AD, Bishop and Doctor of the Church: "*Heretics think false things about God, and call it their faith.*"

**Galatians 5:6** "*For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but faith, which worketh by charity.*"

**Romans 11: 20-22** "*Well: because of unbelief they were broken off. But thou standest by faith: be not high-minded, but fear. For if God hath not spared the natural branches: he may not perhaps spare thee also. See, therefore, the goodness, and the severity of God: towards them, indeed, that are fallen, the severity: but towards thee, the goodness of God, if thou continue in goodness, otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.*"

**I Corinthians 9:27** "*But I chastise my body, and bring it into subjection: lest, perhaps, when I have preached to others, I myself should become reprobate.*"

**I Corinthians 10:12** "*Wherefore let him that thinketh himself to stand, take heed lest he fall.*"

**Philippians 2:12** "*Wherefore, my dearly beloved, (as you have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but much more now in my absence) work out your salvation with fear and trembling.*"

**Apocalypse 3:11** "*Behold I come quickly: hold fast that which thou hast, that no man take thy crown.*"

There are many more passages that disprove the Protestant heresies; for the works of faith cannot be separated from the acts of belief, both of which must be persevered in until life's end. In fact, one of the works of a living faith as opposed to a dead faith is

*perseverance* in faith and its works until death. Another is leaving God's Word unchanged by one's willful interpretation.

"It is a fearful thing to alter God's Word, Father, to misrepresent God Himself."

It is now time, Phillip, to read from *Philip II*, a historical work about aspects of the Protestant Revolt. It was written by the great historian, Dr. William Thomas Walsh, who documents all he says from original sources. Few could ever duplicate his learning. In this great book and others he exposes of the roots of the Protestant Revolt in fascinating details. Let's begin with some passages about the Spanish Inquisition that reveal the heart of the problem.

"It is difficult to understand how Prescott could have been ignorant of what the Church understood by an *auto de fe*. There was nothing bloody about it. It was literally an *act of faith* in the teachings of Christ and His Church on the part of King, Inquisitors, populace and penitents. Very often, and perhaps in the vast majority of *autos* in Spanish history, there *was* no execution afterwards; simply a reconciliation or the imposition of penances. In extreme cases the Inquisitors declared that a prisoner was an impenitent and incurable heretic. The State then declared that if such was the character of the prisoner, he was an enemy of society, and, like any traitor, must be put to death.

... Thus Philip carried out rigorously the dying wish of his father, the very last words addressed to him by the tolerant Emperor in the codicil of his will, that he bring every heretic to justice, without exception or fear or favor. The lives of a few agitators, most of them descendants of the Jews who had summoned the Mohammedans to ravage Spain for nearly eight centuries, were to be sacrificed to keep peace and unity in Spain. Germany had had her Peasants' War, and in the next century would know the horrors of the Thirty Years' War, with the butchery of many thousands, the waste of farms and cities, and a people forever divided, all as a result of the tolerance of Charles.

In Spain, as long as the Inquisition lasted, there would be no religious wars, no burning churches, no slaughtered priests. France would know these atrocities, and England, and the Netherlands. It would be centuries before the enemies of Christendom could introduce them again in Spain. If the method seems cruel to us, it is because we forget the cruel fate, the long crucifixion of a great people, to which it was the harsh reply. It at least had the merit of proceeding judicially. It could at least claim that the evil it caused was far less than the horrors it averted.

... Among historians it is Leti, writing at a great distance and under a strong Protestant bias, who first creates the Black Demon of the South, ghoulishly rejoicing over the shrieks of the victims and over the vile smell of burning hair and flesh. To this legend historians cling even after they have set forth the facts that proved it without foundation.

... The Protestant revolt, which in a truer sense than is generally understood was the answer to the Spanish Inquisition, made the most effective use of its horrors for propaganda purposes. To the enemies of Christendom it made no difference that the gloomy cells and black dungeons they described had never existed. They were not interested in the discovery, made when the Inquisition came to an end in 1808, that the prisoners were kept in decent houses, often homes of nobles donated to the Holy Office with pious intent; that they contained no *calabozos*; and that the cellars had never been occupied, except perhaps by wine and vegetables.



... In England, where it was needful to wean from the Church a whole population still Catholic in principle but disturbed and confused by change and by the deprivation of the sacraments, the dungeons, the torture chambers, the

thumb-screws, the rack and the strappado were of inestimable value: even though thumb-screws were never used by the Holy Office, but were employed freely in the Tower of London.

... The Church tolerated the Inquisition, as she still tolerates capital punishment, not as a good in itself, but as the lesser of two evils.

The instinct of men to protect their culture and their institutions by the most effective means is illustrated by Graetz's account of an Inquisition in Holland by Jews whose ancestors had suffered from the Holy Office. "The Amsterdam rabbis introduced the innovation of bringing religious opinions and Convictions before their judgment-seat, of constituting themselves a sort of Inquisitorial tribunal, and instituting *autos-de-fe* which, even if bloodless, were not less painful to the sufferers. Before we become too pharisaical about the Christian Inquisitors, who were so careful to shed no blood and to leave the onus of capital punishment to the State, let us weep for a moment with our Jewish brethren over the frailty of our common humanity.

... Also, in literal fulfillment of the prophecies of Christ, the hatred that had mocked, slandered and baited Him, misrepresented His teachings and actions, sought repeatedly to kill Him, and finally, by trickery, induced the power to Caesar to crucify Him – this too would always remain. There would always be a Caiaphas, the spiritually blind *Abet Din*, misleading the synagogue, always some crafty Annas, the *Nasi* or political Prince directing and corrupting the Sanhedrin. To these the Judases would flee when the Church rejected them, and these the Caesars of every age would use and despise. Even as good Jews would furnish the sinews of the Church in many ages, so men remarkably like those scribes and pharisees whom Christ had called the children of the devil would perpetuate the hatred that had once crucified Incarnate Love.

No philosophy of history that leaves out of account this gigantic aspect of reality can be considered realistic. It is for this reason that the best hints for a philosophy of history may be found in the encyclicals of various Popes.

The intense hatred that Jesus foretold would follow all who sincerely believed in Him was manifested in the earliest days of the Church. When Saint Paul went to Rome to preach "One Lord, one faith, one baptism" he encountered such opposition from his own race that he somewhat bitterly wrote of "the Jews, who both killed the Lord Jesus, and the prophets, and have persecuted us, and please not God, and are adversaries to all men; prohibiting us to speak to the Gentiles, that they may be saved." It must be noted, however, that later on he sent a letter to the Christians at Rome sternly warning them against the wickedness of Jew-baiting. The Acts of the Apostles abundantly testify that most of the first Christian converts were Jews. Jews of good will formed the sinews of the Church. Everywhere another type of Jew, perhaps in a small minority, refused even to listen to the arguments he condemned, and prevented well-meaning Jews, as well as Gentiles, from hearing the Gospel.

The author of the apocalypse, too, adverts more than once to the same astonishing concentration of hate that followed the children of Christ as they

scattered through the Roman world: "I know thy tribulation, and thy poverty, but thou art rich: and thou art blasphemed by them that say they are Jews and are not, but are of the synagogue of Satan." And "Behold, I will bring of the synagogue of Satan, who say they are Jews and are not, but do lie. Behold, I will make them to come and adore before thy feet. And they shall know that I have loved thee." The first major persecution of Christians in the Gentile world, that of Nero, was probably set in motion at the instance of the Jews surrounding his wife Poppaea.

There were Judases in every age to attempt to pervert the Church from within. Not a few of the later scandals of Christendom were the result of their work. Simon Magus, perhaps a precursor of Gnosticism, was only the first to attempt to purchase the gifts of the Holy Ghost. Arius, the Catholic Jew, would yet make an insidious attack on the divinity of Christ that would divide the Christian

world for centuries. Valentinus, called the chief of the Gnostics by Saint Irenaeus, was a Jew of Alexandria.

As the colossal struggle continued century after century, the chief means employed by the Annas and the Caiaphas of each age to keep the mass of the Jewish people in ignorance of the true nature of Christianity, and to fan their misunderstanding of it to hatred, was the Talmud. This melange of wisdom, tradition and superstition contained the most scurrilous and vindictive blasphemies against Christ. Wherever its true character became known, it was condemned by Christian authorities; as in France under Saint Louis, and in Rome under Pope Paul IV, who had thousands of copies burned. Yet it survived, to carry into the modern world the spirit of the Pharisees who rejected Christ, with those rabbinical interpretations which made it, as Lazare noted, "the creator The most vituperative parts were omitted in translation. In dangerous times they were handed down orally by the rabbis.

The historical importance of this book may be judged from the opinion of the Jewish historian Graetz, whose inaccuracies, omissions and wrong judgments have poisoned the whole Jewish world, but whose interpretations of that world cannot be ignored. He goes so far as to say, "We can boldly assert that the war for and against the Talmud aroused German consciousness and created a public opinion without which the Reformation, like many other efforts, would have died in the hour of birth, or perhaps would never have been born at all.

In the Middle Ages it was customary for Jews to deny that the Talmud contained anti-Christian libels. Pretense in the modern world is no longer necessary. The Talmud is recognized as a sort of link between the early Gnostic onslaught on the Catholic Church, and the even more serious modern assault behind the mask of Freemasonry.

...Another Jewish book that had a powerful effect not only on Jews but on the history of the world was the Kabbala. Originally that part of the Mosaic Law which was handed down by tradition, it had become, by the thirteenth century, a collection of occult and esoteric doctrines borrowed from Buddhism, Gnosticism, the neo-Platonists and all manner of eastern pseudo-mystics. Out of the dark labyrinths of its imagery came many heresies and revolutions:

rosicrucianism, theosophy, and all modern freemasonry. As Rabbi Benamozegh wrote, "It is quite certain that Masonic theology is at root nothing else than Theosophy, and that it corresponds to the theology of the Kabbala."

For a thousand years after she had emerged from the Catacombs – say roughly from the time of Constantine in the fourth century to the middle of the fourteenth – the Catholic Church successfully defended herself from such attacks both within and without. At times the very existence of the State and of society was threatened. In such crises, the Church not only permitted the use of force to avert worse evils, but even cooperated with it.

The Crusades were the defense of Christian homes, Christian women and children, Christian civilization, against an Islam deliberately bent upon exterminating them. A crusade ended the anti-social insanity of the Cathari who opposed marriage but taught suicide in that part of southern France known as *Judea Secunda*. The Inquisition followed them to Spain, and later saved the Christian Spanish State from the secret treachery of the pretended Catholics who were in league with the Moors in the war of liberation. As the ancient Jews had fought and slain idolaters, and had stoned spiritualists and similar dark heretics to death, so the Catholic Church, heir of the Jewish revelation, protected her children from destruction of body and soul while they were building the happiest and most balanced culture and civilization that have ever existed in this world.

The turning point in this vast drama (so far as our vantage point in time

allows us to see) was the Black Death in 1346. It seemed to men as if Satan himself had burst the chains that had bound him for a thousand years. More than half the priests in the world died. Christendom was still staggering under this blow when other blows fell, one after another: the papal exile at Avignon, the Great Western Schism, the return of paganism under the guise of the Renaissance – all these onslaughts in the City of God itself, while the Turks struck from without, gaining and laying waste one Christian country after another. Corruption and disorder were inevitable under these circumstances. Confusion became so widespread that only a divine institution could have survived it.

... In the Protestant Revolt there was something more than the mere breaking away of the northern communities from the jurisdiction of Rome; much more than the nationalism to which Professor Carlton Hayes ascribes perhaps too much importance. There was a spirit in Protestantism in its first phase that sought something more than freedom; it sought nothing less (and this was more evident in Calvinism than in Lutheranism) than the utter destruction of the Catholic Church. Here was a hatred that began manifesting itself by the burning of churches and convents, the violation of nuns, the torture and execution of priests, the defiling of the Cross and the unspeakable desecration of the Blessed Sacrament.

It was an old and international hatred. It was the hatred of the church-burning Donatists, the hatred of Islam, the hatred that had opposed Saint Paul in Rome and Saint James in Jerusalem, the hatred of Annas and the Scribes and pharisees crying, "Come down from the Cross, and we will believe!" There was nothing new about it except the form it took; but the

preparation and organization were better, and the time was ripe.

Nor was this Protestant phase of the revolt a peculiarly northern or German product, though it has been convenient to make it appear so. It might have happened in southern Europe. In fact, it almost did happen in France, especially in southern France, before it happened in Germany. Lefevre, under the patronage of Marguerite of Angouleme and others of the anti-Catholic House of Navarre, taught justification by grace before Luther did, and profoundly influenced Beza, Farel, Rousel and other leaders who passed quickly through a Lutheran phase to the more radical organization of Calvinism. The roots of the revolution went deeper than the German affair. It was not local, but international.

If we may believe Graetz and other Jewish historians, the Jews played a much more important part in all this than Christians, for some mysterious reason, have generally admitted. Incalculable was the number of this virile and gifted race who had settled in all countries of Europe during the so-called Dark Ages and the Middle Ages; incalculable the number who were assimilated as sincere Catholics, or who, as pretended Catholics, formed the nucleus for any international revolt. They were everywhere, in communication with one another and with the Jews of the Synagogue. There were so many of the latter in England and France that one Jewish writer of the sixteenth century, often cited by modern Jews, attributed to this fact "the inclination of the English and the French" to Protestantism. Dispersion, secrecy and organization gave them a power out of all proportion to their numbers, a power so remarkable that Napoleon Bonaparte suspected that the political structure of the Jewish State had survived under cover for eighteen centuries. Was there any historical foundation for such a theory?

There may or may not be significance in the fact that the title of *Nasi* (Prince or King of the Jews) which belonged at the time of the Crucifixion to Annas, father-in-law of the High Priest, or *Ab et Din*, Caiphas, was assumed by one of the bitterest, most intelligent and more persistent enemies of King Philip II – Joseph Miques or Mendes, the Jewish international banker of the

Spice Trust of Portugal and Antwerp, who had in his debt William of Orange and many other noblemen of the Low Countries. About the time when Philip was returning to Spain, this millionaire was establishing himself in Turkey, throwing off the last pretense of Christianity and assuming the antique and princely title of *Nasi*.

...There was, for instance, a *Nasi* Levi who presided over a meeting of delegates from all the Jewish communities in southern France in 1215, as Annas had presided over the Sanhedrin in Jerusalem.

Even then, among the Jewish communities of southern France, the anti-Christian Revolution was being silently prepared. Prosperity and wealth had rewarded the industry and intelligence of the exiles in Montpellier, Nimes, Tarbes, Carcassonne – a score of places in that part of France where later the Huguenots would flourish – until they almost rivaled the medieval empire of their brethren in Spain. Slave-traders, purveyors of silks and other luxuriers, usurers – they excelled generally in the commerce of intangibles, in the handling of money *per se*. Culture and power followed upon wealth. It was

their great tragedy that, having failed to understand Who Christ was, they could not get rid of the messianic consciousness for which they had been chosen and consecrated. Finding closed to them the only spiritual door to salvation, they were constantly driven to seek redemption in the here and now, in the resources of nature, in gold and power, in anything, anywhere but Christ. When all their kingdom had turned to dust in their patient hands, and the inevitable scourge of persecution came to scatter them again and again, they still followed leaders who kept them blind, and remained missionaries of what Saint John called "the spirit that dissolves Christ."

In the thirteenth century, when the Catholic Church rejoiced in the full burgeoning of that rich and generous civilization she had reanimated and purified, the Jews were creating at Troyes a remarkable school of exegesis in which were being forged most of the arguments to be used by Protestant preachers against the Church and to be turned by the "higher critics" of later times against the heart of Christ Himself. The center and master of the group was a very rich Jew named Isaac Chatelaine, better known now as Isaac of Troyes; a man learned in the Talmud ...

... Rabbi Salomon, the son of this hapless Isaac, became famous under the name of Raschi as founder of the Talmudic school of Champagne and the chief rival of Maimonides. Through Raschi the ideas of Isaac were transmitted to Protestantism. They were adopted early in the fourteenth century by a Franciscan monk of Jewish descent, Nicholas of Lyra. The arguments of this Nicholas of Lyra powerfully influenced Luther, Calvin and Zwingli. "Raschi And the Torahists made Nicholas of Lyra," wrote the nineteenth-century Christian apostate Renan, whose writings were financed and published by Jews, and who borrowed many of his brilliant sophistries from the arsenal of Narbonne, "and Nicholas of Lyra made Luther."

... Another Jew who did valiant spade work for Luther's sowing was Elias Levita, founder of the modern Hebrew grammar and teacher of many Christians. "He, with Jacob Loans and Obadiah Sforno," observes a Jewish historian, "must be allowed a large share in producing the Protestant Reformation." Sforno was the teacher of Reuchlin and many others. The so-called Reformation, adds Abrahams, "drew its life blood from a rational Hebraism." Luther naturally employed Jews in preparing his German Bible. Jews were The most successful agents in the printing and distribution of Protestant Bibles and tracts in all parts of Europe.

Not only the ideas of Luther, but the very occasion for their dissemination, Was furnished by the fertile activity of Jewish minds. The Battle of the Books, preliminary skirmish in the war of ideas about to commence at Wittenberg, could never have occurred if the Talmud and the Kabbala had not first done their deadly work.

... In the most critical and decisive age of the Church, this descendant of Florentine usurers, this son of Lorenzo de' Medici, kind and generous intellectual, Cardinal at thirteen, Pope at thirty-seven, was too busy with his pictures, his hunting and his plays to give sufficient attention to the ruin of the world. The Jews have always been well pleased with him. Like all the Medici, he surrounded himself with them and showered them with favor and protection,

even to the extent of allowing the printing and dissemination of the Talmud, of whose true nature he was perhaps in ignorance. This genial collector, to whom Luther was only a joke, went to his death (too suddenly for the last sacraments) with little more than a suspicion of his own share in the business, not only by the abuses permitted in connection with indulgences, but by his long negligence and vacillation in the matter of the Jewish books.

Johann Reuchlin, a friend of Erasmus, started the famous Battle. Saturated, like young Pico della Mirandola, with the imagery and fanatical theosophy of the Kabbala, which he imagined he understood, he urged all Christians to study this and other Jewish books, for a better understanding of their own religion. A Dominican of Cologne, Jakob Hochstraten, replied to him publicly in 1519, protesting against the notion that the pseudo-Judaism of the Jewish mind in revolt against its own messias could possibly cast anything but a baleful light on Christianity. As the controversy continued, there entered into the lists against Reuchlin another Dominican monk, Johan Pfefferkorn. This man was a Jewish convert to the Faith. Graetz calls him, with more vigor than truth, "an ignorant, thoroughly vile creature, the scum of the Jewish people." Reuchlin, who defended the Jewish books, was of course, "a pure, upright character," with "admirable love of truth and a soft heart." The fact was that Pfefferkorn was a good sincere man, a none too brilliant student, who carried the zeal of the convert to the verge of fanaticism; his vileness apparently consisting of his being a true Jew in the sense in which the Apostles understood the term. He recognized the divinity of Christ and the untruthful obscenity of the Talmud. Urging the people of his race to turn from the man-made books of the rabbis to the living Christ in the Catholic Church, he defended the Jews against the worst charges made against them, including the ritual murder accusation. This did not save him from the lasting enmity of the Annases of his day. As for Reuchlin, Graetz might have added that he had not only a soft heart but a rather soft head.

Pfefferkorn accused him, in a pamphlet called *Handspiegel*, of having been paid by the Jews to disseminate their propaganda. Reuchlin replied with a violent denial in his *Augenspiegel*, and after further vituperation, pro and con, appealed to the Pope. By means of a flattering letter, he gained the favor of the influential Jew, Bonet de Lattes, physician to Pope Leo X. The physician naturally had no objection to interceding with the Holy Father in such a cause. The upshot was that the pleasure-loving Pope handed over this mere squabble of monks, as he considered it, to the Bishop of Spire, a youth of twenty-seven, who in turn passed it on to Canon Truchsess, a disciple of Reuchlin; who gave the decision to his friend, completely exonerating the *Augenspiegel*.

The more discerning friends of the Catholic Church were highly alarmed. The Inquisition, better aware from long experience of what was going on among the Jews, appealed from the verdict to the Pope. Leo summoned both disputants to Rome in 1514. Delay followed delay, until Reuchlin, by a false statement, got the case transferred to another judge at Spire, who again exonerated him. Another appeal was filed. The Pope continued to delay, however, as various rich patrons of Reuchlin, and such liberal but not very profound Catholics as Erasmus, brought pressure to bear upon him; as did also

the Emperor Maximilian I. It was not until the Lutheran bombshell exploded in 1517, on the hard-fought field of the Battle of the Books, that the real significance of Reuchlin's proposals became generally evident. Even then the easy-going Pope made no decision.

At last, in 1520, the findings at Spires were reversed. The Pope forbade the *Augenspiegel* as a scandalous and offensive book, unlawfully favorable to the Jews, and condemned Reuchlin to pay the costs of the litigation.

... What is equally certain, but strangely kept well in the background of most historical research, is that the Protestant Revolt, far from being an "advance" or a "progressive step," was a long retrogression toward the moribund Judaism of the Pharisees of the time of Christ. Its multitudinous offspring of more than 200 sects would lead in the course of time to a return of the dismal skepticism of the Sadducees. Caiaphas was a Pharisee, Annas a Sadducee. It was old Annas, the *Nasi*, who would have the last word.

If there is exaggeration in that astonishing but almost unnoticed statement of Cabrera, himself of a Spanish Marrao family, that "most of the heresiarchs and heretics of this present century have been of those people," it is beyond question, as a Jewish historian says, that the first leaders of the Protestant sects were called semi-Judaei, or half-Jews, in all parts of Europe, and that men of Jewish descent were as conspicuous among them as they had been among the Gnostics and would later be among the Communists.

The origin of Calvin (whose real name was Chauvin) is obscure, as is that of his chief aide and successor, Theodore Beza. But Farel, Rousel and others of the stormiest preachers who carried their propaganda through Europe were of Jewish descent. Michael Servetus may have been, and was certainly influenced by Jews. At Antwerp in 1566 the chief minister of the Calvinist synod, which was the center of the most telling Protestant intrigue and propaganda in the Netherlands, was a Spanish Jew."

Modern research by Jewish historians has made it clear that in the sixteenth century large numbers of the English Protestants (and doubtless the most active in propaganda and organization) were Jews who had put on the convenient mask of Calvinism at Antwerp. For example, "from an early period," says Dr. Lucien Wolf, "the Marranos in Antwerp had taken an active part in the Reformation movement, and had given up their mask of Catholicism for a not less hollow pretense of Calvinism. The change will be readily understood. The simulation of Calvinism brought them new friends, who, like them, were enemies of Rome, Spain and the Inquisition. It helped them in their fight against the Holy Office, and for that reason was very welcome to them. Moreover, it was a form of Christianity which came nearer to their own simple Judaism. The result was that they became zealous and valuable allies of the Calvinists."

There was something more in most Calvinist teaching than the desire for religious freedom and the reform of abuses. It was more like the ancient hatred which had followed the Catholic Church from her cradle, seeking not her reform but her utter destruction. Calvin himself was as ruthless in this regard as Mohammed. One of his letters to English Protestants declares that those who refuse to give up the Roman Catholic faith must be put to the sword. Calvinism quickly became an international movement, with a world capital at Geneva and with Calvin as a Pope ruling over a city with a regimentation uncomfortably suggestive of some totalitarian state of the future.

The most active intelligencers, liaison officers and propagandists of this international army were Jews. Only four years after Luther's first outburst, Cardinal Aleander, papal nuncio, reported that Jews were printing and circulating the German monk's books in Flanders. From the Netherlands they send Bibles even to Spain, concealed in double-bottomed wine-casks.

In Ferrara, a great Jewish financial center, they printed heretical bibles for distribution in Italy and elsewhere. No less a person than Carranza, now languishing in the prisons of the Inquisition in Spain, said that this was the reason why the Church had to discourage the reading of the Bible in the vernaculars, save in approved versions.

... That was the thing, the old and evil thing, the insidious and destructive thing, that Philip was resolved to destroy, if possible, before it ruined the world. It would be far-fetched to say that he saw all its potentialities in 1559. He could hardly have seen what Pope Pius IX saw in 1849, when he declared that all the evils of the modern world (including Communism and its attendant miseries) had their origin in the tragic sixteenth-century assault on the Catholic Faith in the name of Protestantism.

Did Philip imagine, then, that the Jews were to blame for all the ills of humanity? Not even his bitterest enemies could fairly accuse him of that. A Jew-baiter in the vulgar sense he certainly was not. When an attempt was made to introduce into Spain an organization known as the Order of the White Sword aimed against Jews as Jews, he put his foot down against it. He knew and employed too many excellent men of Jewish ancestry to be taken in by any stupid and vicious theory of "Nordic" or "Aryan" superiority. It must have been apparent to a man of his shrewd common sense (in most matters) that even those Jews who persisted in the iniquity of attempting to destroy the Church could have accomplished very little without collaboration from within, from unworthy Christians. It always takes a Judas to complete the work of Annas and Caiaphas.

... One of the largest factors in causing all this corruption was the interference of the State, newly conscious of its unity and power, in the affairs of the Church. Priests were badly disciplined because there were too many political bishops. There were political bishops because kings, even in Spain, had seldom missed an opportunity to wring privileges from unwilling Popes when they had them in their power. Often the Pope had to allow the King to name the bishops, as the price of having Christianity preached at all, and he chose the lesser of the two evils. In view of all this, it is strange that men go on repeating cant phrases about the interference of the Church in the State in the Middle Ages. Sometimes, yes; but more often the other way around. Philip took it as a matter of course that he was to be consulted before the Pope nominated a bishop in any of his dominions. If any Pope had dared to dictate Philip's appointments --!

... Documents of the *Alta Vendita*, made public by the papal government in 1846, disclosed a systematic and deliberate campaign of slander. One letter said:

"Our ultimate end is that of Voltaire and of the French Revolution – the final destruction of Catholicism, and even of the Christian idea. The work which we have undertaken is not the work of a day, nor of a month, nor of a year. It may last many years, a century perhaps ... Crush the enemy whoever he may be; crush the powerful by means of lies and calumny. ... If a prelate comes to Rome from the provinces to exercise some public function, learn immediately his character, his antecedents, above all, his defects. If he is already a declared enemy, an Albania, a Pallotta, ... envelop him in all the



snare you can lay under his feet; create for him one of those reputations which will frighten little children and old women ... paint him cruel and sanguinary: recount regarding him some trait of cruelty which can easily be engraved in the minds of the people."

If this was never formulated so concretely until the nineteenth century, it describes, with startling accuracy, what the enemies of the Church had been doing for centuries. It describes what they did to the reputation of Philip II.

... In England it was the reformed Observantine Franciscans who

## 79

withstood Henry VIII even to death, while the relaxed Conventuals and other badly disciplined monks and priests formed the nucleus of the Church of England. The first Protestants, as a rule, were bad Catholics.

For a whole century or more before Philip II, most of the Popes and large numbers of prelates had been striving to reform the Church. A great deal had been accomplished. A great deal more remained to be done. Some Popes of the highest intentions were compelled to devote most of their energies to the defense of Christendom against the conquering Turks. Others were foiled by the selfishness and criminal quarrelsomeness of European rulers. When Protestantism appeared, its leaders called loudly for reform. Most of them, however, could be depended upon to reject, resist and misrepresent any attempt to hold a General Council of all Christendom, without which no thorough reform would be possible."

Phillip, the subjugation and conquest of the Catholic populations in half of Germany, the Netherlands, Switzerland and parts of France by Protestant revolutionaries was overshadowed in blackness only by what happened in England. A poor, pious populace, 98% Catholic, led by many valiant nobles, they failed to maintain control of their beloved Catholic land under the onslaught of the conspirators, who took over the government by striking first at the head, King Henry VIII. Ann Boleyn, an English Protestant trained in sorcery in a coven within a French court was sent to seduce Henry after being infected with syphilis herself. But the murder of Henry VIII, Catherine, the true queen, and her daughter Mary, were the secondary objectives of the enemy, their main objective being the banishment of Catholicism in England.

Let us read a bit of this sordid history.

It was in the tragic year 1533, ... that the famous divorce case reached its unholy climax. No one could have foreseen, when Henry VIII first met Anne Boleyn in 1522, that the fate of the world for centuries was at stake. ... By the year 1530 Wolsey was disgraced and dead, the more sinister Thomas Cromwell was high in the King's favor; and with the counsel of this subtle politician Henry was advancing rapidly toward his object.

... Two months later Micer Mai wrote from Rome that "Among those who have given their opinions here in favor of the King is a converted Jew, who now goes by the name of Marco Gabriello, to whom the King of England has offered as much money as he may ask, having instructed his Ambassadors to ... have him sent to England.

... Rabbi Jacob Rafael ... the good rabbi, weighing the disputed texts in Deuteronomy XXV and Leviticus XVIII, 16, concluded that Henry had been married to Catherine in the eyes of God, and could not annul the contract on the grounds alleged. This document (now in the British Museum) was not used in

the divorce proceedings.

... Clement must have known of course that the secret instigator of the parliamentary letter was Henry, or Henry's new master, and he must have concluded by then that what Henry wanted was not a fair trial, but his own way.

"This answer," wrote the historian of Parliament, "had very little effect on the minds of those who were before resolved to abrogate the Pope's supremacy in England and strip the Church of its overgrown possessions." There lay the real issue. Secret and powerful forces, which had not yet disclosed their hand, were using the King's weariness of his wife, his infatuation for Anne, and his hope of a male heir as instruments in pursuit of their own ends.

... Catherine wrote, in Spanish, a burning letter to the Pope, ... "One thing I should like Your Holiness to be aware of, namely, that my

## 80

plea is not against the King my Lord, but against *the inventors and abettors of this cause*.

... They were a small but extremely powerful minority, more international than English in their loyalties and associations. They had needed only an occasion and a pretext. They found both in Henry's infatuation.

Anne Boleyn, or Bullen, the spearhead of the attack, whose power lay in the mysterious sexual attraction she exerted over Henry, had been educated in the most corrupt and anti-Catholic court in southern Europe, that Navarrese court of Marguerite de' Angouleme, sister of Francis I, and author, like Donne, of works both pious and salacious.

... There is no doubt of the laxity of faith and morals in the semi-pagan atmosphere of Marguerite's court, or of the instant appeal that Luther's teaching made to persons already anxious to escape from the reproach of a divine standard with which the Catholic Church persisted in confronting human guilt. Marguerite herself became a Protestant. As early as 1521, her preacher, Gerard Roussel (probably, like most of his name in southern France, of Jewish origin) cast off his Dominican robes and hurried to Germany to see Luther.

Long before Englishmen dreamed of a separation of England from the Catholic Church, Anne Boleyn returned to England a secret heretic. Whether or not her father, Sir Thomas Boleyn, shared her views at that Time, he certainly did before the divorce. Chapuys wrote Charles V in 1531, "The general opinion is that the Lady and her father, who are more Lutherans than Luther himself, have been the principal instruments" in the release of a heretic priest ... sent to prison by Henry's officers for denying that the Pope was head of the Church!

... Against this woman of darkness, as most of the people of England regarded her, stood two powerful forces: the ancient landed nobility of England with all their traditions, and the rock of Saint Peter, defending the institution of Christian marriage and the whole body of Christ's teachings. To get rid of the second, by far the more formidable because a spiritual Power, she had to obtain power over the first; more than that, she had to set up a false spiritual authority to blind men to the real one until her object was secured. It is hardly likely that Anne was conscious of all this from the beginning, but such were the necessities of her case. Whether she sought them or they sought her, two instruments presented themselves, ready for her purposes. One was Thomas

Cromwell. The other was Cranmer.

Cromwell the moneylender was one of the first of the men of obscure origin who arose to form the new ruling class of England. His father, like the founder of the Cecil family, was a small public-house keeper. Thomas, one of those born usurers who could be so useful to great men, became a confidential agent of Wolsey. As his master fell, he betrayed him and formed contacts with the King, the Duke of Norfolk and the Boleyns which made him presently the master of the royal policy. Norfolk had him elected to the Parliament of 1529. Cromwell had also international contacts, had traveled about the continent, and may have fought in Italy.

With no religion but greed for gold and power, he was utterly unscrupulous, bold and insolent when he could afford to be, cringing if necessary. All his life, even after he had grown enormously rich on the loot of the monasteries, he added to his wealth by usury. He was the founder of that Cromwell family which for the next century would throw its powerful influence between the English people and the Catholic Faith they still loved. His nephew and the daughter of another usurer from Genoa became the grandparents of Oliver Cromwell. It was the function of Thomas Cromwell to lead Henry by gradual steps to a position from which he

## 81

could not retreat, to terrorize all political opposition by a reign of blood, and to set up a wall of material interest against both the Church and the ancient nobility he and his friends wished to supplant.

Cranmer had been Anne Boleyn's chaplain. He had studied at Cambridge, where Erasmus sowed the seed of the English revolt, and where there existed a clique in communication with anti-Catholic forces on the Continent. Cranmer's part was to set up a spurious religious authority to bewilder and to silence the more timid Catholics. The aged Archbishop of Canterbury, Wolsey's successor, would have nothing to do with granting a divorce. He was very feeble, however, and, as soon as he died, Cromwell and the Boleyns tricked Pope Clement, who still hoped for a reconciliation, into making Anne's chaplain Archbishop, while Cranmer signed a secret oath denying the Pope's authority.

In so Catholic a country as England such a conspiracy could hardly have succeeded, perhaps, had the King of France not played the despicable role that French policy so often adopted during critical phases of the Church's history. As Gairdner says, "The repeated threats of England to cast off allegiance to the See of Rome might no doubt have been regarded as empty vapor if no other European potentate had shown any disposition to keep Henry in countenance. But the support that he had all along received from the French king, and the evidence now given of a strong and cordial alliance between the two sovereigns, filled the Pope with the most serious apprehensions."

... On that April eleventh, 1533, Cranmer, vested in the authority the Pope had been cheated into bestowing upon him, wrote a humble letter to the King, urging that he be allowed to determine the cause of matrimony. The next day, Holy Saturday, Henry replied that it was impossible to be displeased by a suggestion prompted by zeal for justice and the quiet of the Kingdom; and though he recognized no superior on earth, he would gladly submit his cause to

"the principal minister of his spiritual jurisdiction." A month later Cranmer pronounced sentence.

... Not until March twenty-third, 1534 did the Pope pronounce Henry's marriage to Catherine valid, after eight years of delay and intrigue.

... The English Revolution, so skillfully and gradually promoted by a small minority acting through bribed or cowed politicians, was now entering upon its final and decisive phase. In spite of the *faits accomplis* of the divorce, the coronation, and the birth of Elizabeth, in spite of the open breach with Rome, the English Church still remained thoroughly Catholic in principle And in sympathy, and was loved and supported. With any Catholic leadership worthy of the name, there would have been a popular uprising that would have swept away Cromwell and the Boleyns and all their hirelings.

... In November, 1534, a bought and bullied parliament passed acts declaring Henry the head of the Church, and granting him the titles and first-fruits of the Pope. In January, 1535, a Council decree added his new title to his style. The legalistic revolution was now complete. But the whole revenue of the English Church, about \$35,000,000 a year in our money, was yet to change hands; and a reign of terror was thought necessary to prevent the inevitable reaction when men realized the full import of what had been done.

The popular conception of the Protestant Reformation, Phillip, is that masses of principled laity objected to abuses in the Church and broke away in order to purify and preserve the faith. Yet nothing could be further from the truth. The Protestant Revolt was in no way a grassroots movement; it was an *organized conspiracy* of the ancient

enemies of the Catholic Church, and the common catholic populace was a victim of intrigue and politics far beyond their surveillance or even ability to imagine. Indeed, the Inquisition was a necessary instrument for discovering conspiracies and protecting the people, their Church and Nation.

"It was too bad, said Philip on more than one occasion, that the French had no Inquisition. They were defenseless against the sort of subversive societies that bored into State councils, courts of law, parliaments, nobility and clergy. ... there came reports of the great conspiracy that had been discovered north of the Pyrenees. ... although the spearhead of the attack was aimed at the heart of France, the ultimate purpose was the destruction of the Christian order of Europe; and that the whole intrigue had been traced back to Cecil's government in England.

... No form of Protestantism ever made much headway as a religion in France. Calvinism did so rather as a political movement. It is worth noticing that like English Protestantism, it was neither indigenous nor democratic, but crept in surreptitiously as an international force and worked its way down through families of wealth, usually connected by ties of marriage and interest.

... It was now thoroughly understood in Spain, and had been suspected by thoughtful and informed Catholics everywhere, especially since the Tumult of Amboise in March, 1560, that the various enemies of the Catholic Church and the Catholic culture, whatever their differences of creed, dogma, race, nationality, were united in action by some extraordinary principle of cohesion and cooperation. It was almost as if there existed, in opposition to the Christian

hierarchical organization that had its world center in Rome, an actual organization throughout the world – at any rate throughout Europe – of an invisible kingdom of opposition. It had all the characteristics of some of those widespread secret societies of the Middle Ages, but on a larger scale.

Its secrecy was a source of tremendous strength. The Catholic forces, confused and divided, worked in the open, where they could be seen and attacked. The opposition could plan and strike unseen. It could carry on propaganda among masses innocent of its very existence. It was fraudulent, for it did not scruple to support contradictory religious sects and factions, both of which could not be true. It always followed the principle (which it falsely attributed to the Jesuits) that the end justifies the means. It employed and fostered corruption. It aped and travestied the Catholic Church in the name of freedom. It was very skilful in imputing to the Church all its own vices. The one principle of union in this hydra-headed body was an ancient and implacable hatred, a hatred of something it pronounced dead, but feared as one fears only things that are terribly vital. It was the *odium Christi* directed against His Church.

In every age the Church would say, with Christ, "Did not Moses give You the law: and yet none of you keepeth the law? Why seek you to kill Me?" and the opposition would echo the hypocritical answer, "Thou has a devil: who seeketh to kill thee?" and to continue quietly toward its purpose of death. This opposition developed in the course of centuries all the characteristics that Christians, from apostolic times, had expected to find in the kingdom of the Antichrist, even to the sending out of false Christs and false prophets to call the vicar of Christ the Antichrist.

A similar spirit in the modern world has been detected by the Catholic Church, identified after long and careful study with the various secret societies operating under the name of Freemasonry and its allied "fraternal" organizations, and solemnly and officially denounced as the real source of communism, atheism, and the general corruption and confusion of our times by no less than

nine Popes: and their decrees, condemning even the so-called "harmless" forms of masonry, are maintained in full force by Pope Pius XI. These decrees go back only to the first part of the eighteenth century.

The thing then discovered was too widespread, too well-entrenched, too complete in organization and purpose, to have come into existence overnight. Is it not time for historians to examine critically the boasting claims of Freemasons that their society goes back to the Middle Ages (if not further) and to ask, in the present connection, whether or not it formed a link of mysterious cooperation between enemies of the Catholic Church, who raised such formidable obstacles, all over the world, to King Philip II?

There hung about the court of Queen Elizabeth something very like the odor of Freemasonry.

Her relative, Sir Thomas Sackville, was a versatile individual, if rather shallow and parsimonious. About three years before his arrest in Rome he was co-author of *Gorbuduc*, first performed at Inner Temple on Twelfth Night, 1561. At the end of the same year, if we may believe an account accepted by

historians of the Sackville family and by Masonic writers generally, he was Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Masons, who were particularly numerous in the vicinity of York. Lodge meetings were held in various parts of England. The Grand Lodge met at York two days after Christmas, 1561.

... The obvious affinity between Freemasonry and Talmud Judaism has been noticed often enough. It is no longer debatable that, if the false leaders of the Jews did not originate the secret societies to cover their own anti-Christian activities and to influence credulous members of the Christian communities, they had a great deal to do with the business. The degrees and rituals of Freemasonry are shot through with Jewish symbolism: the candidate is going towards the East, towards Jerusalem, he is going to rebuild the Temple (destroyed in fulfillment of the prophecy of Christ), he is going to find a Lost Word (lost, it would seem, on the day when Christ, being lifted up, began to draw all things to Himself). Even in feminine Masonry, the fifth and last degree shows Judith cutting off the head of Holofernes, perhaps a symbol here for political and religious authority, or as the rituals prefer to say, tyranny and superstition.

The Grand Orient and Scottish Rite lodges, sources of so many modern revolutions, are more militant, more open and apparently more virulent than some of the others whom they are leading into a single world-organization by gradual steps. The higher degrees of some of the Continental lodges manifest the full expression of that ancient hatred of Christ which demanded His crucifixion, and which in later ages slew His priests and trampled on the Blessed Host. The rank and file of Masons know nothing of all this; but the initiates of Continental lodges could tell of a travesty of the Eucharist in one of the highest degrees, of a prayer to Lucifer, and of a Crucifix spat upon and trampled. Of the vile spirit here manifested the rank and file of Masons, especially of the York rite, and the rank and file of hardworking and credulous Jews are doubtless unaware.

It makes very little difference, however, which of the sons of Marshal Coligny signed the Cologne paper; or whether any of them did. They were all prominent in the movement in which both Protestants and Freemasons were engaged. The connection between the groups was so evident, even in the sixteenth century, that it may be inferred the "key men" belonged to both. The evidence that connects such bigoted Protestants as Cecil and Coligny, Russell, Sackville, and Gresham with Free-masonry is at best circumstantial. Yet circumstantial evidence is sometimes very strong in its cumulative effect, and in English lawmen are still hanged on the strength of it.

The descendants of most of these Protestant chiefs are found, within a generation or two, to be leaders in Masonry. For example, we cannot prove that William of Orange was a Freemason; but we find him in one of his marriages becoming son-in-law to Admiral Coligny, and his direct descendants are high officials of Freemasonry when concealment is no longer necessary. Before the end of a century, his great-grandson, William III, will be joining the Freemasons at a time when, with their connivance, he is being placed on the throne of England to replace the legitimate Catholic monarch, James II; and the expenses of the expedition will be paid by a Jewish banker of Amsterdam, Isaac

Suaso, who in return for his two million *gulden* will be made Baron de Gras, while other Jews (Sir Solomon de Medina and Alfonso Rodrigues especially) put up the money for the final conquest of Ireland, which John Harrington has already proposed farming out to the Jews! Two generations after the death of Philip II, the issue between the Catholic Church and Freemasonry was fairly well drawn. Within a hundred and fifty years there would be a sufficient accumulation of evidence to justify a Pope in pointing out the identity, nature and associations of the Masonic fraternity in all its forms, and to warn all Catholics to have nothing to do with it. It may have existed, and probably in some form did exist, before the Reformation itself. It may have been the secret political machine by which the Reformation was established, if not caused; or it may have grown up simultaneously with the Reformation, to separate later into a different form of heresy; or, finally, it may have developed out of the intrigues of the Reformation. All this is obscure, and may never be clarified. But it seems a reasonable hypothesis that something very much like modern Freemasonry, surely in spirit and probably to a great extent in form, possibly the identical organization, possibly a parent organization — it really makes little difference — existed in the lifetime of Philip II.

It is not at all certain that authorities, political and religious, were as unaware of the existence of sixteenth-century masonry as Senor de la Fuente believed. To be sure, they probably had no idea of its full extent and its capacity for evil intrigue. But even at the beginning of the century it must have struck some persons as odd that secret assemblies of workmen had begun taking in nobles and politicians who knew nothing of their craft. In 1522, this type of organization was prohibited in Switzerland, doubtless for good reasons. Francis I in 1539 revoked the privileges of similar groups in France, and about the same time had a few heretics burned who claimed to be Templars.

The Inquisition under Philip II, moreover, gave careful attention to a secret society which, if not then Masonic, was destined to keep its name, form and principles for two centuries, and then to have a remarkable influence upon the Grand Orient lodges of France. This was the society of the Alumbrados, or Illuminates, large numbers of whom were discovered in Estramadura through the interruption of a sermon against Protestantism by an hysterical woman. Many arrests were made, and the ramifications of the sect were discovered to be so extensive that the Holy Office reported the matter to Philip and the Supreme Council of the Inquisition, who set in motion a special investigation by D. Francisco de Soto, formerly Inquisitor in Cordoba, Sevilla and Toledo. The Alumbrados were so powerful that they attempted to poison him, as the secret Jews had slain Saint Peter Arbues and poisoned his associate almost a century before.

It was found that under a pretence of virtue and of reformed religion — they professed to be individually "illuminated" by the Holy Spirit — these wretches, like the early Priscililans and Albigenses, were engaged in a wholesale campaign of defamation against the clergy and the Church, of seduction

of rich widows, the compromising of young girls in nocturnal orgies, assassination, and all manner of subversive activity. As Professor Merriman

notes, the sect "often vented itself in hallucinations and in sexual aberrations, and was utterly abhorrent to the officials of the *Suprema*."

... Francis Bacon, nephew of William Cecil by marriage, and son of that Nicholas Bacon of low origin who assisted Cecil so zealously in destroying the Catholic worship of England, is the final witness for the existence of Freemasonry as an active secret organization, already "speculative," despite the twentieth-century encyclopedias, and connected in some mysterious way with the Spanish Jews. In him the old gnostic paganism of the Rosicrucians and the new ambitions of Freemasonry for the control and transformation of the world meet so strangely, with a dash here and there of Protestant idealism, that it has been much disputed whether he was a Rosicrucian, as De Quincey believed, or a Freemason, as many Masons have held. Nicolai, the friend of Lessing and editor of Moses Mendelssohn, went so far as to call him "the founder of modern Freemasonry."

In support of this latter view it is pointed out that the Freemasons of London have borrowed much of their phraseology from Bacon's work. Another student of secret societies and *Baconiana* believes that the Free-Masons and Rosicrucians were one and the same thing, with a joint aim of restoring paganism to the world – which is perhaps another way of saying, destroying the Church of Christ. It was the object of both, says this writer, "to shelter, preserve and hand on as lamps for posterity ... these heathen antiquities and pagan rites" and he quotes a Masonic student to the effect that "the Freemasons' society was founded for the purpose of concealing the rites of the ancient pagan religion, under the cover of operative masonry; and that although the religion is extinct, its ceremonials remain, and clearly develop the origin of the institution." And Bacon, in his opinion, "was active in promoting a general reformation throughout Europe, either in league with the Rosicrucians, or in favor of Masonry."

Be that as it may, this much is fact, and significant fact: the intelligent and mean-spirited Francis, Bacon, Cecil's nephew, sitting in a house stolen from the Catholic Church or paid for with church loot, wrote, about 1625, a treatise called *The New Atlantis*, which was not published until after his death. This opus, joyfully claimed by Freemasons as their own, tells of "the erection and institution of an Order or Society, which we call Salomon's House; the noblest foundation (as we think) that ever was upon the earth" ... It was named for King Solomon, and, says the speaker, "I find in ancient records this order or Society is sometimes called Salomon's House, and sometimes the College of the Six Days Works."

... The possible Jewish origin of the Craft, its direction by certain of the Sephardic Jews posing as Catholics in Spain, the hierarchical organization, with wheels within wheels, inner circles almost completely unknown directing the activities of the innocent novices, the elaborate spy system, the use of great wealth to gain power under cover of philanthropic and scientific purposes, the oath of secrecy concealing matters which it would not be healthy to reveal to the general public, the essentially anti-Christian tendency, the sop to unthinking people with Christian predilections, the far-flung system of intrigue and espionage, even a hint of world-domination – are these not all clearly foreshadowed under the skilful imagery of *The New Atlantis*?

The universal revolution (or "reformation") which so many modern Masons (more conspicuously, the Grand Orient lodges) have sought in Communism and in the league of Nations, was undoubtedly preached by Bacon and his followers in this manner; just as Paracelsus had fore-shadowed something of the sort, and as the Rosicrucians had preached it



under the sign of the Rose and the Cross, or the Rosy Cross, which had also been used by the Templars.

It is futile to discuss which of these organizations came first, or which grew out of or influenced the other. There they are, all similar in spirit and purpose, all disguising under allegories, often quasi-Christian, a determined hatred of the Church of Christ; and all bound up in some fashion, either as cause or result or both, with heretical movements. Perhaps it was not merely a coincidence that, after Martin Luther left his cell, he took for his seal the Rose and Cross. As one student of Masonry says, "Some deep religious significance, at the time well understood, must have recommended the device to the choice of the Tertius Elias."

...Historians have been curiously blind to all this. Prescott had a glimpse of what was going on, though his prejudices, and the lack of much information now available, prevented his seeing it fully or understanding what it meant. "The Protestants of that time," he wrote, "constituted a sort of federative republic, or rather a great secret association, extending through the different parts of Europe, but so closely linked together that a blow struck in one quarter instantly vibrated to every other."

"Father, it is not hard to imagine those who hate God or Christ, or those who may even worship the devil under certain idols or signs attacking Christendom in an organized, conspiratorial manner. But what amazes me and saddens me much more is how these truly malicious people, surely small in number, were able to enlist the support or at least the unknowing cooperation of so many Christians of high or low estate."

Do we not have the perfect example in Adam and Eve, Phillip? Beautiful, virtuous and innocent, they soon fell for a foolish temptation and plunged mankind into a terrible ordeal. Tradition tells us they were saved. But what a price they and their children had to pay for the vanity they chose freely to indulge. Even the elect can be deceived and can fall to their human passions and faults. Yes, it is sad, but it is *not* incredible. A Christian is a fallen creature who has willingly accepted the gift of a great *opportunity* to avail himself of God's help, His sanctifying grace, if only he persists in willing it to the end. God will not fail him. He will make up graciously for all his deficiencies.

"Is wishing and willing different, Father?"

We saw that the error of Protestantism was partly in thinking that, by just wishing for salvation, it could be obtained by the mere act of professed belief. Look at willing as a term that ranges in meaning from mere wishing, to wanting, to ardently desiring, to the point of doing. Only a Faith that moves one all the way from initial *wishing* to the work of *doing* is real, living, saving Faith. But it is by the power or grace of God that we finally do something difficult, while any sluggard can wish for it.

"That reminds me of the old German proverb you used to recite, Father. 'If wishes were horses, beggars would ride.' "

Ah ..... yes, I recall."

"But the Church, Christ in men, is perfect, Father. So shouldn't Christians be even better than Adam and Eve? Why did they fall into the error of the Frauds and their phony protest movement?"

Christians *should* have been better, just as Adam and Eve *should* have been better. The Christian has the grace, the divine help to be perfect, and the Saints of the Church perfected themselves with it; but the grace or *capability* to do something does not DO it.

Many a protestor has mocked those in the Church for not being as perfect angels. Every skeptic and coward knows how to bank on the discrepancy between what should be done and what is done. Christ united with man is perfect, but that union depends, in the case of the individual, on the free choice of the man in each moment. The Church and Christianity are never to be denigrated because of the sins of its members. Its whole mission, like Christ's, was to save *sinners*, not the self-justified hypocrites who can not do as well themselves as those they criticize and mock.

"Jesus said, "I came to save sinners, not the just," didn't He, Father?"

Yes, and mocking the Church in its suffering, failing members is like mocking Christ because He suffered the Passion and Crucifixion. So too we could castigate St. Peter for denying Christ, Whom he should have emulated by the sacrifice of his life. But which of those who raise themselves up to cast the stone would have done better in the same circumstances?

"But why is it difficult for the Christian to freely choose what he *knows* is good and true and beautiful, Father?"

It is not difficult for the unfettered soul, with unclouded reason and a body not subject to great passions to choose rightly and do rightly. But materialistic desires and human weakness are competing with reason for the assent of Queen Will, and it becomes very difficult to choose rightly to the point of *doing* good. Wishing to do good is easy. Heresies often cater to the spiritually lazy, who fear the fight against concupiscence that the *works* of faith require. They want heaven for a wish and a penny. And the devil is ready to falsely promise them that, if they will just *cease working for sanctity*.

All goods equally appear as goods to the will without her man, reason, to say, 'this good does not have priority in this case because it is out of the order of God, who is the greatest Good, whose order we must serve in preference to our own willful order. We have a natural appetite or will for all that is good, Phillip, but the order of subordination in goods is apparent only to reason, which listens to God as Adam did on his hill before the Fall and *apprehends* what the good is so that it can appear in a relative scale of values.

"Would you say then, Father, that virtue, is found in the marriage or union of reason and will, with will following the guide of reason?"

Yes, and such a union is likewise found in a good marriage between a man and a woman or between Christ and His Church or between the Church and the Church member.

"In other words, Father, there must always be subordination."

That is right, Phillip. Order itself demands it. And order is simply an expression of Intelligence and the reality it has created. And our reason is a witness to this order.

"But, Father, one more question that bothers me. The Church is divine, for Christ is the Head of this Mystical Body. Can the head be severed from the Body and there still be a Body? No. So how can a Christian sin seriously and still be a Christian?"

Phillip, that is like asking if a married woman is still married after she commits adultery with another man. Yes, of course, she is still married; that's why it's called adultery. If she does not stop, there may be a cause for her excommunication by the husband, a separation of bed and board, but she remains married because the whole concept of marriage is that it is not a temporary arrangement of sharing bed and board;

rather, it is a real spiritual union that no man can split asunder. So too the Christian is spiritually wedded to the Church, though he is not acting as a good spouse in his sin.

Just as the woman who continues her adultery is put out by her husband, so too it was with the Protestants, whether they broke with the Church openly or remained within it doing even more damage. They were excommunicated. They were not allowed normal communication with the Church, lest they further corrupt its children.

A free Will, Phillip, can, like the sinner or adulteress, reject the greater good. It can reject the rule of its husband reason; so too the soul can reject Christ, even though Christ is united to that soul in Baptism. That choice, that sin, in the case of the Christian, removes the life of God from the sinner, but it does not remove the *capacity* for that life nor the formal relationship that exists between Christ and the soul, as between the husband and the adulterous wife. Individual souls can and often do separate themselves from a living relationship with Christ through deadly sin; that is why it is called mortal sin.

"You say, then, that a formal relationship still exists after one actually sins against that relationship. But what then is left of this relationship? What is the form?"

I will try to explain. *Potentiality* is the created capacity or nature of a thing; but its *actuality* is effected by God in the Act of Creation at each moment. Life, therefore, comes from God. But our life as human beings is under the limited *control* of our own free will. Even the life of our body we are free to terminate; so too the life of God in our soul we can terminate.

The form that exists after serious sin for the Baptized person is the potential to still receive God's grace again. The form that exists after excommunication from the Church is the potential to repent and be received into full communion with the Church again. The form of the relationship of a marriage after its integrity has been violated by adultery is the potential for it to be once again actualized by the repentance and reform of the adulterer. This relationship between god and the sinner is like that between the Shepherd and His lost sheep. The outcome is in question, but the loving concern of the Shepherd is not lacking because the sheep has strayed, rather, it is greater.

"Thank you, Father, for your patience in explaining."

Now, the Church is not only a perfect Spiritual State, or Potentiality, but as long as there is one soul in the state of sanctifying grace, the Church exists in actuality. From the moment of Christ's conception, Mary has been this soul. She is the Mother of all Christians by adoption because she is Christ's mother. Satan desires to destroy Christians, the actualized potential of the Church on Earth by taking away their spiritual life in the Church. But he cannot destroy the Church itself, because Christ promised that He would be with it until the end of time. In eternity, this Church lives forever as the Church Triumphant. In Purgatory it is called the Church Suffering. Here it is the Church Militant.

We are wandering from our historical journey. Let us return. We see how the malefactors engineered rebellion and turmoil, but *how* did the Christian world become an instrument susceptible to this perfidy. It is the question you brought up some time ago, Phillip. Part of the answer is that the State committed adultery in its relationship with *its* Head, the Church, from whence it receives, in its obedience to the law of God, its secular authority to rule with relative autonomy. The enemy introduced the idea that the true Church and the State should be totally separate, the one in no way responsible to or

cooperating with the other. This divorce meant the end of civil order. It meant never-ending war between the State and the Church, the body and the soul of human civilization. Can we separate the potentiality of a thing from its actuality and have anything but a dead thing. The true State is potential to the Church that informs it, just as a body is potential to the soul that animates it. Just as the heretics killed their faith by separating it from the works of Faith, so they killed civilization by separating its spirit (the Church) from its body (the State).

Let us read a passage from Dr. Walsh that may help explain this:

"Kings ruled, not by divine right directly received from God, as they sometimes claimed, but by permission of God's viceroy, the Pope. The King's authority, to be sure, was unquestionable in his own sphere, but he must not invade the spiritual territory that belonged solely to the Church. The Church, on the other hand, could interfere in secular affairs if the salvation of souls, which was the most important consideration, demanded. Thus, if the conduct of a king

was tyrannical, or such as to destroy public morality and imperil the souls of his people, the pope could and sometimes did absolve them from their allegiance.

In theory, therefore, the Church could, under well-defined circumstances, interfere in political affairs, while the civil government could not lay a hand on the things of God. In practice the contrary was more often true. The Church (paradoxical in her history as in her profoundest doctrines) was almost constantly on the defensive, fighting for spiritual rights against princes and politicians who loudly accused churchmen of precisely what they themselves were doing.

From this intrusion of the political upon the religious field had come many, and indeed the worst, scandals of the Middle Ages. One of the chief aims of the reformers of Trent had been to restore the balance. Armed with the decrees of that Council, Pope Pius had set out, with all the force of his mighty spiritualized will, to free the Church from the contamination of political appointments, political bribery and thimblerrigging, compromises and hypocrisies. It was as insufferable to him as it is to most Christians nowadays that a secular politician, king or minister, should dare to appoint a bishop. Even he was unable to abolish that deeply rooted abuse.

He did, however, what he could. The result was what might have been expected: a struggle even with the King who considered himself (and who was) the leading champion of the Catholic Church. Philip II had been wholeheartedly for the Council of Trent and complete reform, when there was a question only of the general principle. But when that principle came to be applied, and the application cost him something, he was quick to protest.

Phillip, Jesus said, "Render unto Caesar what is Caesar's and to God what is God's." But the living principle of evil, Satan, advises the Caesars in the civil order and the Caesar in all of us to be worshipped as the highest principle of our being in the place of God. Worship your will, your indiscriminate appetite he says by placing it before reason, before Christ and His Church, before the God who made you and who set the law of your own nature within your conscience.

But all secular authority, even that of an emperor, is subject to God and His Law, which Law is interpreted and promulgated by His divinely inspired Church. Machiavelli introduced a flagrant deceit called "the separation of Church and State" where the secular state was imagined to have *arbitrary authority over secular affairs*; while the parallel liberating philosophy of the Renaissance suggested that the religious affairs of men were to be separate from the humanistic affairs of men. In either case it was like separating the

soul from the body, whereupon death always ensues. In the moral vacuum at the head of the secularized, decapitated State entered Satan and his agents, whether conspiratorial Frauds or their servants, the Freemasons, or their puppets, men with no better principles than their spokesman Machiavelli.

This fraudulent, immoral "separation" or divorce happening on all levels of the secular state and of the life of man was the real thrust of the Protestors' Revolt. Over time the mass of men became convinced they could separate their secular activities, loyalties, etc., from their spiritual Mother and guide, the Church. So began the corruption of society on a *Grand Scale*! And we marched, naked, into the modern secularized world, our spiritual armor abandoned by a Church not only separated from the State by legal walls, but itself imprisoned and tyrannized over by the state -- and sometimes annihilated by it ... almost. Men in power everywhere were following the basic error of Machiavelli and of the Protestant Revolution, -- namely, that in the affairs of men, the Church (God) has no authority. We are free, they thought. Liberty!! The great slogan was liberty from moral restraint. Liberty from rule by the restrictive Church. Men saw themselves as

liberated from the law even of their own nature. And to fill the void in their head or conscience they formed their own church, with self as the head. The Holy Spirit, they claimed, guided them in their various religious and moral beliefs. It was this spirit of rebellion from objective rule by God through His Revelation and His Instrument, the Church, that fueled, until the Day of the Lord, the progressive dis-integration of society, and even of men's psyches. In the Protestor's Revolt, Mankind, represented as it was, openly revolted against God, its Father and the Church, its Mother. Would this errant, arrogant teenage world return some day to sanity? Yes. But only after enduring a terrible Chastisement.

"Father, in speaking of excessive liberty, is there not also a natural liberty or freedom in living according to God's law and the nature He gave us?"

Excellent point, my Son! And the opposite of that *true liberty* really should be called a license for leading a man or a society into discarding the rule of God. Then, the devil is free to enter in, and nature, abhorring a lack of order, seems to invite him in. Understanding this, Satan's forces destroyed order by inciting rebellion against any and all *existing* order – for the purpose of restructuring that order with their principles of disorder! They truly did want to "reform" the Church ... into the synagogue of Satan.

The last defense of the Church, when all else failed, Phillip, was excommunication. Flush the disease out; purify the ecclesiastical body by the real reform of the Council of Trent, which rid the Church of the control and abuses secular powers had imposed on it and also defined true dogma, anathematizing all who dissented from the teaching of Christ. This was also the purpose of the Inquisition, to identify fraudulent churchmen and civil anarchists and expel them from among the Faithful and from society altogether, if necessary.

It is important to remember is that these conspirators were not just destroying religious order, but civil order too. The Protestant Revolt was a political attack on the order of Christian civilization. Its "front" was to pose as a sincere religious dispute or heretical movement.

Error is like a germ, a cancer. It is self-perpetuating, as long as it has a host to feed on. In a mere two hundred years after their Protestors' Revolt, the enemy engineered the French Revolution. This bloodbath saw the Church attacked and the

government taken over by agents of the Frauds. This unparalleled atrocity was a pattern thereafter copied in the revolutions of Communism – the "Red Dragon" of the Apocalypse. It is important, Phillip, not to see all the individuals in history who have subscribed to Protestant traditions, churches or errors in a different light than we do any other person, including ourselves, who errs, probably in some degree of ignorance, perhaps even in invincible ignorance. What we are noting and abhorring is the evil *nature* of their error, not only because it is a common and fundamental error but because of its gigantic historical consequences. No human respect would stop us from exposing sin and error for the purpose of instruction; for this is one of the spiritual works of mercy, to instruct the ignorant; and another is to admonish the sinner.

"Surely there was good too in the Modern Age, Father?" Yes, during the adolescence and young adulthood of Christian Civilization, from 1500 AD to 2000 AD the good works of mankind also matured. The Church continued to perfect her children, and godly men strove mightily to assume responsible control of society, as they do in every age. If it had not been so, the currents of evil would have destroyed society overnight. The acquisition of knowledge in every science, from philosophy to microbiology, grew tremendously, despite the attempts by the enemy to use for their purposes or to poison with their errors these wells of knowledge which were slaking the God-given thirst of man's creative intellect. But every good deed or accomplishment is also a potential stumbling block, a likely excuse for conceit. And so the battle went on through the ages.

We must rest, Phillip. I am exhausted. Speaking of the Harlot always sickens me. But one more thing about this hideous Protestant Revolution – it could not have happened without the emergence of usury, the lending of money at exorbitant interest, which had been banned in earlier ages by the Church. And the price of bread had been stable for 200 years before usury was allowed on a large scale on the wave of the

Protestant's political gains. Lending at interest for a Catholic in medieval times meant automatic excommunication. Therefore, only Jews could lend at interest, and this helped them assume a monopoly on this evil business.

Scripture says, "the borrower is servant to the lender." Governments, big business and soon, everyone is at the mercy and under the subtle control of the usurer. No economy can be stable on the quicksand of usurious credit and debt. Many are then willing to do the bidding of the lenders against their better judgement, in the service of their own material interests.

"Is it wrong to lend money, Father?"

No, and it is not wrong to make a living for providing that service, but it is wrong to make money off of money by taking interest upon an unproductive loan, a loan that is not the source of profit. So, it is right to make money by risking money in a profitable investment venture, but the usurer takes no such risk with the borrower. We will speak more of this later.

[{TABLE OF CONTENTS}](#)

[{PREFACE}](#)

[{CHAPTER I}](#) [{CHAPTER II}](#) [{CHAPTER III}](#) [{CHAPTER IV}](#) [{CHAPTER V}](#) [{CHAPTER VI}](#)

[{CHAPTER VII}](#) [{CHAPTER VIII}](#) [{CHAPTER IX}](#) [{CHAPTER X}](#) [{CHAPTER XI}](#)

[{Bibliography}](#)

[{Bookstore}](#) [{Order Form}](#) [{Instructions}](#) [{Notice of Permissions}](#) [{Download}](#)

[{Links}](#)

[{FRAMES VERSION}](#)

(Requires a frames-enabled browser)

*Website contents © 1999 - 2000, [Web Designs by Doc](#). Literary content ©1999 - 2000, Dave Pedry. All rights reserved.*

## CHAPTER V

## FREEWAY TO THE TYRANNY OF ANTI-CHRIST

After the 16<sup>th</sup> century Protestors' Revolt, Phillip, we will follow the progressive development of the evil through the 17<sup>th</sup> to the 19<sup>th</sup> century to the point where atheism is conceived as a religion in itself.

As I see it, Phillip, Protestantism was an attack upon the whole Faith under the pretense of objections to some articles of Faith or some sins and ecclesiastical abuses among its adherents. But with the coming of the spirit of antichrist in the 20<sup>th</sup> Century, the mask of religious quibbling is thrown off and the naked spirit of hatred for God Himself emerges.

Hillaire Belloc described the modern attack of antichrist forces.

"We approach the greatest moment of all.

The Faith is now in the presence not of a particular heresy as in the past -- the Arian, the Manichean, the Albigensian, the Mohammedan -- nor is it in the presence of a sort of generalized heresy as it was when it had to meet the Protestant revolution from three to four hundred years ago. The enemy which the Faith now has to meet, and which may be called "The Modern Attack," is a wholesale assault upon the fundamentals of the Faith -- upon the Very existence of the Faith. And the enemy now advancing against us is increasingly conscious of the fact that there can be no question of neutrality. The forces now opposed to the Faith design to *destroy*. The battle is hence-forward engaged upon a definite line of cleavage, involving the survival or destruction of the Catholic Church. And *all* -- not a portion -- of its philosophy.

We know, of course, that the Catholic Church cannot be destroyed. But what we do not know is the extent of the area over which it will survive; its power of revival or the power of the enemy to push it further and further back on to its last defenses until it may seem as though Anti-Christ had come and the final issue was about to be decided. Of such moment is the struggle immediately before the world.

To many who had no sympathy with Catholicism, who inherit the old Protestant animosity to the Church (although doctrinal Protestantism is now dead) and who think that any attack on the Church must somehow or other be a good thing, the struggle already appears as a coming or present attack on what they call "Christianity."

You will find people saying on every side that the Bolshevik movement (for instance) is "definitely anti-Christian" -- "opposed to every form of Christianity" and must be "resisted by all Christians irrespective of the particular Church to which each may belong," and so on.

Speech and writing of this kind are futile because they mean nothing definite. There is no such thing as a religion called "Christianity" -- there never has been such a religion.

There is and always has been the Church, and various heresies proceeding from a rejection of some of the Church's doctrines by men who still desire to retain the rest of her teaching and morals. But there never has been and never can be or will be a general Christian religion professed by men who all accept some central important doctrines, while agreeing to differ about others. ...

There is no essential doctrine such that if we can agree upon it we can agree to differ about the rest: as for instance, to accept immortality but deny the Trinity. A man will call himself a Christian though he denies the

unity of the Christian Church; he will call himself a Christian though he denies the presence of Jesus Christ in the Blessed Sacrament; he will cheerfully call himself a Christian though he denies the Incarnation.

... The modern attack will not tolerate us. It will attempt to destroy us. Nor can *we* tolerate *it*. We must attempt to destroy it as being the fully equipped and ardent enemy of the Truth by which men live. The duel is to the death.

Men sometimes call the modern attack "a return to Paganism." That definition is true if we mean by Paganism a denial of Catholic truth: if we mean by Paganism a denial of the Incarnation, of human immortality, of the unity and personality of God, of man's direct responsibility to God, and all that body of thought, feeling, doctrine and culture which is summed up in the word "Catholic," then, and in that sense, the modern attack *is* a return to Paganism."

Godliness builds an intelligent moral order in society. Satan desires to tear down this order and its authoritative governing structures because they support godliness in disciplining fallible human nature by setting up as standards of conduct the guides of right reason, thus opposing the chaos of rule by the standards of passion, expediency, popular opinion, etc. In order to tempt godly society to tear down its own righteous order, Satan's agents, who were incapable of doing so great a feat themselves, brewed a popular philosophy of revolution that would justify and even impel men to tear down their own house. This evil philosophy's slogans challenged the basic principles supporting the rational and godly order of society, which God had helped Christian people establish through much sacrifice and labor.

The revolutionary philosophy of hell designed to appeal to the rebellious nature of man's pride in himself and aversion to God's rule revolved around words like "liberty" and "equality." It asserted that everyone is "destined," by the god-hunger in them to be "free from the rule of others" and "equal to all others", therefore, there can be no ruling government, other than the temporary "government" of Anarchy, which destroys "the rule of others" with the rule of others, the elite revolutionary zealots who are licensed by ideology to destroy in the name of "Freedom." These unqualified "democratic" principles of liberty and equality lead to chaos, moral and civil disintegration, even the disintegration of the mind. But this end result, total destruction (Hell), is never put forward by the enemy, only utopian promises of a better world, advanced civilization, the solution of age-old problems, nirvana, peace, etc. They propose a transfer of power from the few to the many. They propose what will accomplish the destruction of the existing order, whether that be a monarchy, oligarchy, dictatorship, republic, or democracy. When that order is destroyed, they are soon proposing the destruction of that order which took its place, until the principle of chaos or disorder is enshrined in the death of all order, the negation of all evidence of intelligent life, that is, the reign of Satan, which is death and Hell.

"Let me see if I understand what you are saying, Father. The design of those who executed the Protestant Revolution was to destroy society and ..."

That was Satan's design. And he was the spirit who guided them. But he who is guided by a spirit knows not where the spirit will go. Even the agents of Satan are deceived by him,



Phillip. He must use their errors concerning apparent goods and the weaknesses of their human nature to motivate them: their vanity, greed, lust for pleasure, power and honors. The closer Satan's agents are to being fully possessed by him, the

more naked he can present to them his real plan for the world, which is eternal death. But he must always style their goals as apparently good in some guise.

And since Satan's ongoing, step by step Revolution must be gradual, in order to refrain from unduly arousing either the strong opposition of sane and courageous men or the common sense and survival instincts of the average man, the enemy would have to engineer, by innuendo, propaganda, armed rebellion, etc., the collapse of one power structure at a time.

The French Revolution celebrated the destruction of monarchy, in order to replace it with an oligarchy of powerful men who were replaced by a popular dictator, who was ruled by their secret government. Many years later, after having acquired near complete control of the medias of information and education, constitutional republics or so-called "democracies" could be controlled by the enemy effectively. Successively, rule *appears* to go into the hands of common, uneducated or miseducated men, but the reality is that they must actually depend on someone to tell them what their choices are, and these are the real, yet hidden, rulers. These uneducated or, better yet, poorly educated masses are more or less easily led by the manipulators of popular opinion. And who would dare revolt against the apparent *majority* of their fellow men. The most absolute dictatorship is the dictatorship of the proletariat, the common working man. Speak for him or pretend to speak for all such men, and you will have an insurmountable mandate.

When universal education became mandatory by law in the 20<sup>th</sup> century and fell, of course, into the hands of the State, the full education of men in the ungodly and anti-traditional principles could begin. Then Christian society could be thoroughly denigrated and misshapen with all manner of error, until the very idea of God's rule over man could be erased from the minds of a whole generation.

But I am getting ahead of my immediate objective, which is to bring us into the 19<sup>th</sup> century atheism that spawned Communism.

"Father, why doesn't God rule man directly as He did through Moses and the Judges?"

Just as God did not *ordain* that Israel elect a king of their own in place of the Judges by which God ruled them more directly, Phillip, so too God did not ordain but *permitted* this progressive leveling of the political and social hierarchy of the world from the 16<sup>th</sup> to the 19<sup>th</sup> century. And He did it for a reason. Monarchy is potentially a more efficient form of government, but a republic throws more responsibility upon the common man to control his civic destiny. Only the power of the mass of common men could stop tyranny – simply by overcoming their own susceptibility to ignorance and human respect.

The power of the common man had to be developed in order to overpower the enemy of civil order. Man would be forced to take more responsibility for the affairs of state and to educate himself, in order to resist the tyranny of those who would secretly rule the ignorant, the intemperate, the misled, and an increasingly sinful majority. In other words, society would have to grow up and fully accept the responsibility of its destiny as the battle for its soul more clearly appeared as the issue of conflict in the world.

To survive men would have to more personally, intellectually and emotionally weld themselves into the unity of Christ and His Church, His Mystical Body. Yes, in order for the elect to gain this grace, God would allow mankind to freely choose the rules

it lived by, and he would allow it to bear as well the good or evil consequences of those choices; so that, inasmuch as they would not confide in God and His Church as their teacher, guide and saviour, creating a society based on that, they would learn the same lessons by way of bitter experience.

Divine Providence is always in control, Phillip, but he uses the means that are necessary considering the character and plight of His subjects at a given time in history. He regards their very errors and foolishness in forming His plan to save them. God, thus, uses the evils He permits to bring about good. Without this perspective of the last 500 years it is difficult to see God's providence among men, since so many evils have come upon the society of men.

"Why must the war between good and evil go on, Father, if good is destined for victory?"

Suffering the effects of evil in this battle is absolutely necessary for the discipline of weakened human nature, Son, which, if not scourged, will sink into sloth and be ruled by the lower world and die in the eternal misery of sin's alienation from God.

Now let us look at a history of modern philosophy to see how the most basic thinking of mankind, which is the subject of philosophy, was slowly but radically disrupted and rendered absurd. The evil control achieved over mankind could not have taken place without the perversion of basic ideas upon which our whole viewpoint depends. In the perversion of the philosophical sciences of ontology (the study of being) and epistemology (the study of knowledge) we see the "inspiration" of Satan.

The corruption of Philosophy, "Queen of Sciences", by the enemy began with the *nominalism* of certain medieval philosophers, like William of Occam, arguing against the moderate realism taught by the Church, especially through St. Thomas Aquinas, who built upon the metaphysics of Aristotle.

The dictionary tells us that "*Realism is a doctrine that universals exist outside the mind and that an abstract term names an independent and unitary reality.*" What could be more natural? But nominalism is "*a theory that there are no universal essences in reality and that*

*the mind can frame no single concept or image corresponding to any universal or general term."*

If our mind cannot truly grasp the essential nature of real things, namely universals, we cannot truly know anything real. The Church teaches that we can truly know reality, and, by that fact, we are made to be responsible for our actions in *correspondence with the truth*, which is defined as *that which is (reality) in the understanding*."

"Let me see if I can repeat, Father. You say the true philosophy of being and knowledge is that the terms of our knowledge, called universals, actually correspond to reality. That's pretty obviously true, Father."

You would think so.

"Let me catch up to you, Father. Nominalism claims that our knowledge is just made up of arbitrary terms chosen to represent what we think, and those terms don't represent a real understanding of reality?"

That's right. The Scholastics, like St. Thomas, compared the mind's conception of reality to the molding of hot wax to the signature of a ring pressed into it. The ring is reality, the wax our understanding of it. There is a true and perfect representation of reality in our mind, a mind which God made *conformable to reality*.

"But our mind is not the reality it apprehends, just as the wax is not the ring whose image it conforms to."

Right, Phillip.

"So what does nominalism say the relationship of knowledge and reality is, Father?"

It does not answer that problem, Phillip. You will see as we go on – you saw it perhaps with the theory of Evolution – error never gives answers, it just destroys the truth, leaving the mind free to get lost. Now listen.

Much later Kant picked up the inference of nominalism and fashioned the theory of idealism, which supposes ... *"that "the essential nature of reality lies in our consciousness, in the mind or reason,"* not in the real world outside the mind! Now it's not only that we cannot know reality, but that it isn't even out there; "it" is just subjective ideas in our mind. Consider the implications here: If man's mind is now empowered with the creation of the only reality "knowable," man is one step closer to appearing as God-like. He is not only liberated from God by this notion but also from the reality God made, and principally, the reality of his own created nature as man. This leads to complete amorality and immorality. And, Kant has led us to agnosticism, because we can't know God, only our own arbitrary mental constructs. But this describes the insane mind.

Kant built his idealism on the back of Descarte's much earlier Rationalism, which is defined as *"the reliance on reason as the basis for establishment of religious truth."* Although it is true, Phillip, that reason *apprehends* God's creation and affirms His law and His

Revelation as reasonable, neither creation or Revelation *depend on* human reason for their existence. Therefore, human reason does not *establish* religious truth. Such an error makes Reason the source of divine realities. In such an absurdity God depends on man's reason instead of Reason being wholly dependent on God. Man suddenly becomes Godlike again, an infallible judge and determiner of reality, even *supernatural reality*. No longer is man God's student at the desk of creation and divine Revelation.

"I think I see the twisting of the truth, Father. Instead of the wax of reason conforming to the ring of religious reality, religious reality is determined by the wax."

Yes. Wax by nature is conformable to other things because of its softness. With reason this might translate into humility or reasonableness. And do you see the same inverted order of mind and reality in Kants' idealism, where he supposes that "the essential nature of reality exists in and of the consciousness, instead of our being conscious of reality?"

"Easily, I see this."

The progression of error from nominalism through rationalism to idealism prepares the stage for atheistic Humanism, Phillip. For if reality is either a figment of the human mind or only something relevant to that mind, then the individual Mind *is* what we had formerly called God, and if man is God, there is no God, because the fact is, man *is not* God. He doesn't have the attributes or powers that the commonly accepted definition of God contains. So the concept of God is dead, is without meaning, since there is no real reference for it.

"It sounds like they wanted to dispense with the very notion of God as it had always been defined, Father."

Right. If God is a part of reality and reality is merely a subject of the human mind, "God" is just a more or less useful term in that mind.

For the atheist, Phillip, "reality" becomes either an illusion of the mind or a physical material, something in complete potentiality to temporal mechanical forces, such as time, place, weight, speed, energy. The latter is atheistic materialism, the former is what I would call atheistic idealism. In eastern atheism, which advertises itself as religion, metaphysical reality is the transcendental, universal Mind and physical reality is only an illusion. But in western materialism, it is the reverse. Matter is real and mind is arbitrarily abstract.

I suspect the original, *non-corrupted* ancient philosophies or teachings of Eastern peoples were based on common practical wisdom collected from oral tradition of Patriarchs of the Semetic race. However, certain pagan rituals and other errors become attached to these collections of traditional wisdom. For example, Hinduism is the belief, according to the dictionary, that "*an individual's duty is fulfilled by custom or law,*" based on the cosmic and individual principles of nature. Buddhism adds to this that '*suffering is due to the craving of selfish individuality producing the torments of greedy desire.*' Here is a description of Buddhism:

Until a man has overcome every sort of personal craving his life is trouble and his end sorrow. There are three principal forms the craving of life takes, and all are evil. The first is the desire to gratify the senses, sensuousness. The second is the desire for personal immortality. The third is the desire for prosperity, worldliness. All these must be overcome – that is to say, a man must no longer be living for himself – before life can become serene. But when they are indeed overcome and no longer rule a man's life, when the first-personal pronoun has vanished from his private thoughts, then he has reached the higher wisdom, Nirvana, serenity of soul. For Nirvana does not mean, as many people wrongly believe, extinction, but the extinction of the futile personal aims that necessarily make life base or pitiful or dreadful." (Outlines of History by H. G. Wells, p. 395)

Confucius taught the traditional decorum and restraint of a devoted public man, based on the moral philosophy of former generations.

In cultures that have not fully received the teaching of Divine Revelation, various deities spring up from the corrupted versions of the oral tradition that Adam began. This is largely due to ignorance, but the atheistic movement of the 19<sup>th</sup> and 20<sup>th</sup> centuries used the corruptions of eastern religions as *carriers* of their doctrine of human deification. This developed into the New Age Movement. This was done to achieve their aim of a one-world religion based on the basic similarities found in all religions. Reincarnation, for example, might well be an error added to the original oriental religions by the agents of Satan.

"It sounds like every civilization since Adam has been at war with Satan's liars to preserve the integrity of thought, custom, law and religion that they were left with by oral tradition from Adam."

Yes, Phillip, and some of these peoples are only now, in our time, being thoroughly evangelized by the Church of Christ. How much truth they retained from Adam depended on the purity of mind and soul their ancestors maintained.

The 18<sup>th</sup> Century Enlightenment *popularized* the arguments that would lead to dispensing with God, Phillip. The mass distribution of works by cynical utopians like Voltaire and Rousseau helped accomplish this. The French Revolution was the political

result of the Enlightenment – two deliberately coordinated events. And the next step of the World Revolutionary Movement would be the Russian Revolution, and its philosophical accompaniment would be various atheists.

Voltaire specialized in defining the non-churched believer in God who has graduated from organized religion by rejecting the sects of all religions.

"That seems to be a logical result of Protestantism, Father."

Yes. And how often I heard this miserable lie from Fundamentalists, Phillip, who would have cringed at the deism of Voltaire. Voltaire is a mouthpiece for the same enemy, the

sons of Satan, that earlier instigated the apparent shattering of Christianity into sects during the Protestant Revolt, which suggested that Christianity was confused, divided and ripe for replacement by more democratic, liberated churches representing the diversity of opinions that Rationalism demanded. So, the *next* reasonable step is Voltaire's advice to altogether abandon organized religion since its endless division by squabbling opinion renders organization meaningless.

The enemy had created one evil in order to "solve it" with a even greater one. This is Standard Operating Procedure (SOP) for the enemy, Phillip.

"But, Father, I do not like to hear the phrase "shattered Christianity". If we agree with Hillaire Belloc that there is no religion called Christianity, then the *one* Catholic Christian Church can't be shattered."

You are absolutely right, Son. Well done. I think you may be a chip off the old block all right.

"What?"

Never mind. Note, as we read Voltaire that his "Deist" is a prototype for the ideal member of a collective One-World Religion which is superior to any one religion in representing man's opinions about the mere concept of "God" and the various folklore and tradition surrounding that comforting myth.

When the Spirit of God is taken out of human thinking, that thinking disintegrates progressively like any material substance abandoned by the principle of life, the soul. The philosophical trend we are illustrating, Phillip, is nothing more or less than a description of the decay of rationality itself.

"That means the decay of the essence of man's nature, Father. Spiritual death!"

Yes, let me read from Voltaire's Philosophical Dictionary:

"The (Deist) is a man firmly persuaded of the existence of a Supreme Being, as good as He is powerful, who has formed all beings with extension, vegetating, sentient and reflecting, who perpetuates their species, who punishes crime without cruelty, and rewards virtuous actions with kindness ...

(The Deist) submits to this Providence, even though he perceives but a few effects and a few signs of this Providence, and, judging the things he does not see by the things which he does see, he considered that this Providence reaches all places and all centuries.

Reconciled with the rest of the universe by this principle, he does not embrace any of the sects, all of which contradict one another. His religion is really the oldest and most widespread, for the simple worship of God has come before all the systems of the world. He speaks a language that all peoples understand, while they do not understand one another. He has his brothers from Peking to Cayenne, and he numbers all wise men among his brethren."

Here is the basis for a one-world religion which at this point in history is simply a

logical extension of Protestantism. Atheism would take another 150 years to develop in the popular mind, but Voltaire sets the stage. Perhaps his concealed skepticism peeks through these apparently religious words: "If God did not exist, it would be necessary *to invent him.*"

Let us now read from another social engineer glorified in the history books. In The Social Contract Rousseau invented the slavery of the individual man to the State, which he called the "common will." He termed this slavery to the collective will, divorced from God's Will, as absolute personal freedom! In fact, it was absolute personal slavery and more, since a collective will, no longer guided by God, will drift along the currents of popular error and ignorance until it no longer understands the nature of the man that God created. Such a ruler slowly becomes *inhuman*. It is a naked, terrifying, satanic *tyranny*.

"The problem is to find a form of association that will defend and protect with the whole common force the person and property of each associate, and in which each, while still uniting himself with all, may still obey himself alone, and still remain as free as before." This is the basic problem for which the Social Contract gives the solution.

When properly understood these clauses may be reduced to one: the total alienation of each associate, in common with all his rights, to the whole community. This is because in the first place, since each gives himself absolutely, the conditions are the same for all. This being so, no one has any interest making them burdensome to others.

... whoever refuses to obey the general will shall be compelled to do so by the whole body. This means nothing less than that he will be forced to be free, for this is the condition which, in giving each citizen to the country, secures him against all personal dependence. In this lies the key to the working of the political machine..."

"That sounds like communism, Father."

See if the following from his Discourse on Inequality sounds like the abolition of private property.

"The first person, who having enclosed a piece of ground, be-thought himself of saying, "This is mine," and found people simple enough to believe him, was the real founder of civil society. From how many crimes, battles and murders, from how many horrors and misfortunes would not that man have saved mankind, who should have pulled up the stakes, or filled up the ditch, crying out to his fellows, "Beware of listening to this imposter; you are undone if you once forget that the fruits of the earth belong to us all, and that the earth itself belongs to nobody ..."

Such was, or may well have been, the origin of society and law, which bound new fetters on the poor, and gave new powers to the rich; which irretrievably destroyed natural liberty, eternally fixed the law of property and inequality, converted clever usurpation into unalterable right, and, for the advantage of a few ambitious individuals, subjected all mankind to perpetual labour, slavery and wretchedness ...

That men are actually wicked, a sad and continual experience of them proves beyond doubt; but, all the same, I think I have shown that man is naturally good. What then can have depraved him to such an extent, except that changes that have happened in his constitution, the advances he has made, and the knowledge he has acquired? We admire human society as much as we please; it will be none the less true

that it necessarily leads men to hate each other in proportion as their interests clash, and to do one another apparent services, while they are really doing every imaginable mischief."

Can you see in this, Phillip, that we have been told to abolish the present society and its laws based on the ancient false presumption of private property in favor of a commune where no one owns anything? Where is the lie in this?

"It seems true that mankind owns the earth, father."

What is the root word of "property," Phillip?

"I suppose "propriety."

Right, and he who holds proprietary rights over something holds the first rights to its good use. This is different from absolute ownership. That rests with God, Who gives stewardship to men in their respective localities. Now proprietary use of something allows a man to invest his time, labor and wealth into it with the assurance that he will not be robbed of the fruits of his labor, which he needs to survive. Now these criminal thinkers like Rousseau come along and license the mob of ignorant sheep to rob anyone of everything they own. That was the rationale for the French Revolution, the robbery of Church lands being the greatest prize of all, just as in England 150 years before.

We also see in this passage the absolute leveling of all authority. The common bond of all persons is that they have all committed themselves to be the slave of the whole. In that decision their "independence" and "freedom" lies. One forsakes all private property, all personal dignity and becomes a perfectly happy, mythical non-person. They are all equally slaves. A more docile herd of goats the devil could never wish for. Here is the prescribed justification for the destruction of all organized civilization. And who moved into the power vacuum this surrender of human rights created but the *instigators* of this insane fantasy – those who laughed heartily at anyone foolish enough to believe it! Mockery is the laughter of Satan.

The next quotation I will read from *The Social Contract* shows Rousseau's justification for the total destruction of previous organized religions and a definition of "civil religion," in other words, a religion of man's invention, a state Religion or better, the Religion *of* the State.

"The dogmas of civil religion ought to be few, simple, and exactly worded, without explanation or commentary. The existence of a mighty, intelligent and beneficent Divinity, possessed of foresight and providence, the life to come, the happiness of the just, the punishment of the wicked, the sanctity of the social contract and its laws. These are its positive dogmas. Its negative dogmas I confine to one, intolerance, which is part of the cults we have rejected."

In other words, leave God up in the sky for now, but make a civil religion that sanctifies the social contract and its laws. This denies Divine Providence, who wills to rule society by *His* chosen ministers, the just men in every age. Rousseau clamors for the intolerance of just men by demanding tolerance for the common herd containing both the just and the evil. He



says that proud man will rule himself, without the help of any "contrivance" of God, such as the Divine Institution of the Church or governments subservient to this Church, and therefore to *Him!*

This awful Deism shouted: "Take God back up in the sky! Get him out of here, Man! Rule yourself by the light of your own Reason and your own originally innocent

nature! You don't need a saving or ministering God! You are gods!" Such is the "noble savage" of Rousseau, a pure anarchist at heart.

Communism, Phillip, was the answer to the call of the French Revolution. It shouted to the whole world, "All you have-nots, rise up and destroy the 'haves' "! Of course few believed such insanity, but it was shouted as a pretext for the revolutions that every person would be dragged into.

"To obey that slogan would be to destroy society itself, Father. If the haves are destroyed who would have anything?"

Good point, Son. But what if the enemy made their rich Capitalists worthy of destruction by their depredations upon society. Because the Enemy could control the creation and destruction and value-fluctuation of money by 1848, and because they were in control of many of the great capitalistic ventures of the world, they could make the conditions, fortunes and future of the common working man very miserable. And they did, *so that* the Communist Manifesto could invite this disposed worker "class" to revolt. They jump-started their own revolution of the proletariat, even providing the union organizers that led the working men to challenge their intentionally monstrous "Capitalists." It's what I used to call one of their "hand-in-glove" operations, the trademark of *all* their works.

"They both create the problem and provide their chosen solution, as you have said, Father."

Yes, and *the only change intended* in the Protestant, French and Russian Revolutions was to pass the reins of power into the hands of the Revolutionary Party. Destroy the old order and keep it destroyed. Take over capital and the means of production, and retain it. But use as your excuse this sob story about the poor proletariat rising up to take what is theirs by the supposed *right* of all to have Equality. Sheer subterfuge! Manipulate the masses to destroy the good order they had; then enslave them in a totalitarian State, which, like Rousseau's "common will," has the right to control all men in the name of their (dictated) "common good." Naked power Play! Thinly disguised by pure hype. The common man never believed this bologna, but he was *told* the common man believed it, and those who took over his government pretended to do it on the basis of this mandate. *All* "classes" and *all* individuals suffered the consequences of Communist takeovers in the 20<sup>th</sup> Century, but the same hype about the people claiming their rights was maintained for public relations purposes.

"I can see where this propaganda would tend to stifle all protest, Father, even if no one

believed it."

Remember the old saying, Phillip, "Fear is *the* tool of the Devil."

Let us continue our little history of philosophy. Although not an atheist like his student Feuerbach, the "intellectual forerunner of Communism, atheism and religious modernism is a German professor named Hegel, a Rationalist. In noting that human reason *apprehends* universal absolutes and the attributes of god, he raised Reason to *being* these absolutes and attributes. What does this make man to be but a god himself. Let me read from the *Gods of Atheism* by Fr. Miceli.

"Now Hegel, the progenitor of a famous brood that split into two factions at war with each other, was far from being an atheist himself. Nevertheless, he set the stage for the assault upon god. It was generally agreed that God was the object of both philosophy and theology; of the former by the light of reason, of the latter by the light of revelation. But

## 102

Hegel questioned whether the philosophers or the theologians had succeeded in attaining the real God. He protested that the God of Christian experience was an inadequate, a premature, not-yet-developed God. Hegel set himself the task of completing the good news of the Gospels; he would go beyond Christianity by demonstrating that the only valid God was dialectically evolving Thought or Spirit Which gradually, inevitably attains and reveals Itself in conceptual clarity and complete self-consciousness through the entire scope of cosmic and human history. Hegel set himself the mission of rescuing the God of Christianity from the vagueness of imagery, the symbolism of myths, the simplistic charm of parables.

Moreover, Hegel had a bill of particulars against the Christian God. The trouble with the Christian God is that He is only experienced and remembered when the human conscience is sick or in trouble. But this Jewish-Christian god, Who is unapproachable and inscrutable in His aloof transcendence and unattainable by the imagination, mind or heart of men, arouses in man resentment against the only choice he is offered by this mysterious God – obedience or revolt. Frustrated by the demoralizing experience of failing futilely to satisfy his hunger for communion with the transcendent god, humbled by the degrading knowledge of his abject powerlessness, man resents the situation that equates God's glorification with his own depreciation. The transcendent God of the Old and New Testament thus succeeds in enslaving and alienating His worshippers. He sets before them the face-to-face eternal embrace of Himself as a goal that is actually beyond man's personal achievement. Yet He continually tortures man's metaphysical hunger as if this human aspiration for complete communion were actually attainable.

... All modern atheism will thus be seen to be rooted in Hegel's rejection of the God of the master-slave relationship, the God who begets an "unhappy conscience" in man, the God who reduces man from being a hero to being a "beautiful soul."

Feuerbach saw the inevitable outcome of Hegel's reduction of God from the God of Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and Jesus to the God of the philosophers and

scientists. He saw that the God of the fifth Gospel – the gospel of reason according to Hegel – was merely a man-made God, sprung full-blown from the Hegelian head. Taking his inspiration, however, from Hegel's work as a beginning which was going in the right direction, Feuerbach set himself to account psychologically for the illusion of all religion. He realized that Hegel had already demolished God without even suspecting his own great accomplishment. Feuerbach successfully drew the logical conclusions of Hegel's work in his book *The Essence of Christianity*. In an heroic manner he continued the process of all theology to anthropology.

... In his *Essence of Religion*, Feuerbach reached a similar conclusion in his field of endeavor, proclaiming that God is merely a myth which embodies the highest aspirations of the human consciousness. "Those who have no desires," he wrote, "have no Gods ... Gods are men's wishes in corporeal form."

... Feuerbach was acclaimed for having swept the heavens clean of the phantom of God, exorcised this sacred sorcerer from the consciousness of his age, broken forever this theological tyrant's fatalistic, master-slave domination of men, restored divinity to its rightful owner – liberated Humanity – and rendered the thousands of years' discussions about God henceforth pointless."

### 103

Thus atheistic humanism was born. Man was offered a new heart and mind, a new hope in *Himself*. Satan could obviously work great evils with men who accepted such conceits. He could more completely possess them. And so it has happened, the inhuman face of Satan has become more and more visible in the actions of men given into his service. Now we do not just have pretended reformers of the Christian Church and its society, we have those who totally discount Christianity and religion in order to achieve man's "New Consciousness," which is that "God" is a mere notion, that is, "God" is dead.

"Why did God allow the scourge of Communism, Father?"

When something or someone is attacked, it must defend itself, raising itself up from apathy or indolence to full strength. Communism attacked Christianity and mankind.

"So God allowed this evil so we would all wake up and fight, Father?"

I think it can be seen in that way. Let's read more of Fr. Miceli.

"It has been wisely perceived that communist humanism, as a commitment to godlessness, could only have taken root and flourished in the enfeebled body of a mankind that had once been vigorous but became venal in the profession and practice of Christianity. Indeed the record shows that Marx, with intense bitterness and total dedication, took up his world-shattering mission in resentful hatred of the heartless Christians around him whose pagan lives and policies he rejected. He started from the false premise that wicked Christians are the fruit of wicked Christianity. His conclusion that Christianity had been tried for eighteen hundred years and had failed only compounded his original error. Nevertheless, the decadent Christian nations, whose national and international lives were truly scandalous, gave Marx in 1847 the weapon he

needed to attach Christianity and organize a movement of his own to replace it. It seems quite accurate to state that communist humanism has deliberately formed itself into an anti-Christian humanism, that is to say, into an anti-religion religion, an anti-Church Church, an anti-Catholic catholicity, an anti-Messiah messianism. And communist humanism rightly sees in the Catholic Church – whose dogma, zeal and unity it imitates in transposed, secularized forms – the ultimate enemy it must destroy, if its ideology and Eden are to prevail in the end.

On her part, the Catholic Church, especially in her leadership, the Popes, has certainly recognized clearly the nature and aims of this militant humanism, even if many of her intellectuals have not. For more than one hundred years Popes have been analyzing and rejecting communism from the viewpoint of philosophy and Faith, warning not merely their own faithful but the whole world of the falsity of doctrine and the incredibly inhuman practices of this pseudo-humanist. As far back as December 28, 1878, while Marx was still alive, Leo XIII stigmatized communism as "a deadly pestilence which attacks the essentials of society and would annihilate it."

This atheism of Feuerbach's became the basis for the messianic Communism of Marx. But it was also the basis of a heresy that resembles a religious communism called Modernism, religious humanism or liberation theology. The basis of this new religion is the notion that man does not exist as man except in community and that this fully realized Community is God. Fr. Miceli uncovers the seeds of this in Feuerbach's philosophy.

"Now two theses control the development of Feuerbach's atheistic humanism. The first, a negative thesis, develops Hegel's idea of alienation.

## 104

However, Feuerbach does not apply this concept as Hegel had done, to dialectically evolving Mind, but to man – that flesh and blood creature who exists only in community, whose being is found only in the unity of man with man – the unity of I and thou. Now this man with man – the unity of I and Thou – this being of man in community – this is God.

... In his desire to stabilize the noble qualities he finds in his nature, man hypostasizes, idolizes, absolutizes them outside his own changeable being into an Absolute Other who is unchangeable. This Other is endowed with wisdom, will, justice, love, all the noble feelings and virtues which man himself experiences from time to time, both in himself and in his fellowmen. Thus the absolutized attributes appear to man as if they were the exclusive ornaments of another, an infinitely more perfect being than himself. Spontaneously, religiously, man projects and objectifies his own goodness and greatness in the fantastic being he calls God. God is thus the product of pure human imagination.

... In this way man simultaneously dispossesses himself and enriches his God; in affirming God he denies himself; the poorer he becomes, the richer his God becomes; nothing really exists in God except what belongs and actually really still is in man's heart."

"And Rousseau said men had to give up all their rights to the Community, which was "sacred". So the State and God are one, Man in Community. For some reason all that really scares me, Father."

It should, Son. The political Communist and the ecclesiastical communist believed that traditional religion, as epitomized in the Catholic Church, is positively debilitating to mankind, thwarting his progress, and they believed that man himself is God. Feuerbach wrote:

"It is the essence of man that is the supreme being ... If the divinity of nature is the basis of all religions, including Christianity, the divinity of man is its final aim ... The turning point in history will be the moment when man becomes aware that the only god of man is man himself." (pgs. 31-33)

Phillip, Christianity, according to these community-crazed deifiers of humanity, must be dismantled and replaced with a compulsive, universal "religion" of man, so that man can reach his full potential, that is, so he can develop his ego to the point of thinking himself a god, with the prerogatives and attributes of God, including decisions over the life and death of himself and his fellowman and over the very course of mankind's future. Those elite men who "understood" this great mission would naturally have to take control of the destiny of the world by infiltrating the governments of the Church and the State, and slowly turn the rudder 180 degrees without alarming the passengers. With preternatural skill, energy, fortune, and speed these possessed Masonic "Masters" came to the brink of accomplishing this by the year 2000 AD. Much of mankind by then had come to doubt the objective reality of God. Whether they gave God "lip service" or not, their active allegiance was to Mankind.

Feuerbach put it this way: "...let it be remembered that atheism ... is the secret of religion itself; that religion itself, not indeed on the surface, but fundamentally, not in intention or according to its own supposition, but in its heart, in its essence, believes in nothing else than the truth and divinity of human nature."

In perfecting atheism, one is perfected in diabolical possession, just as in perfecting the worship of God, one becomes more perfectly possessed of His Holy Spirit.

The conspiratorial Frauds of the Centuries found a bridge between Christianity and Antichristianity in people like Feuerbach, Nietzsche, Marx, Comte, Camus, Sartre, Heidegger, Bonhoeffer, Bullmann, Tillich, Cox, and others. Though the last four of these held positions as Christian ministers, they so changed the nature of God, His Revelation and His Sacraments so as to create a non-god. Yes, these modernists, these reinterpreters were atheists, cutting into the hearts of believing Christians with the scalpel of humanistic pride.

"So how did the atheists implement their ideas in society, Father?"

The Communist Revolution in 1917 and the subsequent buildup of Russia as an atheistic slave-state importing revolution to every corner of the globe was the work of the

conspirators' secret governments in the USA, Britain, Germany and elsewhere. All was financed by Zionist bankers milking U.S. taxpayers, through unconstitutional legislation and traitorous agents in our government. Yes, we financed Communist Russia and all its revolutions throughout the world from the very beginning.

"That is incredible, Father!"

Never before had one nation been so possessed by the agents of Satan as Russia.

"How and why did it happen in Russia, Father? Russia was almost wholly Catholic!"

And this made it a prime target of the Revolutionists. But also, the last five Czars were assassinated by them because they had thwarted the work of the Internationalist conspirators in various parts of the world and needed to be stopped. Russia was also ready, after many years of negotiations, to reconcile the Russian Orthodox Church with the Roman Catholic Church. This truly alarmed the Satanists at the head and heart of the Internationalist Communist Conspiracy. Czar Nicholas II had the final document in hand when they struck. The timing was not coincidental. They brutally murdered the Czar and his beautiful, courageous Catholic family, as they took possession of the government.

The power of this Revolution came from the so-called Jews, the ancient Kazars who traced their ancestry back to Gog and Magog, whose ancestral land had been southern Russia. And this is where many of these people had been sent after being evicted from all Europe because of their usury and unpatriotic, anti-national character and covert dealings. A nation within nations, they were considered a blight; so, back to their ancestral homeland they were sent. There they were confined by the Czars until Catherine the Great released them. She was an agent of the Zionists, who corresponded with Voltaire and ruled by advanced western ideals. Catherine, a Prussian princess and at least secretly a Protestant, was sent in to marry and murder the Czar. She was another Ann Boleyn. She orchestrated the ruin of Russia, while giving the moral example of a great harlot. The Jews soon became educated and took control of all the professional classes of society. After they murdered five Czars, Russia was theirs to rule, although they always sought to hide their evil influence by secrecy, using "gentile" puppets, like Lenin and Stalin.

Well publicized contributions in philanthropy, science or art hid the deeds of the elitist Zionist Yids of Europe. These were efficiently organized and led by an invisible, yet powerful hierarchy, both secular and ecclesiastical, for there is and always has been, Phillip, a church of Satan, with pope and bishops, celebrating black masses, where ritual murder or other hideous desecrations take place. In the 20<sup>th</sup> century these Zionists clamored for an "ancestral homeland" among the nations in Palestine.

"What is amazing to me, Father, is how far from the truth this claim was, and yet it succeeded. They weren't even Semetic people. And they knew that. So how could their ancestral homeland be Palestine, the home of the Israelites who were Semetic?"

By controlling the political machine, the policy-making positions of governments and by controlling the press they pulled off this gigantic farce. Government is supposed to have a mandate from the people to do what it does. If the press reports something without question as fact, does it not *appear* to have found consent with the people even when their suspicions or disagreement had never been fully heard and fairly represented.

"So the Zionists played the role of liberals or capitalists, while their brother Communists played the role of militant socialists trying to save the world from the greedy depredations of capitalists."

Very well put, Phillip. Together they practiced extortion on the Commonwealth of Nations. The conspirators, as you noted, provided for both sides of the conflict. This "dialectic" creates and fuels two opposing forces. In mopping up their own mess, a new synthesis comes about which *apparently* resolves the conflict, but which actually proposes a compromise more evil than the other two combined.

The two opposing forces in the 19<sup>th</sup> century were called "liberalism" or "capitalism" and "socialism" or communism. Both were materialistic, immoral, and anti-religious.

"Some choice."

If one can control the definition of the issues, Phillip, he also controls the course and outcome of the argument and its resolution. By proposing that the world was characterized by the division of all people into socialists or capitalists, the real divisions of good and evil, Christian and anti-Christian, were made irrelevant and unimportant. The reality was that the enemy of mankind had created rapacious capitalism to oppress the working class in order to give excuse for the solutions of communism, tyranny or democratic socialism as a cure for the proletariat's plight. But the educated working man wanted neither evil system.

In The Papal Critique of Capitalism and Socialism by John J. Mulloy we read:

"In speaking of the Papal critique of capitalism, we must remember that the 19<sup>th</sup> century growth of capitalism was closely linked with the philosophy of Liberalism, which provided the rationale for the capitalist enterprise. Consequently, when people speak of the Catholic Church in the 19<sup>th</sup> century as not being concerned with the evils of capitalism, and praise Karl Marx for his concern for the proletariat, they ignore a most important element which Marx shared with capitalism. That is the rejection of the supernatural element in human life and in society. It is because of this rejection that the disciples of Marx have created the slave states and the evil empires which Marxist fellow travelers do so much to gloss over and to pretend that it is but the growing pains in the creation of an ideal society.

The reason it is important to see that the philosophy of Liberalism was linked with capitalism is that it brings into focus the fact that the Catholic Church, from the time of the French Revolution onwards, was locked in a struggle against the materialist and man-centered elements in Liberalism. It is true that there were certain elements in the Liberal philosophy which favored human rights and thus had an appeal to the Christian conscience. But those elements were detached from the Christian beliefs and values in which they had been rooted. Moreover, they often set up against the common good the idea that State authority had no responsibility to protect that good against powerful individuals in the community. Liberalism taught that, by

allowing each individual to pursue his own self-interest without concern for society, the result would be for the benefit of all. There was an Invisible Hand which brought about this happy result. To a considerable degree, our libertarian conservatives today hold to this conception of society and thus resist all attempts at social regulation of the activities of the entrepreneur.

What the Catholic has to do today is to recognize the need for society and government to exercise authority for the common good and against exploitation, while not being caught in the trap of Marxist analysis of social ills and the remedies which Marxism offers. It should now be apparent to all that Marxist remedies are worse than the disease. But this cannot be recognized by those who believe this present world to be the ultimate goal and end of human life.

... Speaking of the Socialist system and its invasion of the family and removal of private property, Pope Leo XIII says: *"If incentives to ingenuity and skill in individual persons were to be abolished, the very foundations of wealth would necessarily dry up; and the equality conjured by the Socialist imagination would, in reality, be nothing but uniform wretchedness and meanness for one and all."*

Resisting the jaws of the godless capitalists and socialists, stood the Church, Phillip.

Leo XIII criticized the capitalism of this time: *"... It gradually came about that the present age handed over the workers, each alone and defenseless, to the inhumanity of employers and the unbridled greed of competitors. A devouring usury, although often condemned by the Church, but practiced nevertheless under another form by avaricious and grasping men, has increased the evil; and, in addition, the whole process of production as well as trade in every kind of goods has been brought almost entirely under the power of a few, so that a very few rich and exceedingly rich men have laid a yoke almost of slavery on the unnumbered masses of non-owning workers. ... The rich and employers should remember that no laws, either human or divine, permit them for their own profit to oppress the needy and the wretched or to seek gain from another's want. To defraud anyone of the wage due him is a great crime that calls down avenging wrath from heaven. .. It is incontestable that the wealth of nations originates from no other source than the labor of workers."* (Christian Culture and World Civilization)

Pius XI also saw that the Capitalists came to virtually possess the all-powerful State, which Brother Socialism then demanded from them in order to supposedly stamp out the evils of capitalism. What happened, Phillip, was that the western capitalists readily turned over the state to socialism, but in an inch by inch manner, protesting all the way to make it look like they were putting up a good fight for us consumers.

Pius XI said: "It is patent that in our own days not wealth alone is accumulated, but immense power and despotic economic domination are concentrated in the hands of a few, who for the most part are not the owners, but only the trustees and directors of invested funds, which they administer at their own good pleasure.

This domination is most powerfully exercised by those who, because they hold and control money, also govern credit and determine its allotment, for that reason supplying, so to speak, the life blood to the entire economic body,



and grasping in their hands, as it were, the very soul of production, so that no one can breathe against their will.

This accumulation of power, the characteristic note of the modern

economic order, is a natural result of limitless free competition, which permits the survival of those only who are the strongest, and this often means those who fight most relentlessly, who pay least heed to the dictates of conscience."

Paul VI summarizes the case against both Marxism and Liberalism in these terms: "He (i.e., the Christian) cannot adhere to The Marxist ideology, to its atheistic materialism, to its dialectic of violence and to the way it absorbs individual freedom in the collectivity, at the same time denying all transcendence to man and his personal and and collective history; nor can he adhere to the liberal ideology which believes it exalts individual freedom by withdrawing it from every limitation, by stimulating it through exclusive seeking of interest and power..." The appeal to a Utopia is often a convenient excuse for those who wish to escape from concrete tasks in order to take refuge in an imaginary world. To live in a hypothetical future is a facile alibi for rejecting immediate responsibilities.

After ruining the economies of their host nations with economic liberalism and money manipulations, the enemy proposed social reconstruction through the beneficent (Socialist) State, which they would control. The reality was put in perspective by Christopher Dawson, Religion and the Modern State, 1935:

"All those ideals which we regard as typically Western – the supremacy of law, the recognition of the moral rights of the individual and the duty of society toward the poor and the oppressed – are not the invention of modern democracy. They are ultimately products of the Christian tradition and find their only true justification in Christian principles ... (Such) principles were clearly laid down fifty years ago in the great social encyclicals of Leo XIII. They are not the private opinions of a modern political theorist. They are the opinions which St. Thomas drew from the ancient wisdom of the **philosophia perennis**. Indeed, they are as old as human civilization itself. The greatest minds of the human race have always recognized that the social order does not exist merely to serve man's needs and desires. It is a **sacred** order by which human action is conformed to the divine and eternal law."

"It is in the rejection of that conception of social life that the errors of both Communism and Liberalism are rooted." (John Mollow)

"So, how would we define in summary the basic elements of the antichristian spirit, Father?"

Let me read Belloc again in answer to you, Son.

"These things being so, let us examine the Modern Attack -- the anti-Christian advance -- and distinguish its special nature.

We find, to begin with, that it is at once materialist and superstitious. There is here a contradiction in reason, but the modern phase, the

anti-Christian advance, has abandoned reason. It is concerned with the destruction of the Catholic Church and the civilization proceeding therefrom. It is not troubled by apparent contradictions within its own body so long as the general alliance is one for the ending of all that by which we have hitherto lived. The modern attack is materialist because in its philosophy it considers only material causes. It is superstitious only as a byproduct of this state of mind. It nourishes on its surface the silly vagaries of spiritualism, the vulgar nonsense of "Christian Science,"

## 109

and Heaven knows how many other fantasies. But these follies are bred, not from a hunger for religion, but from the same root as that which has made the world materialist -- from an inability to understand the prime truth that *faith is at the root of knowledge*; from thinking that no truth is appreciable save through direct experience.

Thus the spiritualist boasts of his demonstrable manifestations, and his various rivals of their direct clear proofs; but all are agreed that Revelation is to be denied. ...

...But that great Modern Attack (which is more than a heresy) is indifferent to self-contradiction. It merely affirms. It advances like an animal, counting on strength alone. Indeed, it may be remarked in passing that this may well be the cause of its final defeat; for hitherto reason has always overcome its opponents; and man is the master of the beast through reason.

Anyhow, there you have the Modern Attack in its main character, materialist, and atheist; and, being atheist, it is necessarily indifferent to truth. For God is Truth."

"So, Father, it is irrational, materialistic and atheistic."

Yes, and when the natural ability of reason to know God is denied, then material things are worshipped in God's place as the only source of reality and value.

"Do you think the modern world so magnificent and proficient in material accomplishments because the focus and faith of mankind has been taken away from God and has nothing else to focus upon but material things?"

Yes, I do. The human soul has a great capacity for creative reasoning and when the natural end and goal of that power, God, is cast aside, this energy and genius will be expended on worldly projects.

Before we retire I will say the task of every age, Phillip, is "getting the story straight", that is, the historical analysis that unravels the tapestry of deceit by which the enemy hides the truth and their basic work, namely, the eternal and temporal destruction of mankind. It is a depressing, miserable business, Son, to wade through this muck, but a fitting punishment and necessary alert for sinful mankind. For this life must be a continual warfare. Our peace, our utopia is in Heaven. All promises to the contrary are signed by "Lucifer". When the enemy pretended to crush Religion by explaining away God, they put forth a promise of material bliss as a consolation prize for the loss of Heaven. This lie is the "cheese" in their mousetrap. Tomorrow we will summarize the last century before the end came.

"You look so very tired, Father ... and very old too. I will prepare some food for us and draw the water. Rest, Father."

Hand me the Bible, Son. I will lay my head upon it for a pillow; for it is a physical consolation to me.

[{TABLE OF CONTENTS}](#)

[{PREFACE}](#)

[{CHAPTER I}](#) [{CHAPTER II}](#) [{CHAPTER III}](#) [{CHAPTER IV}](#) [{CHAPTER V}](#) [{CHAPTER VI}](#)

[{CHAPTER VII}](#) [{CHAPTER VIII}](#) [{CHAPTER IX}](#) [{CHAPTER X}](#) [{CHAPTER XI}](#)

[{Bibliography}](#)

[{Bookstore}](#) [{Order Form}](#) [{Instructions}](#) [{Notice of Permissions}](#) [{Download}](#)

[{Links}](#)

[{FRAMES VERSION}](#)

(Requires a frames-enabled browser)

*Website contents © 1999 - 2000 [Web Designs by Doc](#). Literary content ©1999 - 2000, Dave Pedry. All rights reserved.*

## CHAPTER VI

## THE RED DRAGON EMERGES

The next morning as we sat on the front porch, wrapped in our robes, watching the sunrise in the east, I slowly began another grueling day in the history of mankind.

War creates heroes, Phillip, where there were none before. Crisis brings out the best in some men but the worst in others. In this way the 20<sup>th</sup> Century separated the sheep from the goats. The synagogue of Satan warred against the Church of Christ. A time limit was set – perhaps an extension of time allowed. I read the account of the vision of Pope Leo XIII:

"One of the most unusual indications that a time limit has been placed on Satan, and his followers, is the apparition of St. Michael the Archangel, to Pope Leo XIII, that reportedly took place on October 13, 1884 After Pope Leo XIII had finished celebrating Mass in the Vatican Chapel, attended by a few Cardinals and members of the Vatican staff, he suddenly stopped at the foot of the altar. He stood there for about 10 minutes, as if in a trance, his face ashen white. Then going immediately from the Chapel to his office, he composed the prayer to St. Michael, with instructions it be said after all Low Masses everywhere.

When asked what had happened, he explained that, as he was about to leave the foot of the altar, he suddenly heard voices – two voices, one kind and gentle, the other guttural and harsh. They seemed to come from near the tabernacle. As he listened, he heard the following conversation:

The guttural voice, the voice of Satan in his pride, boasting to Our Lord: "I can destroy your Church."

The gentle voice of Our Lord: "You can? Then go ahead and do so."

Satan: "To do so, I need more time and more power."

Our Lord: "How much time? How much power?"

Satan: "75 to 100 years, and a greater power over those who will give themselves over to my service."

Our Lord: "You have the time, you will have the power. Do with them what you will."

Leo XIII was then given to understand that, from that moment, Satan was given a time to accomplish his purpose; and a greater power to spread evil, through those human agents who would dedicate themselves to his cause – though some of our readers may find it hard to believe any human being would be so foolish as to do this. Yet, the great victories accomplished by the forces of evil, in recent years in corrupting souls, gives ample proof that the devil has many willing human agents

Leo XIII was further given to understand that, if the Devil had not accomplished his purpose at the end of the time limit given, he would suffer a most crushing and humiliating defeat. Furthermore, the forces of good would not be helpless in the face of the onslaught of Satan and his legions. They, too, were given a greater power for good, if only they would use it. Through their prayers and sacrifices and good Christian lives, they could offset the power of the Devil and his human agents.

It was then that he saw the great role St. Michael was to play in this conflict, and that we should call upon his powerful intercession. As he had hurled Lucifer and the fallen Angels out of Heaven, after the "first revolt against God," so, too, he would play a great part in the battle

to come, and would eventually cast Satan again into Hell.

It was as a result of this vision that Leo XIII then composed the Prayer to St. Michael. *St. Michael, the Archangel, defend us in battle. Be our protection against the wickedness and snares of the devil. May God rebuke him, we humbly pray; and do Thou, O Prince of the Heavenly Host – by the Divine Power of God – cast into Hell, Satan, and all the evil spirits, who wander now throughout the world seeking the ruin of souls."*

In the 20<sup>th</sup> century an Apocalyptic Battle of the Spirits raged over mankind. As I try to represent to you the concrete manifestation of the Red Dragon, as it appeared in this century, Phillip, it will be helpful to look at a bill of particulars dividing Communism and the "Woman" of the Apocalypse, which the Dragon pursues, which is Mystical Israel, Catholic Church. Compare these 17 differences:

#### THE CHURCH TEACHES THAT

1. Spiritual realities exist, angels and the souls of men, all created out of nothing by God.
2. The soul of man possesses the spiritual powers of reason and free will.
3. God is a pure Spirit.
4. The soul of man is immortal; his life on earth is a time of probation for eternity.
5. Differences between men are an inevitable result of the natural differences in their capabilities. Different classes must work together in harmony and preserve social justice.
6. Every individual has rights which cannot be taken away. One is the right to save his soul.
7. Men's souls are of greater value than any material good of the community.
8. As man has free will, so he has freedom of choice and personal responsibility.

#### COMMUNISM TEACHES THAT

1. Matter is the only reality that exists; from its blind forces come all forms of life.
2. Man is merely a form of matter with no spiritual soul.
3. There is no God.
4. Death is the end of man and there is no hope of a future life.
5. The differences between classes should be emphasized; class hatred will sharpen these differences and lead eventually to the triumph of the workers in the new communist society.
6. The right of the individual has to be sacrificed for the material good of the community.
7. The welfare of the community is of greater value than personal rights.
8. Personal liberty does not exist; man's actions are controlled by economic forces.

9. All true authority comes from God and parents exercise the authority of God over their children.

10. Private property and private ownership of the means of production is necessary and is consistent with personal liberty.

11. Private property should be distributed as widely as possible.

12. Society requires that a man should be free to employ others if he is capable of paying just wages, and can provide good conditions of employment.

9. All authority comes from the community and the community has first authority over its children.

10. The means of production should be owned collectively by the community and no individual should have rights over material goods.

11. There should be no private property; all forms must be eradicated.

12. No individual may hire another man. The community must be the employer.

## 112

13. Human life is sacred and the soul is spiritual.

14. Marriage is a contract made before God and by its very nature is above human law. It is subject to Divine Law and therefore cannot be broken by human law. It is also a sacrament blessed by God.

15. The marriage bond cannot be dissolved except by death.

16. Parents are responsible for the education of their children.

17. Christ the Son of God is the supreme ideal to follow in life.

13. Human life is not sacred and there is no such thing as spiritual soul.

14. Marriage and the family are civil institutions.

15. The community has authority to dissolve the marriage bond.

16. The community is responsible for the education of children. Parents have no right to direct the education of their children.

17. There is no divine being and material betterment in a classless society is the ideal.

Private revelations told us that Satan himself was able to enter upon the earth in 1940, at the beginning of World War II. Human wickedness invited his personal presence here since his banishment from the earth at Christ's crucifixion.

The acceleration of evil kept apace with the tremendous advancement in knowledge, which naturally builds on itself, producing continual advances in technology... and pride. The

level of human comfort, convenience and wealth became very high and a temptation to indulgent sensuality of mind, imagination and body, especially in those countries of Europe and America where the enemy wished men to fall asleep in their armchairs, sipping elixirs before the TV, while the poor and defenseless peoples of the world were being dispossessed by the Communists of their wealth, their freedoms and their lives.

But while all this was taking place, Phillip, effective control of our American representative government was also sliding under the waves, especially at the executive and judicial levels, where the entire staff could be appointed by agents of the secret government, which in the USA centered around the Banksters and their tax-free foundations and councils, especially the Ford and Rockefeller Foundations and the Council on Foreign Relations, which packed the government's executive bureaucracies with its one-world government members.

"All this seems too complex to contemplate, Father."

The power structure of the Conspiracy's secret society was formed of many separate functional units, but all was governed by a single source of satanically inspired intelligence. All was managed by a rule of secrecy, under threat of death, by a relatively small congregation of possessed individuals in the higher echelons and in key positions throughout the whole organization. Secrecy took the form of a hierarchical pyramid, with agents at each level knowing only enough of the Plan of the Serpent as they needed in order to play their part in its execution. All were given a sufficiently sanitized rationale for what they were doing to disarm their already sick, but perhaps not yet dead conscience. The evil that an agent could not yet countenance was hidden from them. They were not allowed on that level. Also used were "useful idiots," as Lenin had called those exuberant fools who would lend their

efforts to that octopus of evil, the existence of which they were never aware. By way of this rule of every secret society, to hide the real *motives* for action from each actor, nearly every person in the world could be incorporated into the grand conspiracy of evil, in accordance with the degree of their evil inclinations, even their apathy or simple laziness.

Here is a synopsis of the problem which I penned in 1985, Phillip, as an introduction to one of my tabloid newspapers, *The Christian Patriot*, by which I had hoped to arm my fellow countrymen with the truth. The terrible events which followed were an indication of how few listened to the many voices in this century, especially in America, which exposed the enemy for what it was in publications of great detail, full of convincing evidence. The John Birch Society led the way with its magazine, The New American.

The slaughter by communists of hundreds of millions of people in the 20<sup>th</sup> century should have been warning enough to consciences, but for those steeped in personal unrepentance, Son, no warning sufficed. Would you read my Introduction, Son?

"Sure, Father."

"The purpose of this tabloid is to set down astounding truths concerning

the life-and-death struggle with the "powers of darkness", both spiritual and human, with which the citizens of this world have been engaged. We cannot fight an enemy whose identity, nature, overall plans, activities, methods and instruments of warfare remain unknown. The excerpts and references herein are only an introduction to the Grand Conspiracy. But every American, however wise he may conceive himself to be, ought to suspend judgement and read this publication with objectivity. The Enemy's plan, the "Plan of the Serpent" is simple: "Corrupt and Destroy! Divide and Conquer!" They have systematically instigated and promoted immorality of every kind: in order to destroy the character, moral strength, courage and values of individuals, families, organizations and nations. By near total control of all medias, they have distorted all truths, fomented all manner of conflict and misunderstanding: thus rendering helpless people of good will in their task of achieving the unanimity of thought and action necessary for Law and Order, and their fruit, true Liberty. George Washington, in his *Farewell Address*, said: "Of all the dispositions and habits which lead to political prosperity, religion and morality are indispensable supports ... And let us with caution indulge the supposition that morality can be maintained without religion ... reason and experience both forbid us to expect that national morality can prevail to the exclusion of religious principle. It is substantially true that virtue or morality is a necessary spring of popular government." Knowing this great truth, the Illuminati – who both worship Satan and receive direct "spiritual" guidance from him – ordered that Christian principles be replaced by humanistic principles, so that men's self-love could replace true religion. What must we do but take up the sword of Truth and fight the Monster Lies that enslave us to *Servile Human Respect*, the worst enemy of a free people; for it leads to an internal putrefication, through the abandonment of a proper sense of right and wrong, true and untrue. Before the god of Human Respect, Love, Goodness, Truth and Beauty are made subservient to *any* opinion. By our capitulation to their pretended creed of "Pluralism", we are made subject to their malicious will and destructive intent. This "religion of man" produces a spirit of arrogant cynicism and hypocrisy

... which is the *blindness of the blind!!* And so it is that the enemies of humanity have poisoned the spring of our National well being."

"What do you think their overall plan to subjugate the world was, Father?"

Lenin, the man the Conspiracy used to take over Russia in 1917 said: "*First we will take Russia, next we will capture the nations of Eastern Europe, then we will take the masses of Asia. Finally, we will surround the United States and that last bastion of freedom will fall into our hands like overripe fruit.*"

The primary purpose of WWII (1939-1945) was to give Eastern Europe to Russia, and China to the communists under Mao, all by arrangement of Stalin, FDR, and Churchill at the Yalta Conference. During WWII the Japanese decimated China; then, after Japan's surrender, they were ordered to leave their arms in Manchuria for the Communists to use against its patriots. Mao received aid through the treacherous U.S. "Marshall Plan." The true nationalists and the Christians under the leadership of Chiang Kai-shek fled to the island of Formosa where U.S. protection was offered. We withdrew this protection later.



Communist China eventually exported successful communist revolutions to Tibet, Pakistan, North Korea, Cambodia, Laos and Vietnam, while Russia did the same to half of Africa, parts of South and Central American and, under the guise of militant Islamic fundamentalism, to Syria, Lebanon, Iran, Iraq, Libya, Algeria, Sudan, and other countries. In the meantime Communist shadow governments were being installed in all the remaining, supposedly "free" countries, which were finally attacked in WWII by the neighboring Communist nations that had been taken over in order to surround them. Certain nations, like the USA were used by the World Revolutionary Movement (WRM) as supply "factories", producing and exporting material, financial and technological fuel for the Red Revolutions of the world. Our foreign aid was given to corrupt regimes, and through the CIA and our State Department open and clandestine support for various subversive projects was accomplished with the reputation, power and prestige of the United States of America.

"They must have been very skilled in revolutionary takeovers, Father. What was their SOP?"

Takeovers were accomplished by one subterfuge after another, but they always pretended to have a mandate from the discontent of an impoverished majority, the oppressed, defenseless citizens. This makes the Revolutionaries look like saviors. But the might for takeovers came from treacherous foreign powers, principally the U.S. government (not the people), which posed as the world's policeman and the champion of free peoples in order to be in the position to come to the aid of the "struggling democratic movements" which were the communist fronts in the victim country.

"So, the position of trust held by the United States was used effectively to deliver small nations into the hands of a token force of rebels at the critical moment of revolution."

Yes. The CIA would give arms to the "nationalists" as the Communists often styled themselves, and sometimes U.S. armed forces were actually used to help them establish power in the end, as in Vietnam, where our help of the noncommunist government was only a façade that would be dropped in the end when it was time to hand the country over to the Reds. As at Cuba's Bay of Pigs, US forces or arms were sometimes promised to patriots and then withheld at the critical moment. The UN and

NATO, posing as trustworthy champions of freedom and human rights, also played the same kind of treacherous role throughout the world.

The Enemy's basic political plan of takeover, Phillip, was always to first rob the people of their wealth by taking control of their money. Big money was loaned to the embattled government which was attempting to defend itself against the revolutionary guerrilla armies by those bankers sponsoring the Communist takeover. When payments could not be made by the government because of its besieged status this would allow the bankers to take control of their real assets: the land, capital ventures, the means of production. And they

milked human labor through wage and market manipulation. With stolen capital, the fruit of the people's production, they would buy the wholesale markets that could purchase the goods and services produced. At that point they also controlled retail prices. The wealth and destiny of the people was then under their total control.

The other silent Socialist form of takeover is when unpayable debts accrued by the people's national government causes it to declare bankruptcy. The right to rule the people is forfeited by that government to its debtors in the financial sector; when the terms of foreclosure are agreed upon, a new *socialist* or collectivist government takes over. The *liberty of the people* is secretly considered in this scheme the *collateral* of those original loans to their government.

"You mean their slavery is the collateral, Father?"

Same thing. Yes, this is the same system that existed in antiquity, Phillip. If you can't pay, you and yours and all you have is sold into Slavery. Destitution results. The key to this system is merciless greed.

Once the Banksters gained the power to loan the U.S. Treasury every dollar it printed at interest, all our industry became the source of *their wealth*, but the source of *our indebtedness*. They created the money *representing* our wealth out of paper, but used that *wealth as their assets* and the taxpayer as loan guarantor taking all risk. Then, they *loaned* us what was *ours to begin with*, on the condition that we repay *with interest*. But since the money *printed* is principal, more money must be continually *borrowed* to pay the interest. In the end, we are robbed ten times what we are worth, then sold into slavery to our debtor, who wants our eternal soul and our body in the bargain. Now they, the satanists who operate the machine called communism or socialism or just plain tyranny by terror, can make this slave a deal – your soul and your *eternal* life, in exchange for your subsistence, your *earthly* life. What is the slave likely to say?

" Father, he has no other choice but martyrdom or submission, eternal life or eternal death. Perhaps only the heroic soul can be saved."

Didn't Jesus say, if you wish to be saved, take up your cross and follow Me?

"Certainly, Jesus was heroic, Father, and He said 'he who tries to save his life will lose it, and he who loses his life for my sake will save it.' "

This great wealth of ours that they stole, Phillip, was used to finance the Communist-Socialist takeover of the world. Americans were to be kept healthy, happy, ingenious workhorses, while their moral blood was siphoned off by various nationalized, publicized immoralities.

When the enemy set up Hitler, Stalin, and Japan to produce WWII, Phillip, they drove Europe into war by invasion and then drove the U.S. into war by a pre-planned attack on Pearl Harbor, with the cooperation of FDR, our President. But the real cause of world war was not subterfuge, but the same economic bankruptcy and foreclosure

scheme I just described for taking over nations. In 1929 the U.S. bankers caused a great depression, which, as FDR reminded us, 'we would not escape without going to war'. For doing *that* the bankers would begin again to loan us money, jump-starting the economy.

"It seems like money is a key to their power, Father. 'Money is the root of all evil' comes to my mind out of Scripture. But I never understood that."

Money represents the power to obtain all that man wants on earth, but neither money nor that which it can obtain buys anything in eternity. Therefore, making money the object of one's highest devotion represents the loss of eternity. In this way money can be said to be the root of all evil.

But, in itself, money is a necessary invention of man to represent his wealth, a mere useful tool of representation. It is a system of tokens used in place of the largely impractical bartering of goods and services. But the regulation of money value is a choke point of the national-scale thief. This choke point is true on a material level and a spiritual level at the same time. First they can bankrupt us materially by playing with the value of money through manipulation of the interest rates set on all that is loaned into circulation. But also, if they can loan us money, at no risk to themselves, to spend foolishly on whatever we desire, immediately, then they can cultivate in us the *inordinate* love of material things (covetousness) which obstructs a love of spiritual things like justice, chastity, charity, etc. The result is material *and* moral bankruptcy, with its materialism, sensuality, laziness, etc. Let us listen to others on this vital subject of money control, Phillip; for it was the real super-weapon of the Enemy.

BILLIONS for the BANKERS  
DEBTS for the PEOPLE  
THE REAL STORY OF THE MONEY-CONTROL  
OVER AMERICA  
By Sheldon Emry

"If the American people ever allow private banks to control the issue of their money, first by inflation and then by deflation, the banks and corporations that will grow up around the, (around the banks), will deprive the people of their property until their children will wake up homeless on the continent their fathers conquered." Thomas Jefferson

Too few Americans realize why Christian Statesmen wrote into Article I of the U.S. Constitution:

*Congress shall have the Power to Coin Money and  
Regulate the Value Thereof.*

They did this, as we will show, in prayerful hope it would prevent "love of money" from destroying the Republic they had founded. We shall see how subversion of Article I has brought on us the "evil" of which God's Word had warned.

Americans, living in what is called the richest nation on earth seem always to be short of money. Wives are working in unprecedented numbers, husbands hope for overtime hours to earn more, or take part-time jobs evenings and weekends, children look for odd jobs for spending money, the family debt climbs higher, and psychologists say one of the biggest causes of family quarrels and breakups is "arguments over money." Much of this trouble can be traced to our present "debt-money" system.

ADEQUATE MONEY SUPPLY NEEDED

An adequate supply of money is indispensable to civilized society. We could forego many other things, but without money industry would grind to a halt, farms would become only self-sustaining units, surplus food

disappear, jobs requiring the work of more than one man or one family would remain undone, shipping and large movements of goods would cease, hungry people would plunder and kill to remain alive, and all government except family or tribe would cease to function.

An overstatement, you say? Not at all. Money is the blood of civilized society, the means of all commercial trade except simple barter. It is the measure and the instrument by which one product is sold and another purchased. Remove money or even reduce the supply below that which is necessary to carry on current levels of trade, and the results are catastrophic. For an example, we need only look at America's Depression of the early 1930's.

#### THE BANKERS DEPRESSION OF THE 1930'S

...The United States of America in 1930 lacked only one thing: an adequate supply of money to carry on trade and commerce.

In the early 1930's, Bankers, the only source of new money and credit, deliberately refused loans to industries, stores and farms. Payments on existing loans were required however, and money rapidly disappeared from circulation. Goods were available to be purchased, jobs waiting to be done, but the lack of money brought the nation to a standstill. By this simple ploy America was put in a "depression" and the greedy Bankers took possession of hundreds of thousands of farms, homes, and business properties. The people were told, "times are hard," and "money is short." Not understanding the system, they were cruelly robbed of their earnings, their savings, and their property.

#### MONEY FOR PEACE? NO! MONEY FOR WAR? YES!

World War II ended the "depression." The same Bankers who in the early 30's had no loans for peacetime houses, food, and clothing, suddenly had unlimited billions to lend for Army barracks, K-rations and uniforms! A nation that in 1934 couldn't produce food for sale, suddenly could produce bombs to send free to Germany and Japan! (More on this riddle later.)

With the sudden increase in money, people were hired, farms sold their produce, factories went to two shifts, mines re-opened, and "The Great Depression" was over! Some politicians were blamed for it and others took credit for ending it. The truth is the lack of money (caused by the Bankers) brought on the depression, and adequate money ended it. ...

#### HOW THE PEOPLE LOST CONTROL TO THE FEDERAL RESERVE

Instead of the Constitutional method of creating our money and putting it into circulation, we now have an entirely unconstitutional system. This has resulted in almost disastrous conditions, as we shall see.

Since our money was handled both legally and illegally before 1913, we

shall consider only the years following 1913, since from that year on, ALL of our money has been created and issued by an illegal method that will eventually destroy the United States if it is not changed. Prior to 1913, America was a prosperous, powerful, and growing nation, at peace with its neighbors and the envy of the world. But – in December of 1913, Congress, with many members away for the Christmas holidays, passed what has since been known as the FEDERAL RESERVE ACT. ... it simply authorized the establishment of a Federal Reserve Corporation, with a Board of Directors (The Federal Reserve Board) to run it, and the United States was divided into 12 Federal Reserve "Districts."

This simple, but terrible, law completely removed from Congress the right to "create" money or to have any control over its "creation," and gave that function to the Federal Reserve Corporation. This was done with appropriate fanfare and propaganda that this would "remove money from

## 118

politics" (they didn't say "and therefore from the people's control") and prevent "Boom and Bust" from hurting our citizens. The people were not told then, and most still do not know today, that the Federal Reserve Corporation is a private corporation controlled by bankers and therefore is operated for the financial gain of the bankers over the people rather than for the good of the people. The word "Federal" was used only to deceive the people.... Since 1913 they have "created" tens of billions of dollars in money and credit, which, as their own personal property, they then lend to our government and our people at interest.

### THEY PRINT IT – WE BORROW IT AND PAY THEM INTEREST

We shall start with the need for money. The Federal Government, having spent more than it has taken from its citizens in taxes, needs, for the sake of illustration, \$1,000,000,000. Since it does not have the money, and Congress has given away its authority to "create" it, the Government must go to the "creators" for the \$1 billion. But, the Federal Reserve, a private corporation, doesn't just give its money away! The Bankers are willing to deliver \$1,000,000,000 in money or credit to the Federal Government in exchange for the Government's agreement to pay it back – with interest! So Congress authorizes the Treasury Department to print \$1,000,000,000 in U.S. Bonds, which are then delivered to the Federal Reserve Bankers.

The Federal Reserve then pays the cost of printing the \$1,000,000,000 (about \$1,000) and makes the exchange. The Government then uses the money to pay its obligations. What are the results of this fantastic transaction? Well, \$1 billion in Government bills are paid all right, but the Government has not indebted the people to the Bankers for \$1 billion on which the people must pay interest! Tens of thousands of such transactions have taken place since 1913 so that by the 1980's, the U.S. Government is indebted to the Bankers for over \$1,000,000,000,000 (trillion) on which the people pay over \$100 billion a year in interest alone with no hope of ever paying off the principle. Supposedly our children and following generations will pay forever and forever!

### AND THERE'S MORE

You say, "This is terrible!" Yes, it is, but we have shown only Part of the sordid story. Under this unholy system, those United States Bonds have now become "assets" of the Banks in the Reserve System which they then use as "reserves" to "create" more "credit" to lend. Current "reserve" requirements allow them to use that \$1 billion in bonds to "create" as much as \$15 billion in new "credit" to lend to States, Municipalities, to individuals and businesses. Added to the original \$1 billion, they could have \$16 billion of "created credit" out in loans paying them interest with their only cost being \$1,000 for printing the original \$1 billion! Since the U.S. Congress has not issued Constitutional money since 1863 (over 100 years), in order for the people to have money to carry on trade and commerce they are forced to borrow the "created credit" of the Monoply Bankers and pay them usury-interest!

#### AND THERE'S STILL MORE

In addition to the vast wealth drawn to them through this almost unlimited usury, the Bankers who control the money at the top are able to approve or disapprove large loans to large and successful corporations to the extent that refusal of a loan will bring about a reduction in the price that that Corporation's stock sells for on the market. After depressing the price, the Bankers' agents buy large blocks of the stock, after which the sometimes multi-million dollar loan is approved, the stock rises, and is then sold for a profit. In this manner billions of dollars are made with which to

#### 119

buy more stock. This practice is so refined today that the Federal Reserve Board need only announce to the newspapers an increase or decrease in their "rediscount rate" to send stocks up and down as they wish. Using this method since 1913, the Bankers and their agents have purchased secret or open control of almost every large corporation in America. Using that control, they then force the corporations to borrow huge sums from their banks so that corporation earnings are siphoned off in the form of interest to the banks. This leaves little as actual "profits" which can be paid as dividends and explains why stock prices are so depressed, while the banks reap billions in interest from corporate loans. In effect, the bankers get almost all of the profits, while individual stockholders are left holding the bag.

The millions of working families of America are now indebted to the few thousand Banking Families for twice the assessed value of the entire United States. And these Banking Families obtained that debt against us for the cost of paper, ink, and bookkeeping!

#### THE INTEREST AMOUNT IS NEVER CREATED

The only way new money (which is not true money, but is "credit" representing a debt), goes into circulation in America is when it is borrowed from Bankers. When the State and people borrow large sums, we seem to prosper. However, the Bankers "create" only the amount of the principal of each loan, never the extra amount needed to pay the interest. Therefore, the new money never equals the new debt added. The amounts needed to pay the interest on loans is not "created," and therefore does not exist!

Under this kind of a system, where new debt always exceeds the new money no matter how much or how little is borrowed, the total debt increasingly outstrips the amount of money available to pay the debt. The people can never, ever get out of debt!

An example will show the viciousness of this usury-debt system with its "built-in" shortage of money.

**IF \$50,000 IS BORROWED, \$263,941.00 MUST BE PAID BACK**

When a citizen goes to a Banker to borrow \$50,000 to purchase a home or a farm, the Bank clerk has the borrower agree to pay back the loan plus interest. At 17% interest for 30 years, the Borrower must agree to pay \$733.17 per month for a total of \$263,941.20. The clerk then requires the citizen to assign to the Banker the right of ownership of the property if the Borrower does not make the required payments. The Bank clerk then gives the Borrower a \$50,000 check or a \$50,000 deposit slip crediting the Borrower's checking account with \$50,000.

The Borrower then writes checks to the builder, subcontractors, etc., who in turn write checks. \$50,000 of new "checkbook" money is thereby added to "money in circulation."

However, and this is the fatal flaw in a usury system, the only new money created and put into circulation is the amount of the loan, \$50,000. The money to pay the interest was NOT created, and therefore was NOT added to "money in circulation."

Even so, this Borrower (and those who follow him in ownership of the property) must earn and TAKE OUT OF CIRCULATION \$263,941, over \$200,000 MORE than he put IN CIRCULATION WHEN he borrowed the original \$50,000! ...

Every new loan puts the same process in operation. Each borrower adds a small sum to the total money supply when he borrows, but the payments on the loan (because of interest) then deduct a much LARGER sum from the total money supply.

There is therefore no way all debtors can pay off the moneylenders.

## 120

as they pay the principal and interest, the money in circulation disappears. All they can do is struggle against each other, borrowing more and more from the moneylenders each generation. The money-lenders (Bankers), who produce nothing of value, slowly, then more rapidly, gain a death grip on the land, buildings, and present and future earnings of the whole working population. Proverbs 22:7 has come to pass in America. The borrowers have become the servants of the lenders. No wonder God Almighty forbids interest on loans.

**AND THERE'S MORE**

The profits from these massive debts have been used to erect a complete and almost hidden economic and political colossus over our nation. They keep telling us they are trying to do us "good," when in truth they work to bring harm and injury to our people. These would-be despots know it is easier to control and rob an ill, poorly educated and confused people than it is a healthy and

intelligent population, so they deliberately prevent real cures for diseases, they degrade our educational systems, and they stir up social and racial unrest. For the same reason they favor drug use, alcohol, racial intermarriage, sexual promiscuity, abortion, pornography, and crime. Everything which debilitates the minds and bodies of the people is secretly encouraged, as it makes the people less able to oppose them or even to understand what is being done to them.

... It is conquest through the most gigantic fraud and swindle in the history of mankind. And we remind you again: The key to their wealth and power over us is their ability to create "money" out of nothing and lend it to us at interest. If they had not been allowed to do that, they would never have gained secret control of our nation. How true Solomon's words are: *"The rich ruleth over the poor, and the borrower is servant to the lender."* (Proverbs 22:7)

God Almighty warned in the Bible that:

*"The stranger that liveth with thee in the land, shall rise up over thee, and shall be higher: and thou shalt go down, and be lower. He shall lend to thee, and thou shalt not lend to him. He shall be as the head, and thou shalt be the tail."* (Deuteronomy 28:43-44)

Most of the owners of the largest banks in America are of Eastern European ancestry and connected with the Rothschild European banks. Has that warning come to fruition in America?

Let us now consider the correct method of providing the medium of exchange (money) needed by our people.

#### THE CONSTITUTIONAL WAY – EVERY CITIZEN A STOCKHOLDER

If we would have used the Constitutional way of "creating" the money needed in the nation, the Federal Congress would spend most of its time and study on the issuance and control of an adequate supply of stable money for the people. If an increase of population and production required an increase in the medium of exchange, Congress would authorize the "coining," (i.e., printing) of the determined amount. Some could be used to pay current legitimate expenses of the Federal Government, with the balance paid directly to the citizens. Records for payment would be similar to Social Security records, except a citizen would be recorded at birth, instead of when he first goes to work. Each person on the records as of the date of the Congressional authorization would receive an equal amount just as if he were a stockholder holding one share. Just think – a payment of only \$20 to each citizen would put \$4 billion of debt-free and interest-free money into circulation.

Such a suggestion always scares the Bankers. Their propagandists

will immediately cry, "printing press money," and warn that it would soon be "worthless" and would "cause inflation."

The truth is their immense usury charges on their "created" credit (our debt) is the sole cause of "inflation." All prices on all industry, trade and labor must be raised periodically to pay the ever-increasing usury charges. That is the ONLY cause of higher prices, and the moneychangers spend millions in propaganda to keep you from realizing that.



The money-creators (Bankers) know that if we ever tried a Constitutional issue of debt-free, interest-free currency, even a limited issue, the benefits would be apparent immediately. That they must Prevent.

The American colonies did it in the 1700's and their wealth soon rivaled England and brought restrictions from Parliament, which led to the Revolutionary War. Abraham Lincoln did it in 1863 to help finance the Civil War. He was later assassinated by an agent of the Rothschild Bank. No debt-free or interest-free money has been issued in America since then

### WHY YOU HAVEN'T KNOWN

... These agents control the information available to our people. They manipulate public opinion, elect whom they will locally and nationally, and never expose the crooked money system. They promote school bonds, municipal bonds, expensive and detrimental farm programs, "urban renewal," foreign aid, and many other schemes which will put the people more into debt to the Bankers. Thoughtful citizens wonder why billions are spent on one program and billions on another which may duplicate it or even nullify it, such as paying some farmers not to raise crops, while at the same time building dams or canals to irrigate more farmland.

When some few Patriotic people or organizations who know the truth begin to expose them or try to stop any of their mad schemes, they are ridiculed and smeared as "right-wing extremists," "super-patriots," "ultra-rightists," "bigots," "racists," even "fascists" and "anti-Semites." Any name is used which will cause them to shut up or will at least stop other people from listening to the warning they are giving. Articles and books such as you are not reading are kept out of schools, libraries, and book stores.

... However, in spite of their control of information, they realize many citizens are learning the truth. Therefore, to prevent violence or armed resistance to their plunder of America, they plan to register all firearms and eventually to disarm all citizens. They have to eliminate most guns, except those in the hands of their government police and army.

PRESIDENT JAMES A. GARFIELD: "Whoever control the volume of money in any country is absolute master of all industry and commerce."

PRESIDENT WOODROW WILSON: "A great industrial Nation is controlled by its system of credit. Our system of credit is concentrated. The growth of the Nation and all our activities are in the hands of a few men. We have come to be one of the worst ruled, one of the most completely controlled and dominated Governments in the world – no longer a Government of free opinion, no longer a Government by conviction and vote of the majority, but a Government by the opinion and duress of small groups of dominate men". (Just before he died, Wilson is reported to have stated to friends that he had been "deceived" and that "I have betrayed my Country". He referred to the Federal Reserve Act passed during his Presidency.)

SIR JOSIAH STAMP, (President of the Bank of England in the 1920's, The second richest man in Britain): "Banking was conceived in iniquity and was

the power to create deposits, and with the flick of the pen they will create enough deposits to buy it back again. However, take it away from them, and all the great fortunes like mine will disappear, and they ought to disappear, for this would be a happier and better world to live in. But, if you wish to remain the slaves of Bankers and pay the cost of your own slavery, let them continue to create deposits."

RALPH H. HEMPHILL (Credit Manager of Federal Reserve Bank, Atlanta, GA): "This is a staggering thought. We are completely dependent on the commercial Banks. Someone has to borrow every dollar we have in circulation, cash or credit. If the Banks create ample synthetic money we are prosperous; if not, we starve. We are absolutely without a permanent money system. When one gets a complete grasp of the picture, the tragic absurdity of our hopeless position is almost incredible, but there it is. It is the most important subject intelligent persons can investigate and reflect upon. It is so important that our present civilization may collapse unless it becomes widely understood and the defects remedied very soon."

CONGRESSMAN LOUIS T. McFADDEN: "The Federal Reserve (Banks) are one of the most corrupt institutions the world has ever seen. There is not a man within the sound of my voice who does not know that this Nation is run by the International Bankers."

THOMAS A. EDISON: "People who will not turn a shovel full of dirt on the project (Muscle Shoals Dam) nor contribute a pound of materials, will collect more money from the United States than will the People who supply all the material and do all the work. This is the terrible thing about interest. ... But here is the point: If the nation can issue a dollar bond it can issue a dollar bill. The element that makes the bond good makes the bill good also. The difference between the bond and the bill is that the bond lets the money broker collect twice the amount of the bond and an additional 20%. Whereas the currency, the honest sort provided by the Constitution, pays nobody but those who contribute in some useful way. It is absurd to say our Country can issue bonds and cannot issue currency. Both are promises to pay, but one fattens the usurer and the other helps the People. If the currency issued by the People were no good, then the bonds would be no good, either. It is a terrible situation when the Government, to insure the National Wealth, must go in debt and submit to ruinous interest charges at the hands of men who control the fictitious value of gold. Interest is the invention of Satan."

Son, Satan knows that God must allow the natural and supernatural consequences of sin to take place as a matter of justice and of correction. Therefore, Satan reasons, if I can engage my "cattle" in giant waves of grave sin, I will be able to take advantage of all evils God allows to visit them as a natural consequence of that sin. So, to create the greatest sin, the murder of the innocent, and to thereby terribly weaken the basis of popular government, which is moral uprightness, Satan began by attacking the national laws guarding modesty and decency, and the indissolubility of marriage. Finally, when the resulting laxity produced many unwanted children, the right of the unborn to life itself was removed by law, so that parents could execute their own children in the womb.

A favored tactic in bringing about such legislation was to first sympathetically spotlight lawbreaking, such as public nudity, pornography, abortion, common law marriages, and then to secure the permanent "rights" for these evils by immoral, unjust court decisions based on misinterpretations of the Constitution's Bill of Rights and on legal technicalities.

The "Communist" control of the media, especially Hollywood, built a tolerance for adultery, divorce and remarriage, fornication and immodest dress by showing all this

sympathetically and invitingly in lavish and increasingly realistic and sophisticated pictorial entertainments. Then, with a liberal press, they could make a public scene out of the punishment, plight or trial of the "victims" of laws restricting such "understandable human behavior." Their pornographers produced smut so that it could be brought to court, where the enemy's lawyers defended it on the grounds of Constitutional right to freedom of speech. They argued that no harm could be objectively proved, that the separation of church and state prevented any intrinsic moral guidelines, no matter how universal, from being used to preserve public morality. What could not be proven to be smut, absolutely without any redeeming value, could not be banished by law. And the *community*, not religion, tradition or reason, or plain common sense would have to decide the standards of decency. And *their* press would represent this community, the socialist source of authority.

"In other words, if something is 90% bad and 10% good, it can't be banished."

That's right, Phillip. Legalized licentiousness permitted indecent dress, eventually including full nudity in houses of entertainment and motion pictures. The consent of the viewer made it lawful. The lust all this created *produced* fornication and infidelity, which, in turn, caused difficulty in marriages, a desire for divorces, unwanted conceptions, broken homes, etc.

When laws forbidding the dissolution of marriages were struck down, the "agreement" of only one party and the State rendered the adultery "legal." This *legalistic law* produced millions of second marriages that were morally illicit and invalid under Christian law and valid common law, which is based on the natural law and tradition to formal valid civil law.

"Adultery became a way of life then, Father."

Yes, and young people, seeing the bad example of adults engaging in this promiscuity, emulated them in their own unstable marriages, after a time of "going steady" in which fornication created millions of unwanted pregnancies. First contraception was legalized, then abortions, saying, "these formerly illicit sexual acts of fornication and adultery are routinely produced in a society by the will of the majority or at least by a very significant minority. Therefore, such behavior deserves protection under law.

"If community is like God, then consensus is like divine law."

Well put, Phillip.

"It sounds like they at first came to the defense of the immoral minority, in order to have a reason to defend and introduce that immorality to the majority."

Oh, yes, they created their majority consensus and their phony *community*. Minorities had a right to *their* morality too because each person had an individual right to their own private, sinful morality. So take away prohibitions of law and let everyone freely choose their own good.

"Sounds so reasonable, Father. But it is so wrong and would be a temptation to so much

evil. It would be like letting one child play by a dangerous cliff because he wanted to."

A false liberty that many apparently moral people could not condemn was contraception, Phillip. It was always condemned by the Church, and recently by the encyclical Pope Paul VI in the late 1960's called *Humanae Vitae*.

"Why is artificial contraception evil, Father?"

124

Like the grave sin of masturbation which accompanies it, contraception, even in a legitimate sexual relationship, divorces the purpose of the sexual act from its obviously natural and divinely ordained end – to produce life. In that the sexual act is desecrated, mutilated and cheapened. Over time the principle meaning of sex in the popular mind became pleasure without responsibility, rather than the potential for procreation with the incentive of pleasure in the stable environment of a valid marriage. Without this responsibility irresponsible sex exploded due to contraceptives, exasperating all the other problems, not the least of which was the disintegration of American families.

Children dispossessed of one or both parents suffered terrible psychological and social trauma and tended to repeat the bad example of their parents by divorcing their own spouses, dumping even more children into psychological hell. And the crowning achievement of Satan? In the last 25 years of the Century over 25 million babies were murdered in the womb in the U.S.A. This mass-murder was overshadowed by abortions worldwide, which exceeded deaths from all the wars and persecutions in the history of mankind.

The birthrate dropped to zero replacement or below in rich countries. Satan lusted for more control, more sin and, finally, *instant death for billions!* Every human creature, if possible. That is why he planned WWII. In Satan's logic this meant that Hell could be filled, while Heaven's replacement of the fallen angels with the saved could not reach fulfillment, allowing Satan to have the earth as his abode forever.

"Now I clearly see his overall selfish purpose."

Christians forgot that "Marriage is, first and foremost, a contract made before God, and by its very nature is above human law." Husband and wife contract an agreement with God that they will be allowed to unite as one body in order to conceive the children God creates and gives into their care -- to nurture, educate in His law, and provide for. This can be done only in the context of a stable, lifelong commitment. There is also a solemn promise made between husband and wife to fidelity and mutual care of each other, "for better or for worse, until death do us part." The State, a mere creature of man, has no authority, Phillip, to dissolve, preside over, or bless either the human or the divine covenant of marriage. At best it could be a mere witness of record. The actual bonding that God creates in Sacramental marriages cannot be dissolved by any power on earth.

"It sounds like the enemy attacked the basic social contract of Christians."

Just like they attacked the basic economic contract by their money manipulation,

Phillip. Yes, Satan attacks foundations. The ubiquity of fornication and the uncertainty of a stable future marriage led to "steady" dating, which simulated marriage sexually and otherwise. This led to cohabitation or premature marriages that were prone to fail.

Remember, Phillip, beware of seemingly small beginnings. The beginning of all this was the pornography and immodest dress which portrayed women as *advertised sexual objects*, that is, as willing objects of self gratification for anyone -- instead of half the human race, people, with duties, functions, and moral priorities. Self-gratification was thus exalted and worshipped as a personal right of the individual sensate human being, who had become a law unto himself.

The judicial crimes that legalized pornography and immodesty were indirectly responsible for promoting sexual crimes of all sorts. Almost all magazines, newspapers,

or any literature or pictorial entertainment had semi-nudity on display. For a person of any age not to be exposed to this was virtually impossible.

The healthy emotional and social development of children and adolescents in regard to sexuality was severely disrupted and misdirected by this premature sexualizing. This led many of these victims into sexual child abuse and many other sexual addictions.

"America was becoming Lenin's 'ripe apple', Father."

The greatest crimes are based on the misuse of the greatest powers; for example, the power over life and death, the sexual power to conceive life, *and* the civil power to make and enforce laws. Legislators, lawyers, and judges, by denying the very notion of law as coming from nature and nature's God, and in proposing that it comes from the consent of the governed, became legal criminals when they licensed sin.

In those days modern dance and much music was also seductive, the lyrics or songs often dealing with sexual deviance, even murder and suicide. The music was sometimes physically sickening. It is hard to explain in words. But I have a little article I will read:

### ROCK N' ROLL TAKES ITS TOLL!

Today's homes, schools, factories, stores, restaurants and beaches are permeated with the ever-present racket of Rock n' Roll. This mawkish, maudlin, madness assaults our ears and insults our intelligence!

Webster tells us that music is "the art of making pleasing or harmonious combinations of tones." With no stretch of the imagination can Rock n' roll be considered an art, nor is it pleasing or harmonious. Its jungle beat is accompanied with vulgar, suggestive and blatantly sexual lyrics. It is unpatriotic and certainly unchristian. It is not even good for your health. It even affects the health of you house plants!

A New York City psychiatrist, Dr. John Diamond, has studied the beats of over 20,000 recordings of different types of music and has tested various music on people. In his testing he has discovered that a specific beat can prove stressful and depressing and, on the other hand, waltz music, for instance, can

pick you up, strengthen you physically and give you an optimistic attitude.

"It has nothing to do with the volume," Dr. Diamond stated, "nor whether or not you like the music. It has all to do with the rhythms and the beat."

"I've concluded," he said, "that a specific beat, found in over half of the top hits of any given week can actually weaken you." That beat of which Dr. Diamond speaks is called "stopped anapestic rhythm." It is marked by two short beats and one long beat.

"In nine out of ten cases that I have tested," the doctor said, "muscle strength drops more than 50% while a person is listening to records with this beat."

"Stopped anapestic rhythm is *contrary* to our natural body beats and rhythms," the doctor explained.

"When we tape-recorded the beat of the heart and the blood vessels," the doctor continued, "we found it to be the exact opposite of the rock beat. The heart and body goes DAH-dit dit, one long, two short. This is much more like the waltz beat."

"The stopped anapestic beat further interferes with brain wave patterns causing mental stress," according to Dr. Diamond. "Tests conducted in factories and schools showed that students and workers performed 15% better without rock music," he concluded.

The crude lyrics of today's songs were appalling to Disc Jockey Jack Carey and he quit his job in disgust. He stated that the rock music

industry is leading millions of teenagers and young adults down the evil path of drugs, sexual promiscuity and social irresponsibility.

Long ago we reached the saturation point where Rock n' Roll is concerned, but it drones on, and unbelievably, it has invaded our church sanctuaries and choir lofts. This materialistic and carnal substitution for the spiritual hymn will certainly not draw souls closer to God! Since it will even penetrate cotton in the ears, the only alternative is to protest – loud and clear above the din!

Complain to store clerks and managers and anyone else who is chasing from the scene any concentration, constructive thought, or creative imagination! Do not patronize restaurants which insist on serving a constant bombardment of frenzied and amplified heathen discord.

Fill you home with inspiring and soothing music; for where else will tomorrow's great musicians come from? The raucous noise of today is a miserable substitute for music. It is depressing and befuddles the mind and certainly is a big factor in the weighty problem of teenage suicide! While soothing music tames the savage beast, Rock n' Roll only makes the savage beast more savage! It is truly the pornography of the music world!

Rock and Roll was introduced for the express purpose of destroying the morality of the youth. It is not music. It is mockery!

Yes, folks, Rock and Roll is just another part of the plot to destroy America – your country! To cater to this abomination by purchasing or applauding this drivel, only helps to hasten America's demise.

When you purchase Rock & Roll you automatically promote: Witchcraft,

Satan worship, drugs, fornication, nudity, obscenity, the occult, blasphemy, drunkenness, immorality, perversion, homosexuality, godless cults, deception, vulgarity, reincarnation, rebellion, desecration, pornography, violence and suicide.

Thank you for NOT promoting the devil's music!!!

"It sounds like the enemy was attacking the spirit and the mind with music too."

Yes. And discordant, unnatural colors and shapes were also introduced into the visual arts, including architecture for the same reason. Ugly, totally abstract or monotonously dull visual "art" unconsciously depressed all people. It was a conscious effort of the enemy to portray and praise discordance itself, in order to denigrate the rationality of the human mind, thus degrading its products: harmony, beauty and order. This brainwashing worked. Their scientists knew how the human mind functioned.

They also developed certain drugs, food preservatives and additives and noxious automobile and industrial exhausts that would destroy the proper body chemistry of the victim population. Then they had the government agencies they had created under the auspices of protecting us from such pollution, the FDA and EPA, declare these pollutants safe for public consumption, while mandating silly, useless and costly anti-pollution requirements to harass us and make a show of doing what they were supposed to do, in order to cover up their real plan to poison us. They would mandate the use of harmful preservatives to *protect the public* from spoilage. For example, all bottled drinks containing water had to be laced with the preservative glycol, a powerful poison used in antifreeze. There were thousands of other examples, such as using fluoride, first in baby food, then in toothpaste and drinking water. And the latest car exhaust pollution requirements producing exhaust ten times more toxic than the exhaust they replaced. The death rate was parallel to the pollution index in the U.S.

"Father, if they set up the agencies enforcing certain laws or protecting the public from certain evils, then they could break those laws and commit those evils with impunity through the misuse of those same policing agencies. The trusted watchdogs and enforcement officers could let *their* criminals go undetected, while stopping competitors to make a good show of doing their job."

Exactly, Phillip! They could allow their agents or cooperating criminals to break a law without consequences, but lock the small-time lawbreaker up. DEA agents accompanied drugs across our borders to make sure it got to market; but to expand and maintain a giant prison system, they arrested thousands of drug users, or maverick pushers who did not pay their dues. When the civil chaos started, they released all the real criminals from the prisons in order to fill them with the patriots, for whom the prisons had been intended all along, flooding society with more desperados while removing good men.

Highlighting certain criminals, for example, sex offenders, and labeling them as

incurables made an excuse to enact unconstitutional laws and procedures that were later used as legal precedents to create laws targeting anyone, especially anyone displaying patriotism. Sexual crimes were chosen as the tool for this maneuver because the great shame naturally associated with sexuality was easy to turn into public emotionalism while making self-defense in the public forum by the accused socially and psychologically impossible.

"Sex offenders" were treated with public branding, ostracization, routine lie detector tests, mandatory chemical castration, and a never-ending series of added punishments and probation requirements, plus other forms of double jeopardy. Drug pushers were also vilified in order to excuse police brutality (shoot first, ask questions later), suspension of *habeas corpus*, etc.

Therefore, the precedent of illegal laws destroying our right to equality under the law, the right to be free from arbitrary search and seizure, the right to privacy, the 5<sup>th</sup> Amendment right not to testify against oneself, etc., were already established when the time came to apply them on less odious "criminals," like patriots. The *major* precedent they wanted to establish, however, was simply that the State could break any law, if it had a "good" enough reason or cause. After awhile it would just be assumed that a sufficient cause was there whenever government acted.

"But is there a good enough reason to break a good law, Father?"

"No. A good end never justified an evil means. But the statists wanted to be a law unto themselves, and they wanted their victim population to be ever liable to guilt by accusation of breaking the law, until they could prove their innocence beyond a doubt. Ultimately, a reign of terror was created by illegal legislation and its equally illegal enforcement. But the law and order types quietly bought the assumption that they were either above the law or were the law themselves. The enemy established this kind of lawful tyranny incrementally, banking on the fact that good people do not tend to argue with "the law".

It was also an important goal of terrorism to establish *scapegoating* as acceptable. This required the establishment of *mass hypocrisy*, a very useful tool in fashioning a criminal society, that is, a society that at least allows criminal things to routinely occur in its name, while looking the other way. This hypocrisy was accomplished by legalizing pornography, nude dancing, homosexuality, adultery, fornication and public immodesty

on the one hand and severely punishing a select number of passionate acts on the other hand. The presence or absence of an immature or non-consenting partner was the criteria used to make the latter illegal and the former legal. Sexual morality itself had disappeared as criteria for legality. The great hypocrisy, of course, was that society's legalized laxity in regard to sexual mores had created a whole nation of sex offenders, while being taught to point the finger and hiss at legally vulnerable "sex offenders" as all stood knee deep in their own filth.

The idea of scapegoating is to make the publicly branded wrongdoer into such a devil



that those who are not "it" fear to admit as wrong their own sins of a sexual nature, or, their sins in general. From the diabolical perspective then, the objective of scapegoating is to seal the persecuting majority in *unrepentance*, out of a fear of being the object of similarly unforgiving, hateful, unmerciful revilement that they themselves are the source of. Human respect, the fear of what others think, is the principle producing the hypocrisy of pretended virtue that creates unrepentance.

An excellent example of hypocrisy was the hysteria over sexual child abuse by a society that was *en masse* radically sexualizing its own children by raising them to believe that sexual immoralities of all kinds, even homosexual promiscuity, were okay, and allowing them to view incredible amounts of soft to hard core pornography on television, in magazines and movies, dress immodestly, and then in adolescence engage in fornication and sexual foreplay under the auspices of healthy socializing with their peers.

"All this reminds me of the satanic witch fattening Hansel for roasting day, Father. For I see that the enemy's secondary goal was to instruct people from childhood in sinful immoralities, while its primary goal was to deprive them of having a conscience about that sinful behavior, even to the point of being so blind as to condemn someone else for behavior they were probably sincerely repentant for it, while they excuse *themselves* of similar behaviour for which they were *unrepentant!* Surely, Father, this was the kind of hypocrisy that Jesus condemned so emphatically in His public life."

Your night vision is increasing very well, Phillip. Let me ask you in summary now, why did Jesus so forcefully condemn hypocrisy, the pretense of virtue where vice is really present?

"Perhaps because in hiding one's vice this pretense of virtue becomes a deadly blindness of one's own evil, such that repentance of it is impossible."

A wise answer, my Son ... I don't think I can add to it. Let me continue then with this miserable story before I loose my train of thought. The Frauds, as we said, created a social/moral problem by legalizing or allowing immortality, then treated the inevitable results of their evil work as highly illegal for the average person. Their own organized crime network was protected by their ATF, FBI and other policing agencies. These actually *produced* criminals by its many "sting operations," which were in themselves crimes tempting people to crime.

The Federal EPA agents and other radical environmentalists made sure businesses were shut down over the mere pretense of protecting birds, fish and even insects, while intending this shut down to destroy the livelihood of many human beings and to ruin whole industries. Spotted owl protection was used to practically shut down an entire lumber industry in the Northwest, followed by the importation of lumber from Communist Russia to supply that lost production. The owls were later acknowledged to

have been in no danger at all, but the ban was not reversed. Unnecessary and costly safety measures were required everywhere for the safety of people, plants, animals, scenery, etc. All of this unnecessary expenditure killed many smaller businesses, caused loss of jobs and raised prices, while taking huge amounts of tax dollars to manage.

Perhaps their main purpose, Phillip, was to exercise us all in capitulating to dictatorial idiocies by asserting the right *by force* to manage every aspect of our lives on the flimsiest pretexts, while setting up the precedence of an established policy valuing the supposed welfare of animals, plants, and all "natural resources" over the welfare of human beings.

"It sounds like they turned upside down the order God established in setting Adam over all creation, Father."

Yes, Son, and the children in government schools were literally brainwashed into thinking that way in the 80's and 90's. Youth is very idealistic and impressionable, and saving the world from dreadful polluters was held up as a cause worthy of spending one's life for.

"I see their main purpose as the inversion of values, Father, making the lesser good to take precedence over the greater."

You may be right there, Son. Let me go on, now. This really burned me up -- mandatory insurance coverage on every imaginable accident, emergency, potential failure or cost. It was another version of their "protection racket." Just as lack of expensive government-issued licenses and permits could keep a man from doing almost anything legally, the lack of insurance could also keep a person from legally employing others, working certain jobs, buying a home, car, or business, especially if money had to be borrowed to do so. Insurance rates were raised in general if claims increased, so that there was a *guaranteed profit, mandated by law*, for insurance companies. However, other businesses were heavily penalized if they "fixed prices".

"This reminds me, Father, of the extortion tactics you mentioned that the Kazars used in the east-west trade routes of southern Russia."

Good observation, Son. It had not occurred to me before. But let us not condemn a whole tribe or race; for the usual suspicion is that an evil minority engaged in extortion, thus giving a bad name to all those they probably dominated. Those given to evil always tend to run criminal businesses, or businesses where they do not have to work or produce anything but bills for others to pay. They use people, even their own people. What is right for them is what they can get away with. I too have been cheated by this kind. Extortion or thievery *is* their business; that's why the enemy always tried to take over legislative functions of government -- to make *their* crimes legal and their competitors' acts illegal or restricted or regulated by *them*.

Laws existed to make their huge corporations and the super wealthy tax free, but load the middle income people with 46% total taxes and the moderately wealthy even more. The Banksters owned the insurance companies, and the latter were second only to the banks in income earned in the world. The Banksters also owned the illegal drug trade and its protection racket. They had drugs outlawed so they could have a monopoly over it with their control of the DEA. Only banks could "launder" or appear to sanitize illegal profits. This secret, non-taxable money funded many clandestine operations, like gun running to Communist revolutionaries worldwide. Some of these monies were run through assigned bad-boy countries, like Iran, Libya, and Syria so that it would appear

that the money had originated there. But the criminal operations or terrorism that the money funded really *originated* with banksters in New York. These "terrorist States" in turn became the pretext for mobilizing an international military police force of terrifying proportions and powers that would be used to control patriots everywhere in the world.

Our greatest handicap as patriots, Phillip, the only reason we could not have destroyed these rats was the ignorant and stubborn *disbelief* of the common citizen that the whole mess was the work of conspiratorial forces. It is hard for people to believe in human minds totally dedicated to doing wicked things secretly -- but how else would they be done. People preferred to believe what the enemy's media suggested -- that it was good old human greed, ancient animosities and prejudices, etc. that caused all these problems. Therefore, more cops were needed to police average people.

Evildoers must *always* hide their deeds. They have always worked in secrecy, conspiring with others of their kind to prey on the weak, the passionate and the gullible. It makes sense that they would want to make laws to protect their activities while blaming the results of their activities on scapegoats who would have to pay up. It would only make sense that these evildoers, who wanted to control the executive and judiciary offices and law enforcement agencies, would also want to control the press. In other words, people failed to acknowledge the obvious, namely, that great organized evil existed and needed some coherent explanation, which was readily available in considering that some would always perfect themselves in evil as others perfected themselves in good, and that Satan could empower these former ones and use them in an unseen way to accomplish what humans alone would be incapable of.

Those of us who knew the truth were often discouraged, feeling powerless to change anything without greater numbers of believers who would act. And there were also many who knew of these evils but would not stick their neck out to even voice their opinion. Their discouragement and ours was part of the enemy's plan. They ridiculed all conspiratorialists in order to frighten others who knew the truth or suspected it into remaining silent or dropping their hands in futility.

Let me read to you now some of the enemy's own instructions to their agents. It is from a book called *Red Fog over America* by Commander William G. Carr, a former Canadian espionage agent. He sometimes quotes from the Enemy's operating manual called, "The Protocols of Zion." Here are some excerpts from it, which I published in my "Christian Patriot" tabloid.

"If unity of *all* people under the Fatherhood of God is the plan and purpose of the Creator then it is obviously the plan of Satan to prevent the Rule on earth of Christ the King. This being pure logic, it is obvious that the Devil inspired his agents on this earth to work to establish Internationalism as opposed to nationalism; the Devil's agents advocate dictatorships as opposed to constitutional governments. That the Illuminati conceived the Long Range Plan

for ultimate world domination, and put it into effect, is proved by the number of times it is referred to in the Protocols. Their diabolical scheme was designed for the specific purpose of defeating God's plan for creation and setting up the despotism, and tyranny, of Satan to take its place.

... In order to understand how the revolutionary movement has been developed in Canada and the United States since 1920 the reader must first realize that the World Revolutionary Movement (W.R.M.) has, for hundreds of years, been organized, financed, and directed in all countries by a small group of Internationalists which includes Bankers, Industrialists,

## 131

Medical men, Scientists, professors of Political Economy, and others who were experts in political and economic affairs.

Until 1945 the Illuminati had as rivals for World domination an International group of Militarists who were determined to obtain by Military force what the others were plotting to obtain by cunning and guile. The leaders of the World Revolutionary Movement were dominated by International Bankers. The leaders of the rival party were warlords. The leaders of the W.R.M. organized International Communism to destroy Their opponents and further their secret plans and ambitions. The War Lords organized Nazism to counteract their moves. The International Bankers were referred to as "Semites". The warlords boasted they were of "Aryan" descent.

... They organized the subversive movements; they financed and directed the operations; they decided matters of policy, but they put their plans into motion through agents whom they placed behind the scenes of governments in the capacity of "Specialists" and "Adviser." The Protocols... has this to say ...:

*"The administrators whom we will choose from among the public, with strict regard to their capacities for servile obedience, will not be persons trained in the art of government, and will therefore easily become pawns in our game in the hands of men of learning and genius who will be their advisers, specialists bred and reared from early childhood to rule the affairs of the whole world. As is well known to you, these specialists of ours have been drawing, to fit them for rule, the information they need from our political plans, from the lessons of history, from observations made of the events of every moment as it passes. ... The intellectuals of the goyim will puff themselves up with their knowledge and, without any logical verification of them, will put into effect all the information available from science, which our agent specialists have cunningly pieced together for the purpose of educating their minds in the direction we want."*

The Aryan leaders gathered all groups and organizations "RIGHT" of centre, under their wings. The Semites gathered all groups, and organizations, "LEFT" of centre, under their wings. Thus the people of the world were divided into two hostile camps.

The despots who financed, directed, and controlled the "Right" and the "Left" movements knew that they had to destroy ALL forms of NATIONAL governments and existing religions before they would have undisputed control of the wealth, natural resources, and manpower of the entire world ...

Search for an explanation for such stupid, if not criminal mal-administration, and the only place one can find the answer is in the

Protocols. Article 10, Pars. 18-19 and 20 say: "The recognition of our despot may also come before the destruction of the constitution; the moment for this recognition will come when the people, utterly wearied by the irregularities and incompetence of their rulers ... a matter which we will arrange for ... will clamour "Away with them and give us ONE KING over all the earth who will unite us and annihilate the causes of discords ... frontiers, nationalities, religions and State debts ... who will give us peace and quiet which we cannot find under our rulers and representatives"...

The next step by the conspirator is to direct their attack against the rallying points of the nation whose government they plot to overthrow, i.e., The King – The Flag – the Constitution or government. They criticize the government and expose anything detrimental of which their spies can get hold. They attack the churches as having become commercialized. They do everything in their power to remove Christian teaching

## 132

and influence in the schools and they create economic conditions which keep parents so busy earning a living that both are fully occupied. Children are left to the care of baby-sitters or attendants of one kind or another. Religion in the home becomes a thing of the past. The purpose is to break down all respect for parental and lawful authority.

Subversive agents work on the theory that twigs are easily broken one by one. One bad apple placed in a barrel will soon affect the lot. Calumny, detraction, and character assassination are used to discredit all those who try to expose their devilish activities. If "L'Infamie" doesn't silence their opponents effectively, strong-arm methods are often used ...

The Communist leaders are now busily engaged "Brainwashing" all the people they have subjugated in order to turn them into Atheistic-materialists. But the *agentur* of the Illuminati believe in the supernatural. They know they must destroy Christianity before the way is clear for Satan to rule this earth. That is why the International Conspiracy is a devilish and diabolical conspiracy.

The Directors of the Illuminati base their beliefs on the Cabalistic Rites of Satanism. If they do happen to obtain *absolute* and *undisputed* control of the *material* assets of the whole world, as promised to them by Satan, then they will organize the systematic and scientific brainwashing of the human race in order to erase all knowledge of Almighty God, His plan for Creation, and His plan to reward His Faithful Followers, with Eternal Life. The logic, and practicability, of this diabolical plot is apparent when we realize that no soul can go to Heaven if its mortal body has not loved and served Almighty God.

I can imagine some people will say: "What utter nonsense."

Let me remind those people that systematic and scientifically applied brainwashing has been experimented with by specialists who belong to the Illuminati in Nazi and Communist countries, for several years. Every person who has undergone brainwashing, admits that its results are judged by the ability of those who apply the treatment to erase the knowledge of the Power and the Glory of Almighty God from the minds of their victims.

... When Benjamin Franklin made the American Colonies prosperous by issuing Script money in proper proportion to the demands of trade and industry,

the European Bankers demanded that Script money be abolished and that their money be used in its stead. They made their demand under the threat of war and did not hesitate to involve the Colonies in war when their demands were not acceded to immediately. When President Lincoln declared he intended to challenge their power he was assassinated. When Hitler and Mussolini challenged their power World War II was fomented to destroy them.

Par. 10 of the protocols, which says: *"In order to put public opinion in our hands we must bring it into a state of bewilderment by giving expression from all sides to many contradictory opinions and for such length of time as will suffice to make the GOYIM lose their heads in the labyrinth and come to see that the best thing is to have no opinion of any kind in matters political, which it is not given to the public to understand, because they are understood only by him who guides the public. This is the first secret."*

Par. 11 continues – *"The second secret requisite for the success of our government is comprised in the following: To multiply to such an extent national failings, habits, passions, and conditions of civil life, that it will be impossible for anyone to know where he is in the resulting chaos, so that the people in consequence will fail to understand one another. This measure will also serve us in another way, namely to sow*

*discord in all parties, to dislocate collective forces, which are still unwilling to submit to us, and to discourage any kind of personal initiative which might in any way hinder our affair. There is nothing more dangerous (to our cause) than personal initiative: if it has genius behind it, such initiative can do more harm than can be done by millions of people among whom we have sown discord."*

*"We must so direct the education of the GOYIM communities that whenever they come upon a matter requiring initiative, they may drop their hands in despairing impotence. The strain which results from freedom of action saps the forces when it meets with freedom of another. From this collision arises grave moral shocks, disenchantments, failures. **BY ALL THESE MEANS WE SHALL SO WEAR DOWN THE GOYIM THAT THEY WILL BE COMPELLED TO OFFER US INTERNATIONAL POWER OF A NATURE THAT BY ITS POSITION WILL ENABLE US WITHOUT ANY VIOLENCE GRADUALLY TO ABSORB ALL STATE FORCES OF THE WORLD AND FORM A SUPER-GOVERNMENT.** In the place of the rulers of today we shall set us a bogey which will be called the Super-Government Administration." Its hands will reach out in all directions like nippers and its organizations will be of such colossal dimensions that it cannot fail to subdue all the nations of the world."*

*... We rule by force of will, because in our hands are the remnants of a once powerful party now vanquished by us. **AND THE WEAPONS IN OUR HANDS ARE LIMITLESS AMBITIONS, BURNING GREEDINESS, MERCILESS VENGEANCE, HATREDS AND MALICE.**"*

Par. 4, continues: *"It is from us that the **ALL-ENGULFING, TERROR PROCEEDS. WE HAVE IN OUR SERVICE PERSONS OF ALL OPINIONS, OF ALL DOCTRINES, RESTORING MONARCHISTS, DEMAGOGUES, SOCIALISTS, COMMUNISTS, AND UTOPIAN DREAMERS OF EVERY KIND.** We have harnessed them all to the task; each one of them on his own*

*account is boring away at the last remnants of authority, is striving to overthrow all established form of order. By these acts all STATES are in torture; they who exhort to tranquility, are ready to sacrifice everything for peace; but we shall not give them peace until they openly acknowledge our International Super-government ... and with submissiveness."*

Could anything written so many years ago so clearly portray the conditions that exist today unless it was written by the men who conceived the Master plan and intended that their progeny would carry it to its conclusion?

"But you yourselves know perfectly well that to produce the possibility of the expression of such wishes by all the nations it is indispensable to trouble in all countries the peoples' relations with their governments, so as to utterly exhaust humanity with dissension, hatred, struggle, envy, and even by the use of torture, by starvation, by the inoculation of diseases, by want, so that the Goyim sees no other issue than to take refuge in our complete sovereignty in money and in all else. BUT IF WE GIVE THE NATIONS A BREATHING SPACE THE MOMENT WE LONG FOR IS HARDLY LIKELY EVER TO ARRIVE."

The point we must never forget is this. The ONE KING the Illuminati intend to crown to rule the universe is a man who will exercise the Despotism of Satan. Only pressure of public opinion will make those who believe in a One-World Government halt before they lead us intentionally or otherwise into the Despotism of Satan.

The Epistles, (Ephesians 6, 10-17) says *"Brethren, be strengthened in the Lord and in the Might of His Power. Put on the*

*armour of God, that you may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. FOR OUR FIGHT IS NOT AGAINST FLESH AND BLOOD, BUT AGAINST PRINCIPALITIES AND THE POWERS. AGAINST THE WORLD RULERS OF THIS DARKNESS, AGAINST THE SPIRITUAL FORCES OF WICKEDNESS ON HIGH. Therefore take up the armour of God, that you may be able to resist in the evil day", ...*

... The Scriptures tell us these things I describe will come to pass. Daniel the Prophet foretold that conditions of tribulation, desolation, and abomination, would precede the second coming of Christ. ...But the fact that the Power of Satan will actually rule upon this earth for a limited time does not permit any person, who believes in God, to sit back in despair and do nothing.

"Why would Satan divide his forces into two warring camps if they were striving for the same goal, Father?"

Let me use an analogy to explain, Son. If you are in a room crowded with people and you and your partner's design is to involve all present in a brawl, how better could that be done than by the two of you engaging in a dispute in which, by prior arrangement, you intentionally arouse and divide the naturally inclined sympathies or allegiances of the audience so that some support each of you. By dramatizing and violently disputing these differences, which need not be all that serious in themselves, much less be subject to remedy by violence, you will, by example, lead all into fighting one another. When all are tired of

destroying each other, you and your friend make up and propose a preplanned compromise or solution that your wickedness desires to impose on the two factions now ready for peace. Those who dare to disagree with what *both* parties want *now* will be branded mavericks or just ignored. Few will be courageous enough to disagree, and these will be cowed into doing the will of the aroused majority or forfeit their lives or their fortunes for refusing.

"So, the whole farce is summed up in 'Let's you and him fight'."

Nicely put, Phillip. And note that despite the pretended differences between the partners, they desire the same goal. The U.S. two-party system produced such a "show" in great part. These agents among the conservatives, who represented the supposed moral majority, pretended to valiantly fight the socialist left wing Democrats, their secret partners, while actually giving into their demands, grudgingly, over time, to make it look like necessary compromise was being hammered out due to the strength of the "opposing" parties. It was a sorry show for anyone who understood the enemies' SOP. But many people could not believe Congress was full of enemy agents because most representatives came from local citizenry and they were also supposedly divided, one from another, along the lines of their constituents' interests. But this only showed their ignorance of how the enemy works to use bought-made local politicians follow seemingly reasonable agendas fashioned by the real agents of revolution in the controlling positions of power and influence.

The phony showdown between fascists and communist tyrannies in WWII and between the Allies and the Axis powers fit the example of our two brawlers. The racial differences that were played up were bogus, since there were no Semites among the so-called Jews or Zionists in Germany, but Caucasians only. Much of Hitler's persecution of Jews (and Christians) by his pure "Aryan" people was based on fraudulent distinctions among peoples of the *very same* Caucasian race. And, as I said before, when those Caucasians calling themselves Jews and "Semites" occupied Palestine in 1948, they

dispossessed real Semitic peoples under the pretended justification that they be allowed to occupy the homeland of *their fathers!* They convinced the whole world of this fraudulent claim by their controlled Press repeating it until brainwashing was accomplished by the sheer volume of unquestioned repetition. Even though one of their leading communist authors, Arthur Koestler, exposed the Kazar origin of these Yids who wanted to be called Jews in a book called *The Thirteenth Tribe*, no one dared to openly oppose their lie.

"Father, it seems that one of the enemy's principle devices was to create a problem where before there was either not one or a manageable one, and then really create a bigger problem by their solution to the problem. You have already told me this. But it is sinking in now. "

You could call them troublemakers, Phillip. The distinctions of communists vs. fascists, left vs. right, Axis vs. Allied powers, Republicans vs. Democrats, were pretenses for



representing the totality or at least the majority of people and their opinions, while such a division was actually used to manipulate everyone by falsely framing the issues as if there were no other interpretations or options.

It's like asking everyone in the room to divide into two parties, those on the right who wish to be shot by pistols, those on the left by rifles.

"In other words, Father, the enemy, by representing everyone's leanings with their own various party representatives, could move a whole people as if by an invisible hand, but actually through the agency of these party representatives who conspired together."

Exactly, Phillip. But every issue was summarized, explained, refereed and settled by the Media managing and mediating the opposition parties. The three world wars were essentially brought about by the controlled Medias. Through Propaganda and top-down power politics along with the essential ingredients of secrecy and treachery they stage-managed History.

The technique was so simple: control the Voice supposedly framing the issues and representing the various opinions, while news management teams awaited events produced by communist agent provocateurs, like Martin Luther King, for example. These provocateurs provided the coordinated fieldwork, usually a specific "newsworthy" speech or act essential to the issue being staged. The Media would publicize or favorably emphasize only those sayings or doings they wanted people to praise or ridicule. As the Media tool was developed and sophisticated and as its audience grew wiser to its ways, it went to greater and greater lengths to include dissenting or various other views, in order to pretend to give fair treatment to all opinions, even those unfavorable to their cause-of-the-day. This convinced the public that they were unbiased reporters.

A good stage manager or author of some fictional drama that closely simulates reality is likened to a god creating reality. Likewise, false propaganda had the capacity for totally reprogramming docile human minds, as one would a computer. Only the consent of gullibility by the viewer-robot was needed to "save the entry".

One of the most hideous agencies of the camouflaged American Police State were the variously named State Social Services Agencies. Their main terrorist tactic was legal "authorization" to take children from their parents on the basis of their judgement and interpretation of oftentimes vague, ambiguous, restrictive and intrusive unconstitutional laws. Children who were physically punished, bruised, left in a car unattended, etc., etc., were taken from their parents. This was the ultimate terror for these children, their

parents, their siblings and the whole community. But like most 20<sup>th</sup> century terror, it was legalized, and systematized so that human emotions, common sense and reason would not interfere with the insane measures being taken, which I likened to the use of a sledge hammer to end a headache (and the life of the one who had it) instead of an aspirin, which reason

might suggest. Another aphorism that seemed to fit well was "don't throw the baby out with the dirty bath water it's in." The term "abuse" was applied to any behavior targeted for extinction, such as parental discipline or any passionate behavior that imperfect human beings could be expected to exhibit from time to time, like anger. Spouses were arrested for arguments and fights. The expression for passionate behavior became "abuse."

"So the prime objective was to separate children from parents and husbands from wives and children, Father?"

Probably the broader objective was to destroy the authority of the husband over the wife and then the authority of the parents over children. The respect for authority in children was diminished by allowing the Community's police to overrule the parents. What made this issue particularly difficult to address was that a certain degree of community intervention is called for in serious situations. But this boundary line was constantly being crossed in both directions. "The Authorities" wanted to gain the "right" in the eyes of a terrified public mindset, to have *arbitrary power and judgement* in domestic affairs.

Financial aid was given to women and children separated from husbands and fathers in order to facilitate and lengthen separations. But, as you can imagine, each measure, like this one, had its own convenient rationale.

"Yes, who could bear to see women and children go without financial support, Father."

Men were styled as sexually, physically, emotionally, and verbally abusive and domineering, this being spearheaded by the communist front called the Women's Liberation Movement. They sought to obliterate the male leadership role vital to the sustenance and defense of a nation and of families. Women, because they were forced by an engineered economy to work, were found in every male role: police, prison guards, armed forces, truck driving, all trades, etc. Federal laws prevented employers from "discrimination" or, shall we say, choice, based on sex. Sometimes they even mandated the hiring of women. Many women affected manly mannerisms; they wore short hair and pants. Long curly hair and earrings for men were introduced as a fashion in order to further insult masculinity and suggest homosexuality, which was styled as normal and even masculine.

God's command that the woman be *subject to* her husband was ridiculed in the extreme. This destroyed authority at the most basic and universal level in society. All this devastated the confidence of men as men, appreciated and respected for the courage, determination and strength needed to keep a modest, submissive, obedient, respectful wife, to raise disciplined, industrious, morally upright children, and to establish, maintain and lead an honest, just society, secure from the lies and frauds of its moral enemies. Men and most authority figures were made the object of mockery and laughter if they tried to buck this "politically correct" tripe. A woman's duty to submit to and obey her husband was scorned, and even those good women who rejected this creed only with great difficulty evaded an actual loss of respect for the authority of their husbands. This

state of rebellion ate away at the very core or primary order upon which the family is built. It defied the order God Himself established. The only escape for the man was to either become a highly criticized, stern disciplinarian of wife and children, or be what he was expected to be, a submissive, silent, law-abiding servant of women, of public opinion and of the public "servants" supposedly representing everyone's best interests. And nothing contributed more than this abandonment of patriarchal authority to the defeminization, vanity and promiscuity of women, to family instability, juvenile delinquency, and to the general moral breakdown and rebellion against all authority.

"But didn't Jesus say in washing the feet of the Apostles that the greatest among them was the servant of all?"

"Yes, Son, but the Captain does not serve others well by pretending he is just a cabin boy; nor does the husband serve his assigned duties by abandoning his God-given place as the head. Shouldering the responsibility of leadership is great service indeed, and it requires great personal sacrifice. The notion of abdicating authority in deference to the complaints or weakness of those subject to it is cheap sophistry when mouthed by those who secretly harbor rebellion in their hearts, though they play the role of abject slavery in order to illicit pity and the "right" of rebellion.

The Eve in women displays a particular weakness to seek, often without actual awareness, to control, direct and rule over her man with passive/aggressive weapons, while hiding behind her dependency and demure, gentler nature. Knowing woman's fallen nature, God made Eve subject to her husband by a command. And Adam had to endure this tendency of his woman to rebel as a correction for his sin of rebellion, occasioned by his fault in following her lead, instead of God's lead as revealed to him in his own conscience.

"So, in following Eve's lead, Adam wrongly surrendered the God-given responsibility for doing as he knew best. So, to correct this weakness, God commanded him to rule over his wife – something he would not have had to do if they had not sinned; for if sin and its aftereffects had not entered the world, women would not have resisted man's natural leadership but would have eagerly cooperated with it."

"So you are saying that by their created nature man and woman would peacefully live together and cooperate as complementary spouses. But by their fallen nature a man tends to stray from God's guidance and the woman to stray from the guidance of God as administered through the man she is naturally inferior to and was made to help and, finally, has been made subject to by Divine command.

Yes, and in either the case of the man or the woman, pride is the seminal fault. Remember the three kinds of concupiscence that they inherited by sin: the pride of life, the pride of the eyes and the pride of the flesh. The pride of life, in conceiving excessive admiration of our natural and acquired excellence and good in general then conceives an inordinate desire for exercising our personal powers and elevating them to the status of rights. At this point man wanders from God and woman from her man.

"But if we possess these goods and these powers by nature, Father, shouldn't we have pride in them?"

Only God possesses power by nature, Son. All creatures are totally dependent on His Omnipotence. "Without me you can do nothing," Jesus said in John 15:5. Therefore, we possess all that we are as a gift, not as a personal possession to do with as we please. And so the will of God, which is expressed in our duty, our reason, or in necessity is the

proper measure or limit of our sensual appetite, not the limit of possible delight our appetite is capable of finding in the creatures which those senses apprehend; for we cannot possess creatures, not even our own selves; for all things are possessed by God, so that all things are found in and of God.

"Could I not lift my hand in the air, Father?"

No, Son, you could not. Fr. Gabriel in his book Divine Intimacy said: "Without the concurrence of divine omnipotence, the sun cannot shine, fire cannot burn, nor can flowers bloom; and man cannot perform even the slightest act."

"Then how greatly we depend upon God for everything, Father!"

Let us return to our story, Phillip, remembering to reflect often upon Him in whom we move and live and have our being.

"How foolish the pride of life and of the eyes and the flesh seem now, Father. They are based on nothing at all. Now I understand why the Saints always exhibited themselves and exhorted us to practice extreme humility."

The deeper our humility, the more profound our Faith and Hope and Trust in God, Phillip, and therefore, the more we draw power from Him. The greatest power, Son, was given the Virgin Mary, who considered herself the least of all. As the most humble of all, her cup was most empty for the power of God to fill up. To fully acknowledge God as "all" is to tap the infinite power of God.

I have tried today, Phillip, to put some flesh on the spirit of Antichrist that engulfed the world in the 20<sup>th</sup> Century. The subtlety and apparent good its myriad fronts maintained was a reason for the adoption of this hideous spirit by the unwary multitudes, as they floundered in the heavy seas, helpless in their tiny lifeboats of defiant independence in which they had brazenly left their Mother Ship -- the Catholic Church, the living Ark of Salvation. All those who survived the Chastisement would come back to her, Phillip.

"And who were these, Father?"

Those whom God knew would repent and be converted and reunited with His Holy Church, whatever false creed they may have inclined to credit before. And just as many in Israel rejected Jesus, the Messiah and were replaced in the kingdom by the receptive pagans, who gave up all to follow Jesus, so too many Catholics abandoned their Church and were replaced by heretics and pagans who gratefully recognized the Ark of Salvation afloat the high seas of our storm ravaged world.

"So, just as after the Flood God saved only the good family of Noe, after the Chastisement were saved only those who would belong to the family of the true Church?"

Yes, because God wanted a fresh start for mankind. He had determined in His great wrath to be rid of the obstinate in error and to throw the wicked into Hell.

We have glimpsed some of the basic domestic strategies of the antichrist enemy -- I

will bring our talks to a close today with a description of the enemy's military and world government strategies. The United Nations forum was developed by the Communists, led by Alger Hiss, a U.S. government official. The manufactured threat of nuclear war was used as the reason for the UN's existence, that is, to save the world from self-destruction. In other words, the UN was built upon a threat, which was based upon a hideous act of murder: the entirely unnecessary annihilation of two non-industrial Japanese cities by atomic bombs at the end of WWII -- the only two cities with significant Catholic populations. This was ordered by the Conspiracy to be able later to

point to a *graphic* example of the "nuclear threat." This threat was made much of over the years in order to keep America minding her own business as Communism swallowed up nations, freedoms and lives like a fire breathing monster.

The U.S. was effectively disarmed in the later 20<sup>th</sup> century by giving the Panama Canal to Red China, mothballing ships, reducing the size of our forces, closing military bases and ports, killing advanced weapons' programs, giving our nuclear and missile technology to Red China and stalling antiballistic missile defenses with the illogical appeal that this reduced the threat of nuclear war -- on our part, that is. Nuclear missiles, called Minutemen, were allowed because they were capable of being detonated in place by the enemies' secret electromagnetic weapons in the early "blackmail" phase of World War III. Their destruction eliminated the hope of possible retaliation against Russia, which was fully protected by an anti-ballistic missile defense system anyway.

"I am wondering about the secret weapons you mentioned, Father."

There were a number of inventions by Nichola Tesla which our scientists had been prevented from developing by traitors in our government and industry. Communist agents of a top-level government agency stole Tesla's works after his death and gave them to Communist Yugoslavia. Tesla found that all objects in the universe operated at a certain electromagnetic frequency, and that electro magnetic generators, located in different positions and tuned to emit the frequency of a target object could cause the total disintegration of the target by pulsating the electromagnetic standing waves focused upon it. The pulsations were increased in magnitude until the object disintegrated, since it is the force of electromagnetism that holds all molecular structure together. He also invented the radio, the AC electric motor, and the principles of robotics.

Many years later in the century companies in Connecticut developed huge electromagnetic generators, miles in circumference, and sent them to Russia for the purposes of "beneficial weather control." These emitted extremely low frequencies (ELF waves) and could also be aimed at major, unstable fault zones in order to trigger earthquakes. The 1999 quake in Taiwan which killed 2000 people was produced by order of Red China, I believe, as were many others. Devastating weather patterns were caused by ELF waves aimed off our

Pacific Coast to change the course of the jet streams. Crop failures, storms and famines resulted. The human brain, which normally operates at 5-6 hertz could also be targeted with these waves to produce suicidal depression at 3-4 hertz and euphoric mania at 6-7 hertz. This weapon could be focused on individuals or localized populations. Higher frequencies were used to destroy metal objects, having naturally higher frequencies, such as planes, missiles, and communication centers. Another effect these generators could produce was a super cold fusion implosion that was as devastating as conventional nuclear explosions, without the radioactive fallout, or any detectable source.

"Did they have other secret weapons, Father?"

Extremely sensitive cameras and heat sensors operated from planes or satellites preventing troops from avoiding detection by visual camouflage. Handheld laser guns were developed by 1985, which could destroy or pierce any object at a limited range. A machine was developed for the secret police of all countries that could silently read responses to questions by measuring positive or negative brainwave patterns.

But their greatest weapon was the phony peace and conversion that Russian Communism feigned a decade before striking. This was used as an excuse to financially

support the struggling democratic forces in the *former* Soviet Union, to disarm us, to allow infiltration and cooperation, and to merge U.S. and Soviet interests, while sharing information between our secret services, giving the enemy access to our military knowledge and hardware, and even access to U.S. soil. Along with our Media, *their* operatives in *our* government "bought" this Russian dead-bear-act as fact and brought us within inches of the yawning maw of a diabolical "animal" poised to devour us.

"What do you mean by dead-bear-act, Father?"

When a bear is wounded or afraid, it will play dead, only to charge when its opponent comes near enough that it cannot escape. The purpose of their phony peace and the pretense that Communism had died was to get close enough to us to destroy us in a heartbeat, without effective resistance. Their greatest weapon and their greatest victory, as I have said before, was in their propaganda.

"But you said only sleeping idiots could have fallen for it, Father."

True. But it was their propaganda which slowly created such idiots, Phillip. Our friend Mr. Belloc noted that one of our popes had said of our age: "whereas the denial of God had been confined in the past to a comparatively small number of intellectuals, *that denial gained the multitude and was acting everywhere as a social force.*"

Belloc lists slavery as the first fruit of the Antichrist's attack -- slavery to capitalism or the usurious business monopoly that creates wage slaves and total slavery to the State. Let us end our story today by reading him again:

"First, we are witnessing a revival of slavery, the necessary result of

denying free will when that denial goes one step beyond Calvin and denies responsibility to God as well as lack of power in man.

... When the mass of men are dispossessed -- own nothing -- they become wholly dependent upon the owners; and when those owners are in active competition to lower the cost of production the mass of men whom they exploit not only lack the power to order their own lives, but suffer from want and insecurity as well.

... When the mass of families in a State are without property, then those who were once citizens become virtually slaves. The more the State steps in to enforce conditions of security and sufficiency; the more it regulates wages, provides compulsory insurance, doctoring, education, and in general takes over the lives of the wage-earners, for the benefit of the companies and men employing the wage earners, the more is this condition of semi-slavery accentuated. And if it be continued for, say, three generations, it will become so thoroughly established as a social habit and frame of mind that there may be no escape from it in the countries where State Socialism of this kind has been forged and riveted on the body politic.

... The thing is still in transition: the mass of men do not yet see to what goal they are tending; but the neglect of human dignity, the potential, if not actual, denial of the doctrine of free will, have led by a natural consequence to what are already semi-servile institutions. These will become fully servile institutions as time goes on."

The second fruit Belloc lists will surprise us only for a few moments:

"... We can consider how men of our blood carried on before the Church created Christendom. What we chiefly discover is this:

That in the realm of morals one thing stands out, the unquestioned prevalence of cruelty in the unbaptized world. Cruelty will be the chief fruit in the moral field of the Modern Attack, just as the revival of slavery will be the chief fruit in the social field.

... When men apply cruel punishments, depend on physical power to

obtain effects, let loose violence in the passions of war, if all this is done in violation of their own accepted morals, it is one thing; if it is done as part of a whole mental attitude taken for granted, it is another.

Therein lies the radical distinction between this new, modern, cruelty and the sporadic cruelty of earlier Christian times. Not cruel vengeance, nor cruelty in excitement, nor cruelty in punishment against acknowledged evil, nor cruelty in repression of what admittedly must be repressed, is the fruit of an evil philosophy; though such things are excesses or sins, they do not come from false doctrine. But the cruelty which accompanies the modern abandonment of our ancestral religion is a cruelty native to the Modern Attack; a cruelty which is part of its philosophy.

The proof lies in this: that men are not shocked at cruelty, but indifferent to it. The abominations of the revolution in Russia, extended to those in Spain, are an example in point. Not only did people on the spot receive the horror with indifference, but distant observers do so. There is no universal cry of

indignation, there is no sufficient protest, because there is no longer in force the conception that man as man is something sacred. That same force which ignores human dignity also ignores human suffering.

... The last category of fruits by which we may judge the character of the Modern Attack consists of the fruits it bears in the field of the intelligence -- what it does to human reason.

When the Modern Attack was gathering, a couple of lifetimes ago, while it was still confined to a small number of academic men, the first assault upon reason began. It seemed to make but little progress outside a restricted circle. The plain man and his common-sense (which are the strong-holds of reason) were not affected. Today they are.

But reason today is everywhere decried. The ancient process of conviction by argument and proof is replaced by reiterated affirmation; and almost all the terms which were the glory of reason carry with them now an atmosphere of contempt.

See what has happened for instance to the word "logic," to the word "controversy"; note such popular phrases as "No one yet was ever convinced by argument," or again, "Anything may be proved," or "That may be all right in logic, but in practice it is very different." The speech of men is becoming saturated with expressions which everywhere connote contempt for the use of the intelligence.

But the Faith and the use of the intelligence are inextricably bound up. The use of reason is a main part -- or rather the foundation -- of all inquiry into the highest things. It was precisely because reason was given this divine authority that the Church proclaimed mystery -- that is, admitted reason to have its limits. It had to be so, lest the absolute powers ascribed to reason should lead to the exclusion of truths which the reason might accept but could not demonstrate. Reason was limited by mystery only the more to enhance the sovereignty of reason in its own sphere.

When reason is dethroned, not only is Faith dethroned (the two sub-versions go together), but every moral and legitimate activity of the human soul is dethroned at the same time." (The Great Heresies, pp 152-154)

"Father, it seems that the systematic evil that identifies the works of the Red Dragon in this modern age of which you and Belloc have spoken is based on a *loss* of God's grace in man. As man abandoned God and pushed Him from his heart and mind, God allowed man to experience what it would be like to die the living death of being without Him. He allowed Hell to come upon the earth."

I cannot improve on that summary, Phillip. I am mightily tired. I am reliving all of it, to some extent -- all that caused us to yearn at times for the escape of death and the peace of our everlasting Home in Heaven.



[{TABLE OF CONTENTS}](#)[{PREFACE}](#)[{CHAPTER I}](#) [{CHAPTER II}](#) [{CHAPTER III}](#) [{CHAPTER IV}](#) [{CHAPTER V}](#) [{CHAPTER VI}](#)[{CHAPTER VII}](#) [{CHAPTER VIII}](#) [{CHAPTER IX}](#) [{CHAPTER X}](#) [{CHAPTER XI}](#)[{Bibliography}](#)[{Bookstore}](#) [{Order Form}](#) [{Instructions}](#) [{Notice of Permissions}](#) [{Download}](#)[{Links}](#)[{FRAMES VERSION}](#)

(Requires a frames-enabled browser)

*Website contents © 1999 - 2000, [Web Designs by Doc](#). Literary content ©1999 - 2000, Dave Pedry. All rights reserved.*

## CHAPTER VII

## WARNINGS FROM HEAVEN

We see very dark clouds today, Phillip. What does this tell us? That it will rain. But, if for some reason you did not know this, and I did, and you needed to know in order to save your life, surely I, your loving father, would say to you: "Look at the clouds, it is going to rain, Phillip." And if you didn't hear me I would shout. And if you did not hear or heed, I would repeat and repeat again. This is what God did before the end. He flooded the 19<sup>th</sup> and 20<sup>th</sup> centuries with Warnings from Heaven. He used holy people as His messengers and put the Signature of His miracles all around His Messages to authenticate them for us. For not even the devil can perform a real miracle; he can only project false appearances.

God did not leave any important truth unrevealed. He warned us about the Divine and the human Chastisements to come if we did not stop sinning and allowing the enemy free reign. He pointed definitively to the infiltration of the enemy into the Church in their attempt to destroy it. He spoke of their plan for a One-World Church that would merge with their One-World Government. His greatest, most urgent warnings were of the errors promoted by His enemies that were designed to steal our Faith, the most precious gift He had given us.

Remember what Feuerbach said, " *...this being of man in community – this is God.*" If community is god, then the State, which is supposed to represent the community of men is above any individual or group in the community. But the truth is that community is an abstraction. God created individual human beings, not communities or races. Therefore, the primary relationship is between God and a human person. This is where the Catholic Faith resides, in persons, in living souls. Each person finds the hearth of his own personal home and destiny in this Faith that reveals the true God to him. This is where holiness and sanctity, reasonableness, order and all that is good is to be found in this world. Faithful souls are the building blocks of the Church and of society. They are *really united* in the unity of the one Voice of God, the Word, which speaks to *each one of them* unequivocally. This is the Community we call the Church. There is no contradiction within it, yet there is no end to the richness of diversity within it, for God deals with each human personality.

But Communism involves elite satanists playing God by merging of church and the state, while using the doctrine of their separation to keep *true religion* from "interfering" in their domination of the affairs of men. As in every case, what they say is the opposite of what they do: HYPOCRISY is the real name of their stupid "Super-State."

It was essential to Satan's forces to appear to take over the voice of the Catholic Church, in order to lead the sheep astray. Their infiltrators who entered clerical and lay positions of influence were under orders to subtly change doctrine over time, by controlling official positions and offices by propaganda and slight of hand and misrepresentations. Modernism is the error they used. Let's read this definition of it:

"The first moment, the decades of the Nineteenth Century prior to the First Vatican Council, is identified by the work of a group of

priests, chiefly German, under the leadership of Father Anton Guenther (1783-1863). Enamored with the Modern Philosophy of Descartes and Kant, alienated from the patrimony of Christian Philosophy, Guentherism taught that the dogmas of faith are infallibly true, indeed, but only with a relative truth: relative to the progress reached by science and philosophy at the time of the dogmatic definition. As this progress advances, the articles and dogmas of faith must be re-interpreted accordingly. Definitions and formulations of faith, the best possible when the Church first stated them, become outmoded with the passage of time, and quite simply must be replaced. Thus the dogmas develop intrinsically, just as science and philosophy do. There is no absolute truth in the Catholic Fact, but only a relative truth, always more perfectible.

It is this "prescription," as the Early church termed it, this "Ordinary and Universal Magisterium" in the words of Vatican I, which Modernism sets aside. Unlike earlier heretical movements, it takes its position not against this or that particular Article of Faith, but against the profession of the Apostolic Faith as such. This is done by a re-interpretation, as it is called, of the entire Creed in the light of Modern Philosophy. As a writer in the Encyclopedia Britannica puts it accurately, the Modernists "sought to re-interpret traditional Catholic teaching in the light of nineteenth century philosophical, historical and psychological theories." Participating in the essential characteristics of Modern Philosophy as such, in its Cartesian, Spinozan and Kantian metaphysics, it introduces into Religious thought the eclipse of the transcendent personal God of Revelation characteristic of Modern Philosophy, and hence its shift toward man-centrism, toward positivism and empiricism in epistemology. Faith, the very heart of religion, is the first element to suffer this reinterpretation: it is now an experience of the Divine (as the God of Abraham comes to be called) and not an intellectual assent to the Word of God revealed and committed to a teaching Church to hand on by means of the human discourse of Evangelization and Catechesis."

Modernism was simply Communism warring against the Church while pretending to be of the Church. But it was really the church of man or the anti-church trying to misrepresent and discredit the true Church it tried to impersonate.

Sometimes the enemy published phony private revelations, like those at Medjugorje, Yugoslavia in order to scandalize the pious and lead astray the foolish by sowing error and confusion, while discrediting true apparitions by parody. Those of us who took it upon ourselves to test the spirits and to publish the true Messages of Heaven had to use several criteria: 1) the complete orthodoxy or purity of doctrine in the Messages, 2) the proven sanctity of the seer, 3) the proven miracles, and 4) the agreement of the Messages' statements with other Messages already known to be true. We leaned on Tradition most heavily; for, as St. Paul said: *"Therefore, brethren, stand fast: and hold the traditions which you have learned, whether by word, or by our epistle. (2 Thessalonians 2:12-14) and "But though we (Bishops), or an angel from heaven, preach a doctrine to you besides that which we have preached to you, let him be anathema."* (Galatians 1:8)

The approval of the Pope was available only up to Fatima in 1917. And the enemy within fought and delayed this approval for 13 years. In 1966 Pope Paul VI 'abrogated Canon Law articles 1399 and 2318, permitting us to follow and publish

private revelations without ecclesiastical approval, provided that they did not endanger Faith and Morals.' A *good* bishop's approval or disapproval was also a valuable indication of authenticity, as at Medjugorje, where the bishop disapproved of and condemned these supposed revelations from the beginning. But the disapproval of bishops or clergy known to be liberals or heretical could also be valuable. Their thumbs down were an indication that the Messages were probably true.

Phillip, let us now review Catholic prophecy concerning the latter times up to the 1990's. We begin with Holy Scripture:

"But of the times and moments, brethren, you need not, that we should write to you: for yourselves know perfectly, that the day of the Lord shall so come, as a thief in the night. For when they shall say, peace and security; then shall sudden destruction come upon them, as the pains upon her that is with child, and they shall not escape. But you, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief. For all you are the children of light, and children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkness." (1 Thessalonians 5:1-5)

"And then that wicked one shall be revealed whom the Lord Jesus shall kill with the spirit of his mouth: and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming, him, whose coming is according to the working of Satan, in all power, and signs, and lying wonders, and in all seduction of iniquity to them that perish; because they receive not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. Therefore God shall send them the operation of error, to believe lying: that all may be judged who have not believed the truth, but have consented to iniquity." (2 Thessalonians 2:8-11)

A life of unrepentant immorality prevents one from avoiding the "operation of error," but the "children of Light" shall not be taken by surprise with the coming of the Lord. Modernist clergy liked to repeat every year that you cannot know the day or hour, so don't worry about it; don't believe anything you hear; don't pass the word along. Do nothing; just be ready all the time to save your soul. They never quoted St. Paul: "*despise not prophecy, but test the spirits.*" And they did not understand how this verse applied to *them*: "Know also this, that in the last days shall come on dangerous times. Men shall be lovers of themselves, covetous, haughty, proud ... having an appearance indeed of godliness, but denying the power thereof." (II Timothy 3:1-2,5)

At least 99% of the pastors in my time, Phillip, did not recognize the signs of the times. They did not prepare their flocks. They were infected with Modernism and humanism, and doctrinal and liturgical errors of all kinds. They especially reviled all the Warnings from Heaven. They would not speak to you or answer you concerning these matters. They were bound by human respect and false authority. We were told by heaven that the clergy was under especially heavy attack by the evil spirits let loose on the earth and that they needed our prayers greatly.

In the Black Mass of the Satanists the congregation actually "kissed the butt" of the priest. This phrase became a common term to describe the fear of human opinion or servile human respect, the greatest tool of Satan. In his services of adoration it was a sign of worshipping him. Those motivated by human respect also served him, indirectly worshipping a principle of his evil kingdom.

"So those who acted out of servile human respect were actually worshipping Satan?"

146

If they did so not out of human weakness, but as habitual principle, yes, Phillip, they were. Here is a good description of it:

"To give ourselves up to the spiritual life is to put ourselves out of harmony with the world around us. We make a discord even with much that is amiable and affectionate, and with which, as natural virtue, we cannot be altogether without sympathy. We live in a different world, have different interests and speak a different language, and the two worlds will not mingle. Grace holds us in one world, nature draws us down again into the other ...

It (human respect) is as miserable as it is evil ... No slavery is more degraded and unhappy. What a misery to be ashamed of our duties and principles! ... Religion which ought to be our peace, becomes our torment. ... A general wish to please, a laying ourselves out in particular subject matters in order to please, building castles in the air and imagining heroic acts, reflecting on the praise bestowed upon us, and giving way to low spirits when dispraised – these are all manifestations of this horrible human respect.

It is the death of all religion. The especial task of Christians is the realization of the invisible world. They have different standards of right and wrong from the votaries of earth. They live inextricably mixed up with the children of the world, as men using the same language with different meanings and the confusion and apparent deceit grow worse every day."

In order to carry on our mission, Phillip, we had to obey Jesus' summons to suffer reproach and disfavor as He and His Saints did before us. Listen:

"Those who love the Church, the Body of Christ, will suffer as did our Lord, who is 'the Way, the Truth, and the Life.'

"Whom the Lord loveth, He chastiseth; and He scourgeth every son whom He receiveth." (Hebrews 12:6)

"And all that will live Godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution." (II Timothy 3:12)

Our Lord Jesus Christ was betrayed by one of His chosen Apostles, denied by His Vicar St. Peter, condemned in plenary council, and crucified at the instigation of the Jews, His own priests and people."

Our last five Popes had been murdered. Millions and millions of Catholics had been murdered in our own generation. But no servant of human respect could add these things up to see that we were in the "Last Times." They were so disconnected with Christ's Suffering in

His own Church that they thought the end times were *way* far into the future. Some thought, Scripture concerning the end times was just a didactic myth, like the stories of Adam, the Flood, Job, and Jonah.

Our priests seemed to regard most highly the "wisdom" coming out of their own mouths. They were not simply faithful witnesses to Christ and His Church; they were faithful witnesses to their own conceit. With this leadership the laity was in great danger. Each person had to shoulder responsibility for their own education and guidance by the true doctrine and tradition of the Church.

I am becoming irritated, Son. Let us move on to the ancient prophecies alluding to our times and just keep going. The first thing to clear up though is a confusion about the Last Times. Whether Christ would come in a Day of the Lord, a prejudgement, before He came in the Final Judgement at the end of time. Here we consult at length an

eminent Doctor of Theology, Rev. Benjamin Martin Sanchez, in his book The Last Times:

#### THE LAST TIMES AND THE END OF THE WORLD

Since some lamentably confuse the "last times," with the "end of the world," I shall first explain this theme and clarify it with the words of the prophets.

As I indicated, in the prologue, the "last times", according to the Bible, are those times characterized by a "lack of faith" and are the last times of the Messianic era, which we can denominate as the "times of incredulity."

The following Biblical texts prove this premise: II St. Peter 3\_3-4; St. Jude 1:17-18; II Timothy 3:1-5; II Thess.2:1-11.

In those times, there will be a judgment of nations or a great chastisement upon the world, which the prophets announced frequently, because men will be living far from God and will turn their backs to the Gospel of Christ.

The world will come out of the chastisement purified. After the punishment a period of wonderful peace and sanctity will follow during which time Christ will reign "*from one end of the world to the other.*" During His reign "*all His enemies will fall at His feet*" and they will render Him their vassalage. His Church will be gloriously triumphant.

The private messages and prophecies we present, as a continuation, agree perfectly, in every detail, with the texts of the prophets who are quoted hereafter. Let me reiterate, the purification of the world should not be confused with the "final judgment" about which the Bible tells us not even the angels of heaven know the date.

That which is announced is not the end of the world (it cannot be announced) but a judgment of nations, a minor judgment, as the Message of Heede, Germany, warns us or a miniature judgment as Theresa Neumann also announced.

We confirm this assertion with the ensuing texts foretelling "a great chastisement" coming upon the world, after which there will remain a small number of inhabitants who will enjoy a great peace and who will truly form the

real people of God, continuing to invoke Him.

Isaias 24:1-6. The thought of the prophet is: because the earth has been profaned by its inhabitants it will be devastated and there will only remain a few people upon it.

This small number of survivors is reflected in the following imagery telling us that because of the punishment which shall overcome the world, "*it shall be thus in the midst of the earth, in the midst of the earth, in the midst of the people, as if a few olives, that remain, should be shaken out of the olive tree: or grapes, when the vintage is ended.*" (Isaias 24:13) Therefore, there will remain some inhabitants after the great catastrophe, even though only a few, it is, nevertheless, an evident sign that it is not the end of the world.

Isaias 66: 15-16; 19 and 23. There are many who doubt that the Gospel has been preached to all the world. However, it is one thing to have the Gospel preached and quite another to have it accepted. Therefore, the words of Christ, "*And this Gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in the whole world, for a testimony to all nations, and then shall the consummation come.*" (St. Matt. 24:14) will be fully accomplished after the world catastrophe, or judgment of the nations, announced by the prophets, conforming to the words of Isaias. Then, too, all will be

## 148

fulfilled as our Lord said: "*And there shall be one fold and one shepherd.*" (Eze. 37:24; St. John 10:16)

Sophonias 1:14-17; 3:8-9, 13. Please note that after this judgment some survivors do remain, invoking the name of God, so it is therefore quite clear that if there are some survivors, after he executes His just sentence upon the nations, on the "*day of the Lord,*" it cannot be the end of the world. One is very different from the other.

Zacharias 13:8-9. "*And there shall be in all the earth, saith the Lord, two parts in it shall be scattered, and shall perish: But the third Part shall be left therein.*

*And I will bring the third part through the fire, and will refine them as silver is refined; and I will try them as gold is tried. They shall call on My name, and I will hear them. I will say: Thou art My people: and they shall say: The Lord is my God."*

Note, that in the above text, there is to come a great chastisement over the earth, where only a third part remains and that they will be purified and will continue to invoke the name of God.

Other parts of the Bible likewise confirm that once the universe is renewed, it will serve as the scene of human life. (II St. Peter 3:10-13)

We could continue to cite many other texts about the same theme of the judgment of the nations, where the wicked will perish, however, it is sufficient to give the preceding to demonstrate that the universal judgment, which will be public, social and collective, against the nations, is not the final judgment nor the end of the world.

A modern Scripture scholar, Fr. Garcia Ramos, C.M.F., has given us a clarification about this question: "As there are two ways of judging the dead, the personal and the universal so, also, there are two kinds of judgments of the living which are the same, the personal and the universal, according to which the Lord punishes a single nation (the day of the Lord against Egypt, against Jerusalem, against Babylonia, etc.) and that of all nations and peoples collectively at the same time."

The universal judgment of the living we simply call universal judgment and that of the dead is called the final judgment. The final judgement of the dead is postponed for another time, the end of the world.

The distinction is already expressed in the dogmatic formula: "*And He will come again to judge the living and the dead,*" which is seen various times in Holy Scriptures. (Acts 10:42; II Tim. 4:1; I Peter 4:5)

Now, we shall present a very interesting prophecy about Jerusalem and some of the evangelical texts containing words of Jesus Christ which seemingly refer to the *last times* omitting those which make a full reference to the end of the world.

TIMES OF ANGUISH (St. Matt. 24; St. Mark 13; St. Luke 21)

THE GREAT TRIBULATION (St. Matt. 24:21-24; St. Mark 13: 19-22)

*"For in those days shall be such tribulations as were not from the beginning of the creation which God created until now, neither shall be. And unless the Lord had shortened the days, no flesh should be saved: but for the sake of the elect which He hath chosen, He hath shortened the days ... for there shall rise up false Christs and false prophets, and they shall show signs and wonders, to seduce (if it were possible) even the elect."*

The "*elect,*" without a doubt, are the "*remnant*" who are left on earth and who will be preserved by God from death during the great catastrophe or judgment of the nations.

How will this tribulation be for men? Jesus Christ has already told us: "*such as hath not been from the beginning of the world until now, neither shall be.*" St. John, in the Apocalypse, speaks to us about the seven trumpets that are like divine commands, which will bring upon the world those calamities God uses to exercise His judgments. We are told that the chastisements are so great "*upon those who have not the sign of God on their foreheads*" that their "*torment was as the torment of a scorpion when he striketh a man*" and that "*in those days men shall seek death, and shall not find it: and they shall desire to die, and death shall fly from them.*" (Apoc. 9: 5-6)

*"Woe, woe, woe to the inhabitants of the earth: by reason of the rest of the voices of the three angels, who are yet to sound the trumpet."* (Apoc. 8:13)

These will be followed by cosmic catastrophies, hard and calamitous times, "*And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, by reason of the confusion of the roaring of the sea and of the waves; men withering away for fear, and expectation of what shall come upon the whole world. For the powers of heaven shall be moved.*" (St. Luke 21: 25-26)

In the predictions of Jesus Christ there appears the revelation of two events intertwined; the destruction of Jerusalem and the universal ruin at the



end of the times. The first was simply a pale image of the terrible desolation that comes later. If the prophecy about Jerusalem was fulfilled, we should surely believe that all the other things Jesus predicted will be fulfilled, too.

EXHORTATION CONCERNING VIGILENCE (St. Luke 17: 26-30; 21: 34-36)

*"And as it came to pass in the days of Noe, so shall it be in the days of the Son of man. They did eat and drink, they married wives, and were given in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark; and the flood came and destroyed them all.*

*"Likewise as it came to pass in the days of Lot: they did eat and drink, they bought and sold, they planted and built. And in the day that Lot went out of Sodom; it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all. Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man shall be revealed.*

*"And take heed to yourselves, lest perhaps your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting and drunkenness, and the cares of this life, and that day come upon you suddenly. For as a snare shall it come upon all that sit upon the face of the whole earth.*

*"Watch ye therefore, praying at all times, that you may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that are to come, and to stand before the Son of man."*

Jesus Christ announced to His apostles, referring to the destruction of Jerusalem, that *"when you shall see Jerusalem compassed about with an army; then know that the desolation thereof is at hand. Then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains; and those who are in the midst thereof, depart out: and those who are in the countries, not enter into it."* (St. Luke 21: 20-21)

The Christians, of Jerusalem, who had taken into account this prophecy, left the holy city before its downfall, retiring to Pella on the other side of the Jordan, and so were saved. However, when Jesus Christ refers to the great chastisement which is to burst upon the world, He simply tells us that it will come suddenly, without warning, *"in that*

*hour we least expect"* and for this reason we should be prepared everyday. We should be even more prepared when we see the foretold signs because, *"the day of the Lord shall come as a thief; in which the heavens shall pass away with great violence, and the elements shall be melted with heat, and the earth and the works which are in it, shall be burnt up. Seeing then that all these things are to be dissolved, what manner of people ought you be in holy conduct and godliness. Looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day of the Lord ...?"* (II St. Peter 3:10-12)

#### PROPHECIES OF THE APOSTLES

##### I Thessalonians 5:1-3

##### II Thessalonians 2:1-12

One of the characteristics of the *"last times"* will be the general apostasy. The apostasy will be a religious defection, a separation or a seduction brought to a head by *false messiahs* ...

The *"man of sin"* is the Antichrist whose triumph will lead men to an apostasy, *"the mystery of iniquity already worketh,"* which is working in the world disguised in discord and confusion. Actually, at the present time, one can

note the infiltration of an apostasy everywhere and it is aided by the attitude of so-called Christians who are surrendering to error instead of defending the dogmatic truths of their faith and who are accommodating themselves, in their thinking, to a rationalized world, heeding theories that kill their faith.

... But the worst of all, is that many of the apostates, for the large part, are staying within the Church (II Tim. 3:1-7) and infecting others. (Gal. 5:9)

A most impressive announcement of Christ about the defection from the faith, despite the promise of His assistance to the Church until the consummation of the centuries, is: "*But yet the Son of man, when He cometh, shall He find, think you, faith on earth?*" (St. Luke 18:8) ... And directly connected to the above another equally important announcement of His: "*And because iniquity hath abounded, the charity of many shall grow cold.*" (St. Matt. 24:12)

II TIMOTHY 3:1-5; 4:2-4.

II ST. PETER 2:1-2; 3:1-13.

*"But we look for new heavens and a new earth according to His promises, in which justice dwelleth."*

I ST. JOHN 2:18-23; II ST. JOHN 1:7

... "*This is Antichrist, who denieth the Father and the Son.*

... Many are now actually falling into error, but they are those who never sincerely adhered to the truth of the faith.

ST. JUDE 1:8, 12-21

... "*Now of these Enoch also, the seventh from Adam prophesied, saying: Behold, the Lord cometh with thousands of His saints. To execute judgment upon all, and to reprove all the ungodly ...*"

#### COMMENTARIES OF THE HOLY FATHERS AND THEOLOGIANs

1) *St. Augustine*, in his Commentary on the 7<sup>th</sup> Psalm, says: "*There will be few with pure and sincere faith among the Christians,*" adding "*The antichrist will be seated in the temple, that is, in the Church, as if the people of God were formed of a multitude of the impious.*"

2) *St. Ephraim*, in his treatise "Of the Consummation of the Century," assures that "*when the Antichrist comes the apostasy of the century will be completed.*"

3) *St. Hippolytus* (martyr of the III Century) in his treatise "Of the Consummation of the World," recognizes that "*the seduction will fill the entire world;*" that the *deserted* city of Isaias, Chapter 1, is the Church; then the pastors will be converted into wolves until the end when all will believe in the Antichrist.

... The results we obtain from these texts and commentaries show us that in the epoch of the *end of the times* there will be very little faith and that very few will still persevere. Therefore, disorder and dissention will reign due to the ambition and the spirit of pride men will possess which carries in itself the confusion of ideas.

The apostasy will be general and this will be caused by habits' more than

doctrines, since the Apostles tell us of the abundance of concupiscences of the heart which will be produced by a corrupting naturalism causing the faith to cool. There will not be any life of piety, but only men with an exterior or outward appearance of virtue who will, in fact, be far from God.

## PROPHECIES OF THE BLESSED VIRGEN IN SOME OF HER MESSAGES

### 1. Message Given to the World at Fatima.

In 1917, the Blessed Virgin appeared at Fatima, Portugal, to three young shepherds, Lucia, Francisco and Jacinta, ranging in age from ten to seven years. Lucia is the only one of the three seers still alive, presently living in the Convent of Descalced Carmelite nuns of Coimbra, north of Fatima.

The Message, or secret of Fatima, has three parts. The first was the vision of Hell; the second Lucia tells us was:

"As if to ask for help, we raised our eyes to the Lady, who told us, with kindness and sadness: 'You have seen hell where the souls of poor sinners go. To save them, God wishes to establish on earth the devotion to My Immaculate heart. If people do what I tell you many souls will be saved and there will be peace.

But if it is not done and if the world does not cease offending God, Divine Justice will manifest itself with newer and even greater punishments. Russia will scatter her errors throughout the world, provoking wars and persecutions of the Church. The good will be martyred, the Holy Father will have much to suffer, and various nations will be destroyed...

This war (1914-1918) will soon end, but if men do not cease to offend God, another and a worse war will begin during the next pontificate.'"

... the child, Jacinta, later said something she repeated on her deathbed: "If men will repent, God will pardon them, but if they do not amend their lives, there will come upon the earth the most terrible chastisement ever known."

These extracts are, briefly, the first two parts of the Fatima Message.

... Although, the third part of the secret of Fatima remains hidden ... we can dimly see what it might contain through another document already published.

**A MESSAGE OF LUCIA OF FATIMA** (Note: This was given to Father Agustin Fuentes who was, at the time, the postulator of the Cause of Beatification of the two little Seers, Francisco and Jacinta.)

"I bring you a message of extreme urgency: the Holy Father has permitted me to visit Lucia.

She received me sadly. She was very thin and quite afflicted. Upon seeing me she said: "Father, our Lady is very unhappy because they have not taken her message of 1917 seriously. Neither the good nor the bad have paid any attention to it. The good continue their way without preoccupying themselves with it, they do not heed Her celestial requests.

The bad walk through life swollen with perdition, not taking into account the punishment that threatens them. Believe me, Father, God will chastise the world very soon. Think, Father, about all the souls who will fall into Hell. This will happen because no one prays, because they do not do penance.

All this is the reason why the Blessed Virgin is sad. Father, tell everyone that our Lady has, frequently, announced to me that many nations will

disappear off the face of the earth. Russia is the scourge chosen by God to punish mankind, if we, through prayer and the sacraments, do not obtain the grace of their conversion. Tell them, Father, tell them that the devil has begun a decisive battle against our Lady, because what most afflicts the Immaculate heart of Mary and the Sacred heart of Jesus is the fall of the souls of religious and priests.

The devil knows that when religious and priests fail in their beautiful vocations they carry along with them many souls into hell. And now, precisely, is the moment to stop the chastisement of Heaven. We have at our disposition two very efficacious means of doing this: *prayer and sacrifice*.

"The devil does everything he can to distract us and take away our liking for prayer; we shall save ourselves or condemn ourselves together.

Furthermore, Father, it is now necessary to tell the people that they should not wait for a call to penitence and to prayer from the Holy Father, nor from the Bishops, nor the pastors, nor the Superiors. It is the right moment for them to use their own initiative in fulfilling good and holy works and reform their lives as the Holy Virgin desires.

The devil desires to strengthen himself through consecrated souls; he tries to corrupt them so he can deceive others into a final impenitence. He uses many tricks even the ruse of suggesting tardiness in entering a religious life.

The results are a sterility of interior life and a coldness among the laity keeping them from renouncing pleasures and from offering a total immolation of themselves to God.

Tell them, Father, that two things are the basis of the sanctification of Jacinta and Francisco, the sorrow of our Lady and the vision of hell.

If it is as if our Lady were between two swords: On one side She sees humanity obstinate and indifferent facing the announced chastisements and on the other side She sees how we profane the Sacraments and ignore the punishment which is coming ever nearer and nearer, remaining incredulous, sensuous and materialistic. Our Lady has said: "We are on the border of the last times."

Our Lady has told me three times:

a) First: She has affirmed that the devil has begun a decisive battle, that is to say, from which one or the other will win or lose. *We are with God or we are with the devil.*

b) Second: She repeated to me that the last remedies given to the world are the Holy Rosary and the devotion to the Immaculate Heart of Mary.

c) Third: She told me that other means of salvation have been despised by men many times. In Her anguish She offers us the last anchor of salvation which is Herself (perhaps the other means were Her numerous apparitions, signs of tears, messages of various seers scattered throughout the world).

Our Lady has also said that if we will not listen and continue to offend God, we will not be pardoned. Father, it is urgent to understand this terrible reality, we do not wish to frighten souls, but it is an urgent call to humanity.

Since the Blessed Virgin has given such a great remedy as the

Rosary, there does not exist a single material, spiritual, national or international problem that cannot be solved through the Holy Rosary and our sacrifices. To

pray the Rosary with love and piety will console Mary and erase the numerous tears of Her Immaculate Heart." (taken from the "Messaggero del Cuore di Maria" No. 8-9 August-September, 1961, Rome, Italy)

THE SECRET OF LA SALETTE in Melanie's own words

"Melanie, what I am about to tell you now will not always be a secret. You may make it public in 1858.

The priests, ministers of my Son, the priests, by their wicked lives, by their irreverence and their impiety in the celebration of the holy mysteries, by their love of money, their love of honours and pleasures, the priests have become cesspools of impurity. Yes, the priests are asking vengeance, and vengeance is hanging over their heads. Woe to the priests and to those dedicated to God who by their unfaithfulness and their wicked lives are crucifying my Son again! The sins of those dedicated to God cry out towards heaven and call for vengeance, and now vengeance is at their door, for there is no one left to beg mercy and forgiveness for the people. There are no more generous souls, there is no one left worthy of offering a stainless sacrifice to the Eternal for the sake of the world.

God will strike in an unprecedented way.

Woe to the inhabitants of the earth! God will exhaust His wrath upon them, and no one will be able to escape so many afflictions together.

The chiefs, the leaders of the people of god have neglected prayer and penance, and the devil has bedimmed their intelligence. They have become wandering stars which the old devil will drag along with his tail to make them perish. God will allow the old serpent to cause divisions among those who reign in every society and in every family. Physical and moral agonies will be suffered. God will abandon mankind to itself and will send punishments which will follow one after the other for more than thirty-five years.

The Society of men is on the eve of the most terrible scourges and of gravest events. Mankind must expect to be ruled with an iron rod and to drink from the chalice of the wrath of God.

May the curate of my Son, Pope Pius IX never leave Rome again after 1859; may he, however, be steadfast and noble, may he fight with the weapons of faith and love. I will be at his side. May he be on his guard against Napoleon: he is two-faced, and when he wishes to make himself Pope as well as Emperor, God will soon draw back from him. He is the master-mind who, always wanting to ascend further, will fall on the sword he wished to use to force his people to be raised up.

Italy will be punished for her ambition in wanting to shake off the yoke of the Lord of Lords. And so she will be left to fight a war; blood will flow on all sides. Churches will be locked up or desecrated. Priests and religious orders will be hunted down, and made to die a cruel death. Several will abandon the faith, and a great number of priests and members of religious orders will break away from the true religion; among these people there will even be bishops.

May the Pope guard against the performers of miracles. For the time has come when the most astonishing wonders will take place on the earth and in the air.

In the year 1864, Lucifer together with a large number of demons will be unloosed from hell; they will put an end to faith little by little, even in those dedicated to God. They will blind them in such a way, that, unless they are blessed with a special grace, these people will take on the spirit of these angels of hell; several religious institutions will lose all faith and

will lose many souls.

Evil books will be abundant on earth and the spirits of darkness will spread everywhere a universal slackening in all that concerns the service of God. They will have great power over Nature: there will be churches built to serve these spirits. People will be transported from one place to another by these evil spirits, even priests, for they will not have been guided by the good spirit of the Gospel which is a spirit of humility, charity and zeal for the glory of God. On occasions, the dead and the righteous will be brought back to life.

...

Everywhere there will be extraordinary wonders, as true faith has faded and false light brightens the people. Woe to the princes of the church who think only of piling riches upon riches to protect their authority and dominate with pride.

The Vicar of my son will suffer a great deal, because for a while the Church will yield to large persecution, a time of darkness and the Church will witness a frightful crisis.

The true faith to the Lord having been forgotten, each individual will want to be on his own and be superior to people of same identity, they will abolish civil rights as well as ecclesiastical, all order and all justice would be trampled underfoot and only homicides, hate, jealousy, lies and dissention would be seen without love for country or family.

The Holy Father will suffer a great deal. I will be with him until the end and receive his sacrifice.

The mischievous would attempt his life several times to do harm and shorten his days but neither him nor his successor will see the triumph of the Church of God.

All the civil governments will have one and the same plan, which will be to abolish and do away with every religious principal, to make way for materialism, atheism, spiritualism and vice of all kinds.

In the year 1865, there will be desecration of holy places. In convents, the flowers of the Church will decompose and the devil will make himself like the King of all hearts. May those in charge of religious communities be on their guard against the people they must receive, for the devil will resort to all his evil tricks to introduce sinners into religious orders, for disorders and the love of carnal pleasures will be spread all over the earth.

France, Italy, Spain and England will be at war. Blood will flow in the streets. Frenchman will fight Frenchman, Italian will fight Italian. A general war will follow which will be appalling. For a time, God will cease to remember France and Italy because the Gospel of Jesus Christ has been forgotten. The wicked will make use of all their evil ways. Men will kill each other, massacre each other even in their homes.

At the first blow of His thundering sword, the mountains and all nature will tremble in terror, for the disorders and crimes of men have pierced the vault of the heavens. Paris will burn and Marseille will be engulfed. Several cities will be shaken down and swallowed up by earthquakes. People will believe that all is lost. Nothing will be seen but murder, nothing will be heard but the clash of arms and blasphemy.

The righteous will suffer greatly. Their prayers, their penances and their tears will rise up to heaven and all of God's people will beg for forgiveness and mercy and will plead for my help and intercession. And then Jesus Christ, in an act of His justice and His great mercy will command His angels to have all His enemies put to death. Suddenly, the persecutors of the Church of Jesus Christ

and all those given over to sin will perish and the earth will become desert-like. And then peace will be made, and man will be reconciled with God. Jesus Christ will be served, worshipped and glorified. Charity will flourish everywhere. The new kings will be the right arm of the

## 155

holy Church, which will be strong, humble, pious in It's poor but fervent imitation of the virtues of Jesus Christ. The Gospel will be preached everywhere and mankind will make great progress in it's faith, for there will be unity among the workers of Jesus Christ and man will live in fear of God.

This peace among men will be short-lived. Twenty-five years of plentiful harvests will make them forget that the sins of men are the cause of all the troubles of this earth."

## MESSAGE OF HEEDE, 1937, Heede, Germany

"... The parish pastor of Heede says as follows:

We possess unequivocal and irrefutable evidence about the truth of the apparitions of Jesus Christ. ... the message of Heede:

Humanity has not heeded My Blessed Mother, who appeared in Fatima, to exhort everyone to penitence. Now, I have come, in this last hour, to admonish the world. The times are grave. Men should do penance for their sins

...

I am near. The earth will tremble and will suffer. It will be terrible. A *minor judgment*. For those who are not in a state of grace it will be frightful. The angels of My justice are now scattered all over the world. Men do not listen to My calls. They close their ears, resist My graces and refuse My mercy, My love and My merits. They will agonize in the blindness of their faults. Hatred and greed fills the hearts of men. All this is the work of Satan. The world sleeps in a dense darkness.

This generation deserves to be annihilated, but I desire to show Myself as merciful. Great and terrible things are being prepared. That which is about to happen will be terrible, like nothing ever seen since the beginning of the world.

All those who have suffered, in these last times, are My martyrs and they prepare the newly converted of My Church. That which will shortly happen, will greatly surpass everything that has ever happened until now. The Mother of God and the angels will intervene. Hell will believe that victory is theirs, but I will seize it from them. Many blaspheme Me and, because of this, I shall allow all kinds of misfortunes to rain upon the earth for, through this, many will be saved. Blessed are those who suffer everything in reparation for those who offend Me.

My beloved children the hour is near. Pray incessantly and you will not be confounded. I unite My elect. They will come together, at the same time, from all parts of the world and they will glorify Me.

I come. Blessed are those who will be prepared. Blessed are those who hear me."

## MESSAGE OF THE BLESSED VIRGIN MARY TOLD TO SISTER ELENA

AIELLO (this Message was reproduced with the Imprimatur of the Bishop of Cadiz-Cueta in 1959)

"Listen well to what I tell you and announce it to everyone. My heart is

saddened by the many afflictions which threaten the world. The justice of our Heavenly Father is gravely offended.

Men continue to live willfully in their sins. The wrath of God is near at hand. The world will be visited by great misfortunes, by bloody revolutions, by terrible hurricanes and floods of rivers and seas.

Raise your voice until the priests of God heed My messages and advise men that the time is near and if they do not convert and return to God through prayers and sacrifices, the world will be involved in a new war. The dictators, of the world, infernal creatures, will destroy the churches, profane the Holy Eucharist and destroy the most cherished and holy things.

In that new pitiless war, much that men have constructed will be

## 156

destroyed. Clouds with lightning rays of fire and a tempest of fire will pass over the whole world and the punishment will be the most terrible ever known in the history of mankind. It will last 70 hours. The wicked will be crushed and eliminated. Many will be lost because they stubbornly remained in their sins. Then they will feel the force of light over darkness. The hours of darkness are near.

I am bending over the world and detain the justice of God, otherwise, these things would have already happened. Prayer and sacrifices are needed. Men must return to God and to My Immaculate heart, Mediator for men, then, at least, part of the world will be saved.

Speak out loudly. Propagate these words everywhere as a true echo of My voice. Make them known because it will help to save many souls and impede much destruction of the Church and the world."

### BLESSED ANNA MARIA TAIGI (1837 AD)

Events she predicted:

Our Lord announced to her that "after the purification of the world and the Church and the uprooting of all of the bad weeds," He would prepare a renewal, a miraculous triumph of His mercy, adding: "My all-powerful hand will once again put order wherever human force is impotent."

Then He added: "God will send two punishments, one in the form of wars, revolutions and dangers originating on earth, the other will be sent from heaven. There will come upon the earth an inner darkness that will last three days and three nights. Nothing will be visible and the air will be pestilent and foul and will harm, although not exclusively, the enemies of religion.

During the three days of darkness artificial light will fail, only blessed candles will burn. During those days of darkness the faithful should remain in their houses, praying the Holy Rosary and asking God for mercy.

All the enemies of the Church, known and unknown, will perish all over the world during the universal darkness, with the exception of a few who will be converted. St. Peter and St. Paul will intervene in the election of a new Pope." (This is part of the beatification documentation.)

Finally, in a vision she had: "I saw the earth enveloped in flames, many buildings crumbling, the earth and heaven seemed to be in agony."

"Millions of men will die by steel, some in war, others in civil strife; other millions will perish in an unforeseen death. After this trial there will be a



universal rebirth. This change will happen when the Church will seem to have lost all human means to defend itself in the persecution."

VENERABLE ISABEL CANORI-MORA (1774-1825 AD)

"... In the chastisement ... God permitted the powers of darkness to abandon their infernal abyss. A legion of demons were dispersed over the world and, as emissaries of divine justice, they destroyed houses and palaces, wiped out villages, cities and even whole provinces and gave a cruel death to a multitude of the rebellious. The servant of God saw all those monsters, depicted in the most horrible figures, spurt forth from infernal caverns and raze all the places where God had been most gravely offended and where sacrileges had been committed. Not a trace of them was left.

In 1821, she heard Our Lord speak of the triumph of the Church, for it would come out of those storms renovated and it would be recognized universally by all the people, giving the Church a new Pastor, full of His Spirit and animated by His zeal who would guide His flock and would send out zealous and holy priests."

VENERABLE SISTER ANNA CATHERINE EMMERICH (1774-1824 AD)

"I saw the Church of St. Peter and an enormous multitude of people working to demolish it. At the same time I saw others repairing the Church. The demolishers took away large pieces; they were, above all, sectarians and apostates, in the majority. In their destructive work these people seemed to follow certain orders and a certain rule. I saw, with horror, that among them there were Catholic priests. I saw the Pope praying, surrounded by false friends who, frequently, did the contrary of what he had ordered."

... She also said: 'Fifty or sixty years before the year 2000 Satan will be unchained for a time.'

Later she saw the Church of St. Peter with its high copula. St. Michael was on top, resplendent, dressed in a robe red as blood and a large banner of war in his hand. In violent battles, accompanied by bands of celestial spirits, he had to defend the Church against the assaults of the world. The Wounds of Christ shown splendidly from the heavens. It was as if she, the stigmatic of Christ, wanted to give a grand idea of the importance of Christ's Wounds in the history of the Redemption. She said: ... 'In the most terrible moment of the battle there will descend, to the battlefield, to the side of the "good" the angels who will multiply the forces of the combatants. A marvelous courage will inflame the ardour of everyone. St. Michael himself will wound the enemies, followed instantly by a general overthrow of these enemies. A sword of fire will then appear above the heads of the triumphant good.'

'When the battle finished upon the earth and the Church, the angel became white and luminous, then disappeared. The Cross, too, disappeared and there was seen in its place, above the Church, a Woman, tall and resplendent, who extended her radiant cape of gold over it. In the Church, acts of reconciliation were observed accompanied by acts of humility. The sects recognized the Church, in her admirable victory and in the light of the revelations which were seen to shine over the Church.

I felt a splendor and a superior life in all Nature and in all men a holy

emotion, as if the birth of the Lord were near and I felt, in such a way, the coming of the reign that I saw myself forced to run to meet it shouting cries of joy."

#### MARIA JULIA JAHENNY (1850-1941 AD)

This woman was the oldest stigmatic of modern times. ... Born on February 12<sup>th</sup>, 1850, she died in 1941 at the age of ninety one.

... She had, to a high degree, the gift of prophecy which was principally manifested in her visions about the *last times* and the *coming of the Antichrist*.

She said: "There will come *three days of great darkness*." During those days only blessed candles of pure beeswax would give light in the horrible darkness. A single candle would burn for the three days, but in the houses of the wicked they would not burn. During those days demons would appear, in horrible and abominable shapes, and would make the air resound with frightful blasphemies. Lightning and sparks would penetrate the houses, however, the winds, storms and earthquakes would not put out the light of the blessed candles.

A cloud, red as blood, would cross the sky, a clap of thunder would make the earth tremble. The world would become an immense cemetery. The bodies of the wicked and the good would cover the earth. The hunger that would follow would be terrible. All of the vegetation would be destroyed as well as three fourths of the human race. The crisis will come to everyone, suddenly, and the chastisement would be worldwide."

#### VENERABLE SISTER NATIVITY (d. 1798 AD)

"The year 2000 will not pass before the judgment comes, as I have seen it in the divine light."

The source of the following prophecy is taken from The National Educator, September, 1986.

"Prophecy of St. Nilus, A 5<sup>th</sup> Century Hermit – After the year 1900, toward the middle of the 20<sup>th</sup> century, the people of that time will become unrecognizable. When the time for the Advent of the Antichrist approaches, people's minds will grow cloudy from carnal passions, and dishonor and lawlessness will grow stronger. Then the world will become unrecognizable. People's appearances will change, and it will be impossible to distinguish men from women due to the shamelessness in dress and style of hair. These people will be cruel and will be like wild animals because of the temptations of the Antichrist. There will be no respect for parents and elders, love will disappear, and Christian pastors, bishops, and priests will become vain men, completely failing to distinguish the right-hand way from the left.

... At that future time, due to the power of such great crimes and licentiousness, people will be deprived of the grace of the Holy Spirit, which they received in Holy Baptism and equally of remorse.

The Churches of God will be deprived of God-fearing and pious pastors, and woe to the Christians remaining in the world at that time; they will completely lose their faith because they will lack the opportunity of seeing the light of knowledge from anyone at all. ... At that time men will also fly through

the air like birds and descend to the bottom of the sea like fish. ...

Then the All-good God will see the downfall of the human race and will shorten the days for the sake of those few who are being saved, because the enemy wants to lead even the chosen into temptation, if that is possible... then the sword of chastisement will suddenly appear and kill the perverter and his servants."

"Father, if so many prophecies of good repute were given to the Church, wouldn't all good Catholics have believed?"

Most laity and clergy were not interested in such matters, because they were caught up in the pride of being citizens of the modern age, and they did not hear much about private revelation because their publication was suppressed or ignored by the worldly-wise clergy. And, most did not understand their *obligation* to search out the revelation of God and to test the spirits, that is, to investigate for themselves and make a personal decision about such things and then to act upon it. Many, too, did not understand the reason why God gives us these revelations. Let us read:

"The purpose of private revelation, as defined by St. Thomas Aquinas, is not to prove the truth of Christian doctrine or add anything to it but to offer men of a certain period and because of the circumstances of that period, a direction for human action."

"May we remind you that according to the doctrine of the Fifth Lateran Council and Pope Leo X (1512): 'When there is a question of prophetic revelation the Pope alone is the judge.'

Pope Urban VIII says in cases like this – it is better to believe than not to believe, for if you believe and it is proven true, you will be happy that you believed because Our Holy Mother asked it: If you believe and it should be proven false you will still receive all blessings

as if it has been true because you believed it to be true.

Tanquerey, a recognized theologian and one of the most eminent, cites the following in his textbook for seminarians, not as an opinion, but as the teaching of the Church: 'Private revelations which are certain must be believed by those to whom they are made, or by those for whose benefit they are made, and even most probably by those to whom they are not directed, provided they are supported by sufficient arguments. For we must believe what we know for certain has been revealed by God, because of the respect due to the authority of God; but when revelation, even private, is presented to us with sufficient arguments, for example, miracles, we know with certainty that it has been revealed by God.'

The Rosary, the Brown Scapular and the Green Scapular were given to us through Private Revelations, likewise the Devotions to the Sacred Heart and to the Immaculate Heart of Mary."

The following are the words spoken from the throne of the Basilica Of Saint Martin and were published in a pamphlet shortly afterwards. They Were spoken by His Excellency, the Bishop of Liege, Belgium, regarding The

apparitions of the Most Holy Virgin at Banneaux from January 15 to March 3, 1933.

"Regarding this event," His Excellency said, "I should like to warn you against a twofold indifference: Indifference toward the fact itself and indifference towards our personal share in the recognition of the fact."

1. Let us not be indifferent to the fact: "Does not everything merit our interest that is of such a nature as to quicken faith, enliven piety, increase confidence, convert and save souls? ... Faith teaches us that the Blessed Virgin is in Heaven, that she reigns there in glory, and that she nevertheless interests herself efficaciously in her children on earth. But if she comes to visit these children, appearing to one or to several of them ... is that not a sensible proof of the compliant goodness and the motherly care of our Mother in Heaven? Such news certainly does not leave me indifferent, and anyone who has a filial love for the Blessed Virgin must share my emotion. And undoubtedly, one of the first effects of this emotion will be the desire to know these facts better, to examine them thoroughly, and to contribute as much as we can to bring them to light.

2. Let us not be indifferent to the recognition of the fact: "Here we meet with the second of the indifferences denounced above, the attitude of: It's up to the Church to bring these facts to light. Let the Church do it. In the meantime, I'll not make it my concern. Yes, it's up to the religious authority to give an authentic decision to such facts, if it judges a decision to be opportune. Suppose your unanimous desire is realized and the tribunal 'approves' ... don't you see the great effect of that sentence? It would be a source of great joy for millions of the faithful: It would put an end to the doubts of many; it would give a new and lasting impetus to the cult of the Blessed Virgin ... but that is still in the future. Must we simply wait for it with our arms folded? Certainly not! In the first place, it is not necessary for us to have an authentic judgment of the Church in order to admit the truth of the apparitions. We can accept them either on the basis of a personal study of the facts themselves, of their development and their effects; or on the authority of persons whose knowledge, prudence and piety we know, or on the basis of special favours which we might have received. ... This personal conviction may be expressed in private acts of piety. Do not forget that the important, final decision must be pronounced by men."

"Father, was the Third Secret of Fatima ever known?"

It was known verbatim by very few. The actual words of Our Lady were apparently "dropped into a deep hole" by the agents of Satan within the Vatican Curia. But, as one of our tabloids explained:

"The Third Secret has not been officially revealed to the world. But Frere Michal, in 1985, published Volume III of his 600-page book, which is entirely about the *Third Secret of Fatima*. He says that since "a certain number of facts have become known" about the Secret they form "an impressive mass of sure information from which the historian can precisely retrace its entire history and

expose its essential content with a considerable degree of certitude.

This eminent living authority on the Third Secret concludes that it *undoubtedly concerns a grave crisis of faith within the Church* and the spiritual chastisement this will entail. This was also (and first) the published conclusions of the official archivist of Fatima, Fr. Alonso. And Bishop Amaral of Fatima publicly confirmed these conclusions on his own after speaking with Lucy.

It is known that the Third Secret begins with the words, "In Portugal, the dogma of the faith will always be preserved, etc." The rest of the Third Secret is "contained" in this "etc." which must go on something like this: "... but in the rest of the world ..." (See "The Fatima Crusader," Issue 20: RD 1, Box 258, Constable, NY 12926)

Confirming these conclusions we have the evidence of heresy and all manner of distortions in the Church today, as well as the words of Pope Paul VI himself, when he stated publicly: "The smoke of Satan has entered the Church." This great tragedy for the world and for souls has now been revealed by Jesus and Mary through their current apparitions at the Vatican Pavilion Grounds in Bayside, NY:

"I say this evening as your God that on that date as promised at Fatima (1972, through Jacinta) Satan entered my Church upon earth. He brought with him his agents. And Satan, himself, the deceiver of all mankind, sat in on Vatican II and maneuvered all the outsiders to come in and distort my doctrines and distort the truth. At Fatima my Mother tried to warn of this coming event. But who cared to listen. ... To this day, to your earth year of 1986, you have not been given, my children, the full secrets as given to the children at Fatima. Therefore, I must make it known at this time to you. If you are perceiving and interested in My Church upon earth, I do not have to explain myself too fully; for you will already know of the chaos that Satan has wrought when he entered My Church. ...

My child and my children, I come once more with an urgent and pleading message to the hierarchy in the Church, My Church upon earth: I want you to know now that we look upon you and find many that do not fall into grace. They are falling out of grace and misleading many of Our sheep. Therefore, I warn you now as your God, you will stop your intricacies within My Church. You will stop experimenting. I gave you the rules to follow many years ago – two thousand years, approximately. And why now 2000 years later do you deem it necessary to change my Church upon earth. I your God say to you, you will be judged accordingly. You will return My Church to its former glory, and in that manner you will have more vocations and more entering the seminaries and not fleeing from them as they hear the heresies and all other innovations that are going on within My Church."

"Father, is this what Our Lady meant when she said at La Salette in 1846 that "Rome will lose the Faith and become the seat of Antichrist?"

What she referred to is still in the future, Son. But it was true in a general sense, as I will explain. The enemy was encamped around the Holy Father in the years before the Great

Chastisement. They entered in 1972, holding Pope Paul VI prisoner and drugging him from 1975 until his death in 1978.

LA SALETTE- September 19, 1846: Our Lady: "The Vicar of My Son will suffer a great deal, because for a while the Church will yield to great PERSECUTION, a time of darkness, and the Church will witness a frightful crisis."

FATIMA – 1917: "There will also come a time of the hardest trials for the Church. Cardinals will be against Cardinals, and Bishops against Bishops. Satan will put himself in their midst. What is rotten will fall, and what will fall must not be maintained. The Church will be darkened and the world plunged into confusion."

Canon Law 2335 decrees automatic excommunication for either clergy or laity for joining a Masonic Order. This act, if unrepented, condemns a soul to Hell. Why then did so many Masons infiltrate the Vatican and change centuries of traditions?

The list of Masons below, with their entrance dates, appeared on the front page of the *Puglia Gazette* on July 26, 1976. Puglia is near Milan, Italy, which is considered a Communist stronghold.

Cardinal Danielou had announced that he would reveal a list of Masons. He was found dead four days later. The newspaper published the List nonetheless.

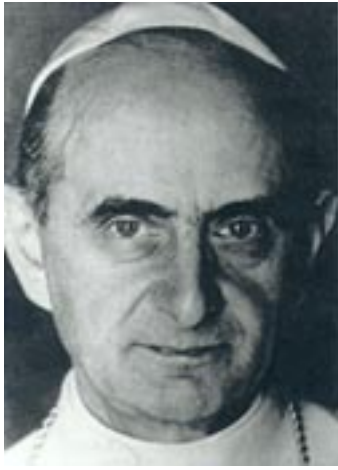
The Catholic Church was taken over by Mason infiltration in 1972. The troika of this unholy clique was led by Cardinal Giovanni Benelli, the Under Secretariat of State, Cardinal Villot and Cardinal Casaroli, who is the Present Secretary of State. Pope Paul VI was drugged and kept prisoner in The Vatican while an Italian actor appeared in the Pope's place. Numerous photographs, including these from the book Shepherds Are Lost, attest to the fact that there was an impostor.



Pope Paul VI before 1972:  
Long, straight nose -  
almost to end of ear lobe.  
Ear is full and round.



The Impostor: Nose is  
shorter and more round -  
reaching only 3/4 length of  
ear. Ear is longer and not as  
wide.



Pope Paul VI: Long nose - reaching to the end of ear lobe.



The Impostor: Nose much shorter in comparison to ear.

Below is a partial list of Masons who gained power in Rome:

NAME	ENTERED MASONRY	POSITION
Cardinal Jean Villot	8-8-66	Secretariat of State; usurped Pope Paul VI's power.
Cardinal Agostino Casaroli	9-28-57	Present Secretariat of State.
Cardinal leo Suenens	6-15-67	Promoter of Charismatics.
Cardinal Ugo Poletti	2-17-69	Vicar General of Diocese of Rome.
Rev. Pasquale Machhi	4-23-58	Personal Secretary to Pope Paul VI. Excommunicated by Paul VI; but later reinstated by Cardinal Villot.
Rev. Sebastiano Baggio	8-14-57	Picked bishops for dioceses of entire world.
Rev. Levi Virgilio	7-4-58	Vatican radio and L'Osservatore Romano Press.
Rev. Virgilio Noe	4-3-61	Secretary of Liturgy Congregation-Destroyed Latin Mass.
Rev. Annibale Bugnini	8-15-59	Novus ordo Mass creator; assisted by 6 Protestant ministers and 1 Jewish theologian.
Cardinal Augustin Bea	----	A convert from Judaism, he compromised Catholic Dogma, under the guise of ecumenism, to please Protestant and Jewish peoples.
Rev. Pio Laghi	8-24-69	Apostolic Delegate to U.S.: Chooses U.S. Catholic Bishops, Masonic number 0-538. Secret Masonic name is "Lapi."
Cardinal Achille Lienart	10-15-12	Leader and recruiter of clergy into Freemasonry.
Rev. Paul Marcinkus	8-21-67	Involved in Vatican Bank loss of millions to Masonic controlled Banks. Masonic number 43-649; Masonic name is "Gorilla."

There is a list of 130 high ranking clergy enrolled in Freemasonry. Most have a secret name and number. The Masons are largely responsible for the destruction of the Church from within. According to the apparitions of Our Lady at Bayside, New York, Pope John XXIII and Pope Paul VI were "laid low" by the enemies of God, and Pope John Paul I "received the horror and martyrdom by drinking from a glass ... given to him by a now deceased

member of the Clergy and the Secretariat of the State." Cardinal Jean Villot was the Secretariat of State during John Paul I's pontificate.

"Were there Masonic clergy in other countries besides Italy, Father?"

Yes, and these clergy were headed by the papal delegate for that country, who was a Mason appointed by Masons in the Curia. Let me read again:

"He is the Most Reverend Pio Laghi in Washington, D.C His Masonic number is 0-538. His secret Masonic name is Lapi. He entered Freemasonry 8/24/69, which means he was automatically excommunicated (Canon Law 2335) from the Church – yet he currently chooses her U.S.Bishops! The Pope almost always follows the Apostolic Delegate's recommendations for the choice of Bishops.

What are the fruits of the Bishops chosen by the Masonic Apostolic Delegate?

- Destroyed or removed the altar of Sacrifice.
- Removed statues of Angels and Saints.
- Removed Stations of the Cross.
- Removed altar-rails.
- Ignored the pope and Catholic Church Doctrines.
- Suppressed Novenas, organ music, Gregorian Chant, the Rosary, the Scapular, Apparitions, Sacramentals, Blessings and Indulgences.
- Lessened reverence to Jesus in the Most Blessed Sacrament.
- Replaced the Church Doctrines on sin and Confession with the fallacy that God is Love and does not punish. There is no hell of Purgatory in their new religion of man.

If Pio Laghi is not a Mason, why does he choose Bishops who have made a shambles of the Church in such a short time? The fact is, the Most Rev. Pio Laghi *is* a Mason and has done his Masonic task well. He is gradually destroying the Catholic Church in the United States.

"Didn't you say once, Father, that an Ecumenical Council in union with the Pope is infallible?"

Yes, and Vatican II was infallible *in its actual documents, properly interpreted*. But the potential for ambiguous interpretations had been crafted by the enemy into certain documents by certain phrases, thus providing the means for heretical applications by the Vatican Commissions at a later date which *implemented* the Council. The current head of the most important Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith, Cardinal Ratzinger, realized what had happened, as evidenced in this interview with him:

"... Developments since the Council seem to be in striking contrast to the expectations of all, beginning with those of John XXIII and Paul VI. ... What the Popes and the Council Fathers were expecting was a new Catholic unity,



and instead one has encountered a dissension which – to use the words of Paul VI – seems to have passed over from self-criticism to self-destruction. ... There had been the expectation of a step forward, and instead one found oneself facing a progressive process of decadence that to a large measure has been unfolding under the sign of a summons to a presumed 'spirit of the Council' and by so doing has actually and increasingly discredited it.

... It must be clearly stated that a real reform of the Church presupposes an unequivocal turning away from the erroneous paths whose catastrophic consequences are already incontestable.

## 163

... Vatican II in its official promulgations, in its authentic documents, cannot be held responsible for this development which, on the contrary, radically contradicts both the letter and the spirit of the Council Fathers."

I know what we can read to give you the inside story on this invasion of the Church, Phillip. Hand me the light brown satchel.

### THE ANTI-PRIESTS

Adapted from the French by Yves Dupont

This is the story of a man who wrote his memoirs, about which he had had dreams for many nights until it had become an obsession. He yielded to the urge to write them though not understanding why. "Anyway, it does not matter", he ruminated, "for no one will ever read this; I shall destroy it in due course."

This man was a Communist agent who became a Catholic priest to better destroy the Church. He was ordained in the early forties, died in the late sixties, and his confessions survived him. He had overlooked one very important fact, however, that no man is master of his own life. He died in a hospital as a result of a car accident. His papers were found in his briefcase, and read by the Catholic nurse who looked after him.

... "I was fully confident now that I would eventually enter the seminary, and I was already making plans for the future especially as regards my work for the Party. I was to inject into Catholic thinking a whole set of new values and a new train of thought. I was to foster remorse in their hearts, a gnawing sense of guilt, quoting the Gospel: 'Be ONE as the Father and I are ONE.' That sense of guilt must grow into an obsession to the point of rehabilitating Martin Luther. They will be made to believe that schisms and heresies were caused by their own intransigence, that the time had come for them to atone and make reparation by throwing their arms open to their Protestant brethren and confessing their own sin of pride and stubbornness. of course, we shall not tamper with the Creed except for the word "Catholic" which must be changed to "Universal" or "Christian" as the Protestants use. But we shall not use the name of God except when necessary. We shall speak of man, stress his dignity and nobility. We must transform the language and thinking pattern of every Catholic. We must foster the mystique of the human race. At first, we shall say that God exists, but we shall point out that God remains forever outside the

field of human experience, and experience is what counts for sensate beings. We shall lay much stress on experience and sensory perceptions. The positive, the experimental and the sensorial must be the basis of the new thinking. We shall say that, since God is invisible, the best way to serve Him is to set up a universal Church in which all men can meet as brothers in mutual good-will, love, and understanding. This new mystique must finally obfuscate the concept of God or whom we shall speak less and less, except for saying that we are God because God is in everyone of us. In this manner, we shall re-direct the religious yearnings and superstitions of the people. We shall deify Man ..."

"Once Catholics have accepted this new mystique, we shall tell them to strip their churches bare of statues and ornaments because these things are unessential and abhorrent to their dear Protestant and Jewish brethren. Thus all symbols of Catholic worship and devotion will go by the board, and when they are gone devotions will go too. Yes, we shall promote an iconoclastic zeal especially among the younger generation. They themselves will destroy that jumble of statues, pictures, vestments, reliquaries, organs, etc. It would be a good idea, too, to spread a "prophecy" that says: "You shall see married priests, and you shall hear the Mass in the language of the people." This should make

## 164

our task easier. We shall incite women to assert their right to the priesthood.

"All sorts of exciting ideas came surging into my head, and I coded my whole programme before sending it to Moscow. Looking back on these days, I now feel a legitimate pride at having been the first to suggest these ideas to the Party. It is now plain that these were the right ideas, far superior to a mere dialectical attempt at destroying religious belief. Some time later, an order came from Moscow: "New assignment: go to Rome." And so I left Poland for what was going to be my lifetime work ..."

"Once in Rome I met a priest-professor who was in our network. He was a scholar and a scriptural expert. He was then busy preparing a new English version of the Bible, but his work was still secret. In that new version the old clichés about the Virginity of Mary, the Real Presence and like fables were to be adroitly amended and re-interpreted. Instead of "Virgin", Mary will be called "maid". The "brethren" of Jesus will become His "brothers". The "Real Presence" will be explained as a feeling, or experience, when "Christians are gathered together in His name". The notion of "gathering" is an important one to promote the community spirit. Those who do not conform to the Group will be reprovéd as trouble-makers and bad Christians. We must absolutely stifle individual attitudes if we are to control the Group as we please, and the control of the Group is essential for the establishment of Communism.

... Later, of course, the mass will be radically modified; we shall play down the sacrificial aspect, we shall exalt it as a meal taken by the Community. In case some reactionary priests refuse to conform, and insist on saying the old prayers, we shall direct that the Canon in its entirety be said aloud. This will also make it possible for the people to say the words with the priests, and once this is possible we shall rule that it is indispensable also. Thus the Mass will cease to be the privilege of the priest alone ..."

"The professor was already working on a draft for a New Order of the Mass, and he urged me to do likewise because, he said, it was greatly desirable

that we should give the people different kinds of Masses; this will help destroy unity, the mainstay of Catholic power. ..."

"The merging of all religions and the brotherhood of man, must always be re-asserted as the basic motivation for all the changes. "Love thy neighbor as thyself" will be our scriptural justification. The greatest change, and the most desirable one, is the suppression of the papacy; but this appeared very difficult to me in view of Christ's promise: "Thou art the Rock, and upon this Rock I shall build My Church." We shall therefore endeavour to undermine the authority of the pope in every possible way, and we shall try to enlist his cooperation to introduce the changes that will make this possible. We shall promote the concept of Episcopal Equality and the priesthood of the laity. When the bishops are elected by the people, and the pope is no more than the president of the bishops, our victory will be near at hand. ..."

"All must be done in the name of love. Also in the name of love, we shall promote the idea that God is far too loving to want His only Son to die a cruel death for us and to want to create an everlasting hell. Christ will be described as a good man and great revolutionary, and hell as a superstition of the Dark Ages. We shall no longer mention sin, and Angels will be relegated to the realm of mythology and fairy-tales. Once the people cease to fear God, they will soon forget Him. Our task is to promote these ideas among the Catholic elite via the theological journals which we control, and they in turn will promote them in the Church as their own ideas. We shall also encourage many new translations of the Bible; the greater the number of translations, the better; it will help to create confusion. The number of Catholic scholars who are itching to produce their own versions – undoubtedly the best ever produced in their own eyes – is not lacking; all they need is a little prodding from us.

We are faced with a huge task; many problems remain to be solved: the Rosary, Lourdes, and the twenty odd feasts of Mary are annoying things, but we shall be patient. In any case, we will have to draw up a new calendar and dispose of many Marian feasts as well as many other Saints. The new calendar must look as bare as the table on which they will say the new Mass ..."

"Such is the substance of the orders which I issued to the network. The following year I began to work on the draft of a new catechism which would be acceptable to all believers. It must be practical, human, noncommittal, and ambiguous. It must stress the humanity of Christ who, in fact, was a brother of ours. But the word "charity" is to be banished absolutely; we shall say "love" instead. Love can be many things, but charity has an intolerable religious connotation. We shall say, of course, that it means the same and the change is more conformable to modern usage. Concerning the precepts of the Church, we shall say that Christians are now fully mature and adult, that the precepts were necessary when the people were ignorant and uneducated, but that it is more fitting to adult Christians to let their own consciences decide. God, in any case, is far too great and remote to worry about our eating meat on Fridays! ..."

"Private confession is a waste of time; we shall promote a communal penitential rite with emphasis on sins committed against our brothers. The precept of Sunday attendance will be modified too. We shall say that, because of the working conditions in this modern age, people need their Sunday to relax

in the countryside away from the city's fumes. They should be allowed to attend Mass on Saturday, even on Friday. God did not say *what* day was to be reserved. In all cases we shall stress the primacy of the individual conscience over set rules and petty precepts which are unworthy of an adult man and an insult to his dignity. We shall retain the "Our Father" for the time being, but we shall replace "Thee" by "You" and we shall find suitable substitutes for such words as "forgive, temptations, trespasses" and other similar nonsense. The seven sacraments will receive our special attention. The first I would like to abolish is baptism, but it will have to stay for a while; we shall say that Original Sin is not the sin of Adam and Eve who, in any case, never existed; we shall re-interpret it. Baptism, then, will merely be a ceremony marking the coming of a new member into the human brotherhood. We shall do likewise with every sacrament. Concerning marriage, it shall not be refused to those priests who wish to receive it ..."

"In the Mass, the words "Real Presence" and "Transubstantiation" must be deleted. We shall speak of "Meal" and "Eucharist" instead. We shall destroy the Offertory and play down the Consecration and, at the same time, we shall stress the part played by the people. In the Mass, as it is today, the priest turns his back to the people and fills a sacrificial function which is intolerable. He appears to offer his Mass to the great Crucifix hanging over the ornate altar. We shall pull down the Crucifix, substitute a table for the altar, and turn it around so that the priest may assume a presidential function. The priest will speak to the people much more than before: to achieve this, we shall shorten what is now called the Mass proper, and we shall add many readings to what is called the Foremass. In this manner the Mass will gradually cease to be regarded as an act of adoration to God, and will become a gathering and an act of human brotherhood. All these points will have to be elaborated in great detail and they may take anywhere up to 30 years before they are implemented, but I think that all my objectives will be fulfilled by 1974. ..."

"Thus I laboured for twenty long years. Pius XII died in 1958. When John XXIII announced a new council, my interest was greatly stimulated. I reported to my chiefs that this was perhaps the last battle: no effort should be spared. They were obviously of the same opinion because they immediately

appointed me to the highest position in the West European network, and they gave me unlimited financial backing through our Bank in Switzerland. Hearing that Pope John had appointed a commission to draw the schemas of the forthcoming Council, I immediately started to work on counter-schemas with the help of avant-garde theologians who had been won over to our way of thinking. Thanks to my contacts I managed to obtain copies of the projected papal schemas: they were terrible! I was in a cold sweat! If these schemas are carried, my work of 20 years will have been in vain. I hastily put the finishing touch to my counter-schemas, and I circulated them. Eventually, they were tabled in the Council. Thanks to the cooperation of some bishops whose thinking had been conditioned previously, the majority of bishops, reactionary but ill-prepared, were completely disconcerted by the highly efficient and coherent interventions of our friends; most of my counterschemas were carried..."

"But I am not satisfied: many of my schemas, although they were accepted, have been watered down by Pope Paul himself in contempt of the majority vote at the Council. Fortunately, the revised versions contain many ambiguities; in this manner, it will be possible to initiate further changes, alleging that they are in the spirit of the Council. However, we must begin to work for Vatican III even now. Vatican III, as I see it, will mean the destruction of the Church and the death of God ... Then, I shall come forward, not to nail Christ upon His Cross, but God Himself into His coffin."

This perfidity all seems to come from a human origin, doesn't it, Phillip? But who is guiding this human work? The full Apocalyptic horror of these events must not be lost sight of. The world will not last forever. All these events we are highlighting, from beginning to end, *affect the eternal destiny of billions of souls*. Time swiftly marches on. Our end is always near.

A holy mystic of the 20<sup>th</sup> Century, Professor Drexel, can give us insight into this drama.

FAITH IS GREATER THAN OBEDIENCE, Words of the Savior  
to Professor Drexel, Austria 1922-1977.

(In 1932 Professor Drexel had a private audience with Pope Pius XI. He taught as professor in the Vatican University for Missions and was later used as an expert in racial questions at the Vatican.)

"For the first time in November 1922 and from then on in all the nights of the first Fridays of the month, Our Lord appeared and spoke to our deceased friend, who spent those nights in prayer.

The phrase which was selected as the title of the book are the words of the Savior, and they may solve the painful conflict between *faith* and *obedience* under which many priests and faithful suffer today: Nobody can claim authority in his office, and demand obedience in the name of the Church, when the faith of the Church is lessened or destroyed!

Whether unbelief and its practice is dictated by the interior or exterior enemies of the Church – the clear teaching of the Acts of the Apostles is still valid: "We must obey God rather than men." (Acts 5, 19)

*"Severe trials are trying My Church. But I shall strengthen My visible representative in Rome, and I shall arm him with wisdom and firmness, even against bishops.*

*Not only priests, but also bishops, come under the influence of the spirit of the time, by neglect and violation of their duties; they even try to usurp similar power which belongs only to the successor of the holy Apostle Peter. Therefore, it is necessary that men and women fight and pray indefatigably and imperturbably, defending and clinging to the faith, making sacrifices, and maintaining in this way hope, trust and confidence among*

*the faithful and in the people. Did I not praise the blessed ones, who suffer persecution for the sake of justice? (Mt. 5,10) Have I not said: He who confesses Me before men, I will also confess him before My Father who is in Heaven? (Mt. 10, 32) But the greatest pain to My Heart was given by those Who should be shepherding the faithful – and these are the bishops, who Have*

*become silent, indifferent and cowardly. Not only a few, but many of Them, are afraid of men, and are removed from the fear of God. Tthis is the reason why the wolves could break into the flock, bringing such confusion and devastation and destruction upon the Church.*

*Therefore, do not let yourselves be oppressed by the apostasy and heresy of many. All those will crumble in their own sin, and becoming unhappy in their inner soul, they will come back to Me – or perish eternally.*

*... In the bosom of My Church, My own sons, the consecrated priests, have rebelled and have become not only enemies, but also traitors, as My Vicar of Rome has openly remarked.*

*These disloyal priests have left the path of the faith and have put human pride in place of the revelation of God; they have replaced it with the wicked misuse of the gifts of freedom and the thought and structure of their own spirit, that they may be praised and loved by the world.*

*Oh what fools they are, who not only sell their own soul to Satan, but who become seducers of the faithful and thus sin against the Holy Ghost. These confusers and seducers speak and write much about a new Church, of a church that is no longer a religion, but is purely human. I Tell you: This is the church of Antichrist.*

*In this new church grace does not count, but in its place steps so-called technology, that is the dream and fake opinion and falsehood of a new world. In this new church their prophets do not speak any more of sin and judgment, of hell and Heaven, but of the coming Paradise on earth.*

*In this new church one can no longer find the cross of My redemption which is salvation, but their happiness lies in sensuality.*

*This new church is the living Antichrist, the real Babylonian harlot, as My disciple and apostle John has written in the Apocalypse.*"

Jesus and Mary may have appeared in almost every nation of the world, including Russia. The agony of love, the urgency of their voices is almost too much to bear sometimes. Listen to their voices through their seer in Mexico:

#### MESSAGES OF OUR LORD TO HIS MEXICAN 'PORTAVOZ'

Imprimi Potest – Sac. J. Gaudze, Superior M.F.

FIRST MESSAGE, Monday, March 24, 1969: "These two things shall not be attained until later. That is to say, the peace of the world and the unification of My church shall not be achieved until I come once more among men. Not until I return once again to teach them of what spirit they all should be ... do you understand?"

"For this same reason, do not expect these two things to be achieved by accepting any propositions or arrangements which may be suggested to you, soliciting your collaboration with those who are outside My Church. Yield no acceptance whatsoever! Accept none of their suggestions! Because all of those who approach you to propose alliances of progress and prosperity, are either in error or incited (impelled) by the evil spirit. The spirit of evil prods them on.

"All of you have permitted My enemy to enter My Church. THE BARK OF PETER flounders on the sea of human life. It may seem as though I am asleep. But it is not so ... I am not asleep. On the contrary, I keep constant watch over My Beloved Spouse (the

Church) to whom I have promised Eternal Life. My Church can achieve its mission completely either with few souls or with many. This is so because I do not seek My own glory which I already possess Eternally; and of which no one can deprive Me. But, it is you ... you human beings ... whom I desire to save from the snares of the devil.

"Before the time of the harvest arrives, I order, I command that you do two things: see to it that the modern Masses shall immediately cease; and, return to the Canon decreed in the Council of Trent by Pius V.

"Return to the primitive fountains of the Church. Restore the Christian and religious customs among seculars and religious, and repent, all of you who belong to the Hierarchy of My Church! All of you who have apostasized and have become traitors, repent and retrace your steps to the right way! And, of course, this must be done immediately!

"To come to Me is to confess humbly that MY DOCTRINE IS HOLY AND THAT IT DOES NOT NEED REFORMS, that My Church is divine, and that all must come to her bosom if they wish to be saved eternally. It means to confess her royal dignity which shines through Me, from Peter to My present Vicar, my much loved Paul VI.

"They must obey him! Let them not pressure him, nor exact from him reforms for My Church!

"My Church is holy and I remain permanently in her, even though there should remain in her only one single man who would know how to observe My doctrine purely and completely. My Church has rules of life to which all of you must subject yourselves in humble submission.

"Demagogy, astuteness, error and falsehood are contained in all the so-called sociological techniques proposed by the innovators, who are fighting to supplant My doctrine and My Church.

"All of these are brimming over with satanic evil, the evil which the spirit of satan has infiltrated into them. Because I love you I reveal the truth to all of you. This is to help you to liberate yourselves from the demon. However, if they persist in their obstinacy in allowing themselves to be carried away by the craftiness of the demon, because he coddles their passions, I will let them fall very soon! Because, all who attempt to surpass their God will be cast down to the infernal abyss, where falsehood and dissolution reign and where there is weeping and gnashing of teeth for all eternity.

"But now, I still invite all: Come to me, all of you!"

**THE MARIAN MESSAGE:** "Both He and I desire that all of you should fight even as Michael and his angels are fighting at present, against your enemies, who are the fallen angels. For, according to the divine plan, they have been granted the permission to try human beings. Therefore, you, my children, **MUST ALSO FIGHT**, while withdrawing yourselves from **DECEITFUL PASTORS AND FALSE PROPHETS**.

"Insist, my daughter, in telling women that they must be modest, and they must cast aside indecency in dress, in customs, in words, and in their thoughts. On the contrary, if they should act otherwise, on the last day I shall not be able to obtain for them the grace of repentance. But at the present time, certainly they will obtain it if they listen to my words and obey my Son and His Vicar."

**JESUS:** "... And the definitions which have been (decreed) from other centuries and which have been approved must not be abrogated nor changed. Let Paul VI speak the truth to the face of the world and let him confess that they have pressured him and obligated him into many present-day definitions

which he in his heart has not accepted.

"... Paul VI suffers! Do not leave him alone in his prison. Go in search of him! Take him out of there to a safe place where he may be able to speak freely, according to the motion and light of My Spirit. Then you shall see that he is loyal to My doctrine and that his soul overflows with charity emanated from My heart."

"... Tell them it is repugnant to me that they receive Holy Communion standing and without reverence. Tell them that I am offended by those who receive Holy Communion cynically, giving bad example, by the women who approach with heads uncovered and naked bodies! ...nor should they receive the Last Blessing unless they are kneeling!"

"... I speak to many souls just as I talk to you; and I reveal to them the intimate agonies of My love. I make revelations to many, and they prophesy for me, regarding the disaster which the works of the world will bring down upon mankind. I also mention the love of My heart which desires to defend everyone. I manifest Myself to many souls as I do to you."

Today, my son, we only have time to review two more divine interventions of the latter half of the 20<sup>th</sup> Century, which gave the world the *final details* of the Great Chastisement and its immediately preceding events, especially in the USA. First, in the early 1960's our lady appeared to three young girls in Garabandal, Spain.

#### GARABANDAL, SPAIN 1960-1965

**THE WARNING:** " Three great supernatural events were prophesied at Garabandal. The first is a worldwide Warning from God to be seen and then felt interiorly by everyone on earth. At that moment we will see the wrong we've done and the good we failed to do. The Warning will be sent to correct the conscience of the world and prepare it for the great Miracle.

**THE MIRACLE:** The Miracle will take place at the grove of pine trees on a bluff overlooking the village of Garabandal. It will occur on a Thursday evening at 8:30 on or between the eighth and the sixteenth of March, April or May. (Visionary Conchita Gonzalez Keena knows the date and will announce it eight days in advance.) It will be on the feastday of a martyr of the Eucharist and coincide with an event in the Church. All those either in the village or on the surrounding mountains will see it. The sick who are present will be cured, sinners converted and the incredulous will believe. As a result of the Miracle, Russia will be converted.

**THE "SIGN":** After the Miracle, a permanent visible supernatural "sign" will remain at the pines until the end of time.

**THE CHASTISEMENT:** If the world still does not change after The Miracle, then God will send the Chastisement.

**OUR LADY'S TWO MESSAGES GIVEN FOR THE WORLD AT GARABANDAL:** October 18, 1961 – We must make many sacrifices, perform much penance, and visit the Blessed Sacrament frequently. But first, we must lead good lives. If we do not, a chastisement will befall us. The cup is already filling up, and if we do not change, a very great chastisement will come upon



us.

June 18, 1965—As my message of October 18 has not been complied with and has not been made known to the world, I am advising you that this is the last one. Before, the cup was filling up. Now it is flowing over. Many cardinals, many bishops and many priests are on the road to perdition and are taking many souls with them. Less and less importance is being given to the Eucharist. You should turn the wrath of God away from yourselves by your efforts. If you ask His forgiveness with sincere hearts, He will pardon you. I, your mother, through the intercession of Saint Michael the Archangel, ask you to

170

amend your lives. You are now receiving the last warnings. I love you very much and do not want your condemnation. Pray to us with sincerity and we will grant your requests. You should make more sacrifices. Think about the passion of Jesus."

(Note: Tens of thousands of miraculous signs accompanied these Apparitions and Messages to four young girls of Garabandal.)

Secondly, in 1970 Jesus and Mary appeared to another seer in New York City. These lengthy messages (over 300) were given at large public prayer vigils and lasted until the seer's death in 1995. Timothy and I, your mother, Paul and Danielle witnessed at least one of these vigils. Here are some excerpts from those Messages as printed in our tabloid newspaper flyer, which we distributed in great quantities.

1970 TO 1995 – BAYSIDE, NY "THE LOURDES OF AMERICA"  
 JESUS AND MARY SPEAK TO THE WORLD  
 THROUGH VERONICA LUEKEN

BACKGROUND STORY: Veronica Lueken, the seer of Bayside, is a wife and mother of five children. She is in her late fifties and lives on Long Island, New York. The story of her heavenly visitations goes back to the year 1968 when St. Theresa, the Little Flower, appeared to her and gave her poems and sacred writings by dictation.

Our Lady herself appeared to Veronica in her home on April 7, 1970, informing her that She would appear on the grounds of the old St. Robert Bellarmine Church in Bayside on June 18, 1970; that vigils of prayer be held there, and that full directions be given to the clergy of the parish to prepare for Our Lady's first visit there. Our Lady also requested that a Shrine and Basilica be erected on this Her chosen Sacred Site, which is to be named "Our Lady of the Roses, Mary, Help of Mothers." She promised to come on the eve of the great feast days of the Church. A miraculous spring of water will erupt suddenly, like at Lourdes, to cure the ill.

THE WARNING: On April 21, 1973, Veronica experienced the coming Warning while in ecstasy: "It's as though everything has exploded in the sky. There is a great flash! Then it's very hot – very warm – and it feels like you're burning. There is a huge explosion, and the sky becomes very white ... and then there are colors – blues, purples ... Finally, there is a voice within you: Your warning before the Chastisement. Flash, fire, and the voice within you."

"Man will feel that the power of the elements have shaken the very foundations of his being. The impact of this Warning from the Father will be so great that none will doubt that it came from Him ... It will be a major awakening for many. The rumbling and the shaking of the elements will set fright into many hearts ... Hearts will shudder with fear and men will drop from

fright ... Many signs of an angry God will appear before you..."

**WORLD WAR III:** Our Lady showed Veronica in vision a map. Veronica saw Jerusalem and Egypt, Arabia, French Morocco, and Africa. Our Lady – "The start of the Third World War, My child ... O My children, the Great War, the war to end all wars ... will bring a destruction to mankind far greater than any human eye has ever seen or experienced in the past, or will ever see or experience again in the future. If My Son had not promised to come among you in this great catastrophe, there would be no living flesh left."

(The message says if there are not enough prayers, ¾ of mankind will perish in the Chastisement. Only a few will be saved.)

**RUSSIA – SCOURGE OF MANKIND:** "O My children, I warned you many years ago, I warned you at Fatima, that unless you prayed and you did penance, Russia and the agents of the Sickle and the Hammer would go throughout the world, cutting down nations, and bringing death, destruction and slavery! ..."

**THE WORLD COMET-STRUCK:** Our Lady showed Veronica a large globe. On one side, she was shown Asia and Africa involved in a

great war. Then Veronica saw the United States and Canada, and South America. Then she saw a huge ball – like a sun burning – it has behind it a trail – tail of fire – fast heading to earth – twirling, great heat – cities on fire – all the lights out – people running and falling – looking for candles. The air is heavy and stagnant – a lack of oxygen – candles will not light – it is very dark. The ball is turning and twirling very fast in the sky – spewing out great particles of dust – choking dirt falling – large rocks begin to fall. People run in all directions – no place to run – waves start to rise very high, flowing over the land – New York – the comet flashing...

**SATAN WALKS THE EARTH NOW!!!:** "The major demon from hell, Satan, now has entered into the body of one in your country ... The man of perdition (2 Thess. 2:3) is Satan --- 666" – (Apoc. 13:18) (the main force, the main individual spirit of 666) in the body of a human being ... He is roaming throughout your states, making new covens of iniquity ... He has entered into the schools; he is teaching the occult ... He has great powers (the powers of hell), and will entice your children into the covens..."

**ROCK MUSIC AND DRUGS:** "The spread of drugs was for reason to bring down the morale, and to give your children over to Satan. ... Recordings known as rock and roll ... are the major instrument for leading your children into the plague, the country wide plague of drugs ... They put into your child a spell, a hypnotism leading to promiscuity, deviant sex, homosexuality, drugs, murders, abortions, and all manner of foul deeds ..."

Heaven's discourses to Veronica Lueken also cover the following Subjects: The One World Government and One World Religion, the Anti-Christ Infiltration of Governments, Schools, Medias, Ecumenism, the Anti-Christ Plot to Place an Antipope on the Seat of Peter, Increases of Natural Disturbances and Catastrophes, the Appearance of New Cults and False Christs, Euthanasia, Test Tube Babies, UFOs, Witchcraft, Rock Music, Astrology and Reincarnation, Women's Liberation, Modernism and the So-called new Theology, False Prophets, the so-called Charismatic Renewal, etc.

Our Lady's counsel to those who wish to be saved: Live a life of prayer,

penance and sacrifice. Give up worldly living and amusements. Remain in your parish church as an example of truth and tradition. However, do not accept the modern changes which are from Satan. Receive the Eucharist daily if possible. Make frequent visits to the Blessed Sacrament. pray the Rosary daily. Read the Bible (editions before 1964). Wear the Brown Scapular and other sacramentals. Keep the statues in your homes. Spread the Message of Heaven, and await the imminent return of Christ to earth. 82 is the year of the Countdown. Armageddon is now!

The Blessed Mother instructed that her messages be disseminated throughout the world. Signs are given to those who come with faith. many miraculous photos have been taken by pilgrims during the Vigils using cameras producing on the spot 'tamper-proof' developments. Rosaries have changed from a natural metallic color to a gold color, and in some cases to the actual substance of gold, the substance of gold having been verified by jewelers. Other miraculous phenomena observed by pilgrims during Vigils include the spinning sun like at Fatima and the flight of luminous doves. Numerous testimonials are presently available upon request.

The Blessed Mother requests the faithful to come in pilgrimage to join in the prayers at the Vigils and Holy Hours to petition Heaven for graces of conversion and cure for themselves and their families. Should it be impossible for you to come and pray and petition Our Lady yourself, then you may send in your special private intention by mail, and it will be placed at Our Lady's feet during the Vigil.

## 172

Our Lady has directed that rose petals blessed by Jesus on the Apparition grounds be distributed to the ill of body and those in spiritual need. The grace and power of conversion and cure is attached to these rose petals and all sacramentals brought onto the grounds to be blessed by Jesus and Mary.

We invite you to take advantage of the graces offered to you by Jesus and Mary today. Write to the following address to receive these urgent Messages from Heaven and the above-mentioned items: Our Lady of the Roses, Mary Help of Mothers Shrine, c/o Arthur, Box 52, Bayside, New York, 11361.

**TIMING OF THE WARNING:** Jesus: "... I give you one indication that the time is ripe: When you see, when you hear, when you hear, when you feel the revolution in Rome; when you see the Holy Father fleeing, seeking a refuge in another land, know that the time is ripe." Sept. 14, 1976

**THE MIRACLE:** On December 24, 1973, Our Lady spoke to Veronica about the Miracle -- "The Warning which will be sent upon man must be effective. And in the mercy of the Father, a great spectacle will then be placed in the sky for all to see. However, the agents of hell will try to prove -- disprove the hand of the Father in this Miracle."

"You must cleanse your souls of all sin, mortal and venial. Come to My Son in belief. Believe what you'll see at Garabandal, and turn back from your ways that have been created by Satan."

**THE WAR:** Jesus, February 1, 1972 "Be ye warned that houses will blow in the wind and skin will dry up and blow off the bones as though it has never been! Hasten and listen. You are receiving one of the final warnings to be given to the world before the cataclysms come upon you!"

**THE BROWN SCAPULAR:** Our Lady, October 2, 1975 "The Scapular must be worn by all. It will be your badge of courage, and your hope in a discordant world and generation that has set itself onto the road to perdition."

**Our Lady, December 7, 1976** "America, your country the United States, a land of plenty, has never witnessed mass slaughter and death, but, My children, unless – and I say unless you turn back now, your country will witness death such as never has gripped the hearts of man before, a terror brought about by the knowledge that there has been a rejection of truth, a rejection of your God."

**EARTHQUAKES, FAMINE, STARVATION:** Our Lady, May 30, 1981 "Earthquakes in your country, the United States, extending up through Canada, earthquakes in places never before known to exist, or the possibility of. And they will know it comes but from the hand of God. Famine, starvation, your crops will rot. The heart will burn, the cattle will starve. And why? Because you refuse to turn back, complacent in your arrogance."

**A GREAT PLAGUE:** Our Lady, April 5, 1975 "The children are the true victims of their elders. The example given to them is poor. Many children shall be removed from the world. My child. It will be necessary for the salvation of their souls. It will be a great plague."

**TELEVISION:** Our Lady, September 27, 1975 "I have, many times, cautioned you and all My children against the use of the diabolical machine, your television. There will be no excuses accepted for having these in your presence. They are destroyers of the soul and corruptors of the mind. They take you from your moments of meditation; they take you from reading the words of the Good Book, your Bible. They present to you a way of life that is not akin to the way of God. "

**IMMODEST DRESS:** Our Lady, July 21, 1974 "Shorts, slacks, shall not be worn in the presence of My son! There will be no rationalizations

accepted for the commission of these acts of impurity!"

**WOMEN WILL SUFFER A GRIEVOUS BOIL:** June 1, 1978 "Women of your nation and all of the nations of the world, the Eternal Father shall send a grievous boil upon you, for you have become unchaste, for you have become immodest, and you have cast aside your role as a woman, as a mother, and as a bearer of children for the Eternal Father in Heaven."

**HELL:** Our Lady, November 20, 1971 "They will enter hell as numerous as the snowflakes that fall from the heavens. Impress on all the existence of hell, My child. This they would deny. There are fires of hell. Those fires will engulf those who have lost their chastity and modesty, led by modernism to expose their bodies, the temples of the Spirit, to ridicule and sin. The flames will burn every inch that has been exposed!"

**ALL DESCENDED FROM ADAM AND EVE:** Our Lady, July 25, 1978 "And shout it from the rooftops that man of science is wasting his time seeking life on another planet. There is no life! Were it not so, the Eternal Father would have given you prophets to write down and discourse with you upon this life. the first man and woman created were Adam and Eve, and all descended from them."

**THE NEW CATECHISMS:** Our Lady, May 29, 1976 "The catechisms, My children ... we find abominations, lies, and sinfulness abounding in these

books. Your children, their minds are being corrupted and destroyed. The eyes are the mirror of the soul! Each parent has an obligation to children to remove these diabolical books from his schools!"

**APOSTLES OF THE LATTER DAYS:** Our Lady, August 4, 1979 "I ask all to become apostles of these last days because it will be necessary for man to understand and acknowledge the supremacy of his God in Heaven. I ask that all who have been born into and baptized into the True Faith to go Forward as apostles of Light, disciples for Heaven in these latter days. The Knowledge must be given to those who cannot comprehend, who have hardened their hearts and closed their ears – the knowledge must be given to them – that My son is the Messiah: My Son has been upon Earth, and he shall return again as he ascended!"

**PRAYER – PENANCE—ATONEMENT:** Our Lady, February 11, 1971 "Your world is in darkness! Our House is in darkness! I roam, My children, throughout the world carrying the light; My steps grow heavy! The light is flickering! **WON'T YOU LIGHT YOUR CANDLE WITH ME AND HELP US IN THIS WAR OF THE SPIRITS? PRAYER ... SACRIFICE ... ATONEMENT ...** Is this too much to ask of you?"

**I GIVE YOU HOPE:** Our Lady, August 21, 1971 "THIS HOPE I GIVE YOU, MY CHILDREN! It is that we will be triumphant over all evil in the final victory that will be ours. Then, we will restore this garden over to you as a place of paradise and love.

Through the dark days that lie ahead of you, keep in your heart the knowledge that one day My Son will return! We will all appear to you, My children, and be the ultimate in expectation, the realization of every dream and every victory that has been planned by the Father from the beginning of time!"

Jesus, September 28, 1971 "I GIVE YOU MY HEART, MY CHILDREN, for all who will join us in this battle. I hold deeply in my Heart all who will help us in this battle to save our children. We will reward you with the greatest of expectations. The greatest acknowledgement of your God would be to save His children."

"YOU CRUCIFY ME AGAIN ... IN MY OWN CHURCH": February 1, 1978 "I gave My human life upon earth, and what have you done? You crucify Me again in My own House. My Church! You crucify those who stand in righteousness in My Church and cast them out, as

you rebuild My church. For what? A Renewal?? And what are you renewing? Have you found fault with My way? Shall you create a new way of man? I say unto you, you blaspheme! You have cast yourself out of the light into the darkness, O Pastors!"

**CHARISMATIC RENEWAL:** Our Lady, May 28, 1977 "Pray, My children, that you do not fall into these errors ... You must bring this message to the world! You must warn them now, My child, that they are being misled. The secret societies and the search for the Holy Spirit are entering into the realm of Satan! Too many are searching outside the House of God. You, My child, must make it known that the word you call 'Pentecostals' is not of God. It is an error."

**ANNULMENTS:** Jesus, May 3, 1978 "The Eternal Father has given

mankind a set of rules, and in discipline they must be obeyed. It behooves Me to say that My heart is torn by the actions, the despicable actions of My clergy. I unite, as your God, man and woman into the holy state of matrimony. And what I have bound together no man must place asunder. And what do I see but broken homes, marriages dissolved through ANNULMENTS! It has scandalized your nation, and it is scandalizing the World. Woe to the teachers and leaders who scandalize the sheep!

COMMUNION IN THE HAND: Our Lady, February 10, 1978 "I ask you, My children – you ask Me, many times in your prayers, shall you accept My son's Body in your hands? I say no, and no again for reason! You cannot judge all those about you, My children, who have accepted this diabolical practice under the guise of leadership. No, My children, this was brought about to desecrate My Son, to take from Him the truth of His Divine Nature. No one who hears My voice must accept My son's Body and Blood in the hands!"

SCHOOLS: Our Lady, December 31, 1974 "There is much needed in change, We see, My children, in the schools – both your public schools and your private schools, -- even those who call themselves Catholic, they are Catholic, My children, in name only, for they have sold themselves for pieces of silver."

1985 BAYSIDE MESSAGES: Massive World Monetary Depression "My child and My children, the days will grow darker, and there will be hunger in your land. Yes, My child, what I brought you here for this evening is to tell the world that there will be a crash in the monetary doings of your government an absolute crash that will affect every man, woman, and child in the United States and Canada, and then, like a serpent, creep all over Europe, until the world sees one big, massive depression. I can illustrate to you, My children, what I mean by this monetary depression. Should you go and wish to buy a small instrument, ... it will take a whole suitcase of paper – paper money that no longer has a value. You will soon be reduced to bartering for your food."

"Pray a constant vigilance of prayer. You have a good and holy Father now in Rome, but should he be removed there will come disaster."

CRUCIFIX TO GUARD ENTRANCES TO HOME: "I must reveal, My children, to the world again, that you are to keep a crucifix on your front door and your back door. All entrances to your home must be guarded by the crucifix."

STORE CANNED GOODS, WATER AND BLANKETS: "My children, not only with the canned foods will you store just food, but you also make known to your families and your friends that they had best keep blankets and water in tight containers; for there will be on the onset of the Chastisement, there will be nothing that you can buy due to contamination.

"Your homes are protected by a supernatural being, with St. Michael, the head of the armies from Heaven. Just as in the days of old, so

will it be, My children, that there will be sent to you an angel of death, but in human form."

SUDDEN GREAT COLD TO COME: "Do not be afeared, My child; retain your crucifix on your doors. And keep your supply of earthly goods, though they are needed for your human body; the canned food, the candles, the

water, and the blankets. A sudden cold shall come upon mankind, and many shall die from the cold."

**RUSSIAN PLAN OF ATTACK FINALIZED:** "At this very hour, on this very day, a plan has been built now in Russia to attack the United States and Canada. Satan, being at the controls, will soon have one who is possessed, and of, also, a major rank in the world today, to press that one little technical, technological wizard, not in human form but in mechanical form. Like a robot, this will go forth among the nations, and nations shall disappear from the earth in the short time of three to five minutes. Your country, the United States, and Canada, and most of the nations of the world now, are being lined up by Russia for major strikes."

**NO VEHICLES FROM OTHER PLANETS:** "While We speak of agents of hell, My child, I also wish that you make it known that there are to vehicles coming from other planets – extraterrestrial vehicles. No, My child and My children; they are agents of hell in transport. Now you may ask, why must they be transported if they are spirits? Ahh, My child, this you may not understand. These are not ordinary spirits; these are the demons from hell: satan's cohorts, and satan himself. He is also on one of the transports."

**ST. BENEDICT MEDAL – HIGHEST INDULGENCED:** "My children, now that the time has grown shorter, the attacks shall be greater upon mankind. There will be accidents that are not accidents. Satan has a plan to eliminate the good. Do not be affrighted, My child or My children. You will wear your sacramentals. Specifically, We have asked you, and My Mother has asked you, to wear the Brown Scapular, and also a crucifix, and with that the highest indulgenced medal in the Church."

Veronica – "And now Jesus is pointing up to the sky. And out in The sky there's a huge St. Benedict medal, a huge one. Oh-h, it's so plain. Oh-h."

"All of this armor was given to you throughout the years of mankind. And it was given for reason, for this very day now that is approaching."

I would have us read yet one more thing, Phillip. Many Catholics and non-Catholics engaged in something called the Pentecostal Movement. They were called Charismatics. But here is what it really consisted of:

**"CATHOLIC" PENTECOSTAL MOVEMENT**  
By Dom Peter Flood, O.S.B., M.D., M.Ch.,  
B.A., B.Comm., J.C.D.

"Montanism, called after its first and leading sponsor Montanus, has continued since the end of the second century A.D. under various names and in various forms. It remains always the original 'Phrygian heresy' taken up by Montanus somewhere about A.D. 175.

At different times and in different places it has done and is doing much harm to the Church. Satan, being a pure spirit, by nature does not learn by experience but repeats the old attacks on the True Church and inspires such entitlement of them as will gain their acceptance the more easily, so that even the elect may be deceived for a time.

St. Jerome thought that Montanus had been a priest of Cybele; he came from Ardabau in Phrygia, a place where the frenzied convulsive dances of those priests would have been well known. He attracted

to himself, away from their husbands, two women, Priscilla and Maximilla. The latter outlived him by some years and though both were his 'prophetesses,' she asserted that 'prophecy' would die with her. Montanus claimed that a new era of revelation had begun, that of the Holy Spirit. At first claiming to be just the spokesman of the Paraclete, he seems eventually to have thought that he himself was the Holy Spirit. This sect did much harm to the Church and its most notable convert was Tertullian, that stormy African, who soon founded his own subsect, as might have been expected. He then denied the 'power of the keys' and generally that of the Papacy. His subsect, calling themselves 'Tertullianists,' were for a time strong in North Africa. In the time of St. Augustine, bishop of Hippo, they had a basilica of their own in Carthage, but that saintly bishop soon reconciled them with the Church. Much could be written about the early ramifications of these emotionalists, but it is sufficient to note here that their pagan origin displayed the same manifestations of hysterical states of prophecy – the word usually means no more than a bizarre form of preaching, and not an actual predicting of the future. Where Maximilla prophesied, she was usually proved wrong in the event.

Under various disguises, this pagan hysteria, often accompanied by eroticism and with deviations from sound doctrine, has appeared at almost every stage of the history of the Church. The Illuminati are the best-known examples, about the time of St. Teresa the Alumbrados. Indeed, it was her sound teaching of the ways of prayer at all levels that destroyed them. Later convulsive Jansenists, and in America such orgiastic groups as 'holy roller,' all added their revivalist expressions of these sad aberrations to the motley of history.

Today, mainly derived from University groups in the U.S.A., new versions of this same folly have arisen and spread through the Catholic world. It is usually accompanied by revivalism in various forms. In Canada, there is a strong injection of vigour from groups in Scandinavia and Holland. England has not been exempt and it is insinuating itself into Ireland. Even Rome has not been preserved from such assemblies. Such is the briefest history of what is basically the cult of an individualism and emotional freedom that contains elements which are parapelagian, and which lead to a rejection of the Magisterium of the Church founded by Christ.

It is the practice of these groups to insinuate themselves under whatever name seems least offensive to local Catholic thought, and later to announce more openly their true character. Thus, bishops and often simple religious, especially women, are deceived, for Satan 'was a liar from the beginning.' Every variety of hysterical manifestation occurs in the meetings of these revivalists, no matter what name they may use. The variety corresponds to the emotional qualities, racial or sexual, of the participants. Beginning in apparent quiet prayer, soon someone starts singing or calling aloud; after a while this becomes more general, and not necessarily do they all sing the same way. A woman may jump up and dance around, apparently joyously and unrestrainedly. This spreads and mutual embracings succeed; for the purely sensitive emotions can easily descend to the erotic or sensual. Someone may call out prayers or for the 'laying-on' of hands, and one or other of those present will hasten to do this. The person affected may then become more hysterical and, as they say, 'speak or sing in tongues'. This glossolalia is not in fact 'speaking in a strange language', for it is mere gibberish. An interpreter, the chairman or some other person, may proceed to interpret what he alleges the hysteric has said. Faith healing is also indulged in by some groups, but with indifferent success. Those present may be of different creeds; there is no



common belief. Every sort of claim is put forward on the basis of

false exegesis of Scripture, the commonest being that 'speaking in tongues' reproduces what the Apostles did after Pentecost when, though speaking in their own tongue, each member of the multi-racial crowd heard them in his own language. At these sessions, however, what is uttered is mere 'gibberish' and lacks linguistic structure. Even the promoters of this emotionalism admit that it is open to diabolical illusion, for an evil spirit may manifest himself. This is not an unexpected danger.

The whole set-up of these meetings favours suggestion from any prominent personality present, just as much as it favours self-hypnotism. Usually the 'joy' experienced is only sensory excitement, because certain of the lower brain centres are stimulated and out of the control of higher mechanisms. These states can be produced in rats stimulating electrodes inserted into the hypothalamic centres. The organ of speech escapes from higher control and so the person gives vent to gibberish or song deviants. In a word, the phenomena do not exceed those of any simple dissociation experience and the victims become hysterical and no longer in control of themselves. A considerable study has been made by Samarin from tape recordings, and he suggests that glossolalia always turn out to be the same thing: strings of syllables, made up of sounds known to the subject. He asserts that it is not supernatural. A more technical study has been made by F. D. Goodman, who calls it 'a vocalization pattern, a speech automatism produced on the substratum of hyperarousal.' It is thus just uncontrolled use of the power of vocalization, usual in fits of hysteria and in the tantrums of young children not yet capable of sustained speech. To assert that this is an individual intervention of the Holy Spirit is not only blasphemous and even sacrilegious, but simply stupid. There is no warrant in Scripture or elsewhere for the assertion that 'baptism' of this sort adds anything to, or can replace, the Sacraments of Christ. Every form of self-illusion can be present but these manifestation are DEFINITELY NOT PRAYER, which, as St. Teresa has rightly shown, is an act of the will. She has also pointed out that even in orthodox mental prayer there are, for beginners, dangers of self-illusion. It is easy to believe that words come from God, which in fact come from our own unconscious desires. Unfortunately, like all forms of purely sensory delectation, this emotional arousal can easily and rapidly descend to the sensual level. One writer says, 'Christian love in many renewal situations unfortunately bears more relationship to "eros" than to "agape" and this not uncommonly between people with commitments which make this kind of relationship inappropriate.

A very real danger is a weakening of faith and a contempt for, or actual dislike of, the sacramental order of the Catholic Faith. At first, finding these sensory pleasures in what they have been misled to believe is prayer, many Catholics seem to become more devout, but soon, not finding satisfactions in the calm order of the Church's liturgy, they drop the practice of the latter. Then comes the greater risk of believing that they are in a higher state than other Catholics and that, being personally in contact with the Holy Spirit, they know more than the Vicar of Christ. An American convert, who has studied this matter, says that they then cease to attend Church, and as they are often

practising contraception, they attempt to rationalise this evil by appealing to their private inspiration. This is pure folly! It is the old monanist division between the 'enlightened' and the ordinary Catholic.

From time to time, Bishops have sought to delimit or denounce this movement and even to exorcise its more prominent supporters. They have lacked success because they are not united, or lacking in firmness. Among these people ('charismatics') a kind of para-clericalism soon develops whereby they arrogate to themselves rights and duties which belong properly

and solely to Priests in Sacred Orders. This rapidly spreads and despite lip-service to Catholic beliefs, they soon lapse from the Faith. In practice, there are nearly as many beliefs among them as there are groups. Unfortunately, like any other uncontrolled emotion, this love of sensory excitement grows in any community, even in monasteries and convents. Appealing to the emotions and the desire for the bizarre, this movement in all its manifold varieties can do great harm in the Church. For this reason both Religious and laity should be aware of the dangers involved and remain faithful to the approved forms of liturgical and private prayer."

#### SEVEN REASONS WHY THE CHARISMATIC MOVEMENT IS NOT FROM GOD

1. The Charismatic movement magnifies the Holy Spirit. The Bible magnifies Christ. *John 16:13-14* "But when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will teach you all truth. For he shall not speak of himself; but what things soever he shall hear, he shall speak; and the things are to come, he shall show you. He shall glorify me, because he shall receive of mine and shall show it to you."
2. The Charismatic movement produces division and strife in many churches. The Bible says, "God is not the author of confusion." *1 Cor. 14:33* "For God is not the God of dissension, but of peace, as also I teach in all the churches of the saints."
3. The Charismatic movement says that a "second experience" is necessary in order to be complete. The Bible says you are complete in Christ when you are saved. *Col. 2:9, 10* "For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead corporeally. And you are filled in him, who is the head of all principality and power."
4. The Charismatic movement says that Miracles must be from God. The Bible says that not all miracles are from God. *Matt. 7:22-23* "Many will say to me in that day: Lord, Lord, have not we prophesied in thy name, and cast out devils in thy name, and done many miracles in thy name? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, you that work iniquity."
5. The Charismatic movement says that speaking in Tongues is a sign that you have been Baptized with the Holy Spirit. The Bible says that it was a sign to unbelieving Jews. *1 Cor. 14:22* "Wherefore tongues are for a sign, not to believers, but to unbelievers, but prophecies not to unbelievers, but to believers."
6. The Charismatic movement says that it is alright for women to speak in tongues in the church. The Bible says that women are to keep silent in the

church. *1Cor. 14:34* "Let women keep silence in the churches: for it is not permitted them to speak, but to be subject, as also the law saith."

7. The Charismatic movement places great emphasis on "Bodily healing" and tells people that "God is not wanting anybody to be sick," but they have not scripture to show us where God ever said that. Many of them scoff and sneer at such passages -- *11 Cor. 12: 7-10* "And lest the greatness of the revelations should exalt me, there was given me a sting of my flesh, an angel of Satan, to buffet me. For which thrice I besought the Lord, that it might depart from me. And he said to me: My grace is sufficient for thee; for power is made perfect in infirmities, that the power of Christ may dwell in me. For which cause I please myself in my infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecution, in distresses for Christ. For when I am weak, then am I powerful."

[{TABLE OF CONTENTS}](#)

[{PREFACE}](#)

[{CHAPTER I}](#) [{CHAPTER II}](#) [{CHAPTER III}](#) [{CHAPTER IV}](#) [{CHAPTER V}](#) [{CHAPTER VI}](#)

[{CHAPTER VII}](#) [{CHAPTER VIII}](#) [{CHAPTER IX}](#) [{CHAPTER X}](#) [{CHAPTER XI}](#)

[{Bibliography}](#)

[{Bookstore}](#) [{Order Form}](#) [{Instructions}](#) [{Notice of Permissions}](#) [{Download}](#)

[{Links}](#)

[{FRAMES VERSION}](#)

(Requires a frames-enabled browser)

*Website contents © 1999 - 2000, [Web Designs by Doc](#). Literary content ©1999 - 2000, Dave Pedry. All rights reserved.*

## CHAPTER VIII

## JUST FOR YOU I LIVE, O LORD

Phillip, your father is the grandson of an Austrian immigrant, whose family name was Petri (Peter). The name in olden times referred to the keeper of the castle, the one with the keys, who opened and closed the main door, the one trusted with keeping the enemy out but welcoming friends in. My grandpop mined gold in Colorado as a young man in the early 1900's because there was a shortage of money in Europe. To the Tyrolean Alps of Austria he returned to marry. Back to Ohio they came, where he mined coal, and they raised four children, the oldest being my father. In World War II, my father, after flying the B-26 in the North African offensive as a bombardier, returned to a military base in Florida where he met and then married my mother. Her mother was of German descent and her father of Irish parents. Dad earned a Master's Degree in geology from the University of Ohio in Columbus, where I, the first of four, was born. In 1950 we moved to Wyoming, where Dad worked as a geologist, discovering for his company one of the largest oil fields in the state.

The nuns at the Catholic school I attended instilled in me a knowledge of the true doctrines of our Holy Faith, and I grew up a loyal son of the Roman Catholic Church – a sinner, but one who repented; one lost and hurt sometimes, but one who always returned to the mercy of his Father in Heaven. A good student, strong, shy but fun loving, I was exceptional in nothing. I learned to love the high plains of Wyoming, the sagebrush, cactus, sparse grass, and the great mountains bristling with pine, where the oldest rocks in the world were exposed in jagged, snow-covered peaks. I loved *my country*, the land upon which I would spend the rest of my life. As I grew into young manhood, I explored every range, every road, walking the land, surveying it with eye and imagination, smelling it, feeling it, as a man would his own inherited property. In all this I first learned something of patriotism, the love of our homeland.

I served in the Vietnam War as a Navy medic in hospitals, dispensaries and with the 1<sup>st</sup> Division Marine Reconnaissance in the field of combat near DaNang where I saw action seven times. I returned to attend our community college. After praying and fasting for three days on the mountain that fall, asking God for a wife, for I was not "a lady's man," I met your mother on my birthday that December, 1971. She was a Southern Baptist girl of 19, who converted to the Faith, receiving her First Communion on our wedding day in the summer of 1972. We earned our degrees in English from the University in Laramie. Upon marrying, we immediately began our family of twelve children, six boys and six girls. Christopher John, who died at birth, would have made the seventh of thirteen. We trust he has always interceded for us in Heaven, Phillip. Our road was rocky; we were very far from perfect, and if not for our continually seeking and receiving help from above, we would have fallen into error and disarray like so many around us who abandoned their Christian marriages or abandoned the true Faith or the worship of God altogether, submitting willingly to the false philosophies and the immoral values of our times.

By 1982, I was working as a geologic aide for a big oil company, after years of working as a school teacher, draftsman, carpenter, heavy equipment operator, and laborer. Beginning at this point in time I will try to give you a glimpse of what our life was generally like in these fateful days before the end of time as we knew it.

"Was this time before I was born, Father?"

180

Yes, you were born in '91. This was '81. I remember the dreary sky and icy streets as I drove the little brown 1968 Toyota Corolla to 7 a.m. Mass before work one day. I remember thinking that we had worked so hard on our Catholic Books' business, composing and printing a little blue catalogue, which we had to pass out on the windshields of cars after Mass because none of the priests in town would support us in our effort to supply the Faithful with orthodox Catholic classics. I was very angry and bitter at their heretical coldness and insulting indifference of the priests towards us traditional Catholics, an attitude that did not change -- not until, perhaps, the "writing on the wall" appeared for them in the final moments. The priests were good men; the older ones were well educated in the doctrines of the Faith, but even they had succumbed, out of human respect, to a spiritually hardened, mediocre type of Modernism.

Those infected with the modernist-humanist error were not content to simply be faithful *witnesses* to Christ's doctrine, they had to add something of *their own* or at least something new, because they were more interested in their being the saviour than they were interested in letting the Saviour, through His Sacraments and His pure, unadulterated Message, be the rescuing hero.

It was only through many shocks and disappointments that I came to realize the degree of their blindness, their Neo-Protestantism. It was like a crucifixion for me. For I had a great love and respect for the Church and her Doctrines and Traditions, which was like my personal love for Jesus in intensity. And priests were the representatives of Christ on whom He had bestowed His priestly powers. My love of God in His Church was an anchor in my life. It was a love directed to the Holy Spirit of God, Who came on Pentecost Sunday as a Flame to weld together, with the solder of Divine Love, the members of Christ's Mystical Body, the Church.

In two parochial schools I had been run off as a teacher, in one case for teaching seniors in high school "to think" about what they were reading in their sociology textbook, *Newsweek* magazine! And in the other school for teaching out of the Baltimore Catechism to sixth grade students who were given a book of sentimental mush in place of a true catechism. Phillip, this "thing" I was given to teach from, I could not find a single Catholic doctrine in it. My articulate complaints to the school, parents, and bishop earned me nothing but a reputation as a vociferous dissenter and nonconformist. My letter to the diocesan newspaper condemning the new Mass as an illegitimate, though valid, product of modernist heresies did nothing to subtract from this reputation Statewide. The bishop had probably then ordered his priests to ignore my letters to them, and I was forbidden to have my letters printed in the diocesan newspaper.

That morning I had come to the end of my rope, Phillip. My hope and trust in God cried out, "God, Where Are You?! Speak to me! How are you ministering and speaking to your

people?! What do you want me to do?!" So many times have my prayers been answered when they were shouted out like this in the vehemence of my anguish of soul and temporarily disillusionment.

"Why does God wait until then, Father?"

I don't know, Phillip. Maybe it is only then that I am hungry enough to fully heed what He is going to tell me. He tests me to that point where I cry out to Him, sometimes even in anger. Anyway, I received the answer to these questions a week later, because one of our Catholic Books' catalogues somehow ended up with a woman in New York City, who then sent us three of the Bayside Messages. As soon as I read one, I knew that

God *was* speaking to his Faithful! "Thanks be to God!" I called out, lifting up my unburdened heart in joy to God for the first time in many years. I read all 250 Messages in the next few years and your oldest brother and I attended the June 18, 1982, anniversary vigil in which a Message was given. The two of us were made part of the standard and statue bearers in the procession.

In the years ahead many prayers were answered through the intercession of Our Lady of the Roses, Mary Help of Mothers. I truly believed the words of our Lady given at Bayside that those who come to these grounds and believe are *personally 'called by the Heavenly Father'* to receive the gift of knowledge, so that they stand within the "Circle of Light," holding a candle in the darkness, one of the pinpoints of light on the darkened map of the United States. I began to read Heaven's Messages from other times and places which addressed the latter times. As time went on we saw more and more people, believers of all creeds and even unbelievers, slowly awaken and try to throw off the dark blanket of deceit draped over their nation and the world. The candles of our knowledge helped cause in a small degree a spiritual light to penetrate the darkness around those many thousands of just souls we contacted or informed inasmuch as they chose to embrace the true Spirit of Faith.

It seemed that because we were chosen to lead this mission in Wyoming, the devil caused us special tribulations, using our sins, faults, and troubles as well as other agents as his instruments. All of this suffering produced a slow purification of our lives. We were by no means angels of spotless virtue. We too struggled to work out our salvation, even as you and I do now, Phillip. This constant labor helped prevent vanity and conceit, or complacency in our possession of uncommon knowledge about the future events of the latter days.

I saw my many "Letters to the Editor" over the years have the effect of bringing out similar opinions from those patriots who had been afraid to speak out in protest before. Witnessing to what we knew became an important part of our life.

But the structures of power in church and government, business and society kept marching on, their agenda and their propaganda becoming more and more subtle and persuasive as their action became more outrageous. But even the enemy had no choice but to

let the truth emerge, at least by their own actions. A battle raged for the allegiance of everyone's body, mind and soul under the appearance of normalcy and progress and enlightenment and good will.

All this was referred to by Our Lady at Bayside as the "battle of the spirits." I felt compelled to fight for the enlightenment of souls even in the face of their overwhelming resistance, deafness and blindness. In the battle of education and influence we sought to throw sparks that could ignite a small ground fire, which could someday spread to a forest fire. Only a few responded, and they, timidly, usually dropping out of sight before long. The truth has never been popular, Son. Coming to understand and act upon it is a slow tortuous process. Discouragement was our constant foe. Disappointment was our daily bread.

"What was your greatest obstacle in reaching the people, Father?"

A great hurdle for those who protested the work of the enemy, either in the church or the state, was the loyalty of the timid, the uneducated or the scandalized in defending the appearance and traditional reputation of the institution of the church or the state, not realizing that we critics were trying to save the very spirit and truth of those institutions

from those who were posing as their representatives but who were really trying to destroy them by their lies and unlawful, revolutionary misrepresentations.

I knew that George Washington was also considered a traitor by many Tories of his day because he and the rest of our Founding fathers seemed to challenge the respected institutions of English law and rule.

When I first read the account of George Washington's Vision, which several of his contemporaries put in the Congressional Record of Honor, I wondered where those few patriots were in my time who would have the courage to stand up and fight with me. For no more than 3%, it was said, fought for our freedom in the First Revolutionary War. Let us read of George Washington's Vision, Phillip. It confirmed the coming invasion of the United States that Heaven's Messages given at Bayside and Necedah had also warned us of.

#### GEORGE WASHINGTON'S VISION AND PROPHECY FOR AMERICA

By JOHN GRADY, M.D.

THE UNCOMMON MAN: The great British statesman and four times Prime Minister, William E. Gladstone, once proposed the creation of a grouping of pedestals for statues of history's most famous men. One pedestal stood higher than all the rest, and Gladstone was asked to identify the figure to be given the place of honor. Without a moment's hesitation, he named George Washington.

At the Continental Congress meeting in Philadelphia, December 1799, one of Washington's finest military commanders, the famous cavalry general, Henry "Light-Horse Harry" Lee, now Congressman from Virginia (and later to

become that state's governor) upon hearing of the death of our first president, rose to his feet and with tears in his eyes spoke for all Americans for all time when he said of Washington, "First in war, first in peace, and first in the hearts of his countrymen."

Washington had a commanding appearance. He was the most physically impressive of all of our Presidents, and in his prime stood over 6 feet 4 inches tall and was a lean and powerful 225 pounds. In addition, this handsome figure had a distinct military bearing.

It is not known what percentage of the Colonists genuinely supported the cause for freedom. Many of those who opposed independence constantly gave help, comfort and support to the enemy. Probably no more than 3% of the people in the Colonies actually took part in the fight for American independence. Then, as now, apathy, self-interest, uncertainty and fear prevailed among a large portion of the population.

**THE RESOLUTE LEADER:** Among the many outstanding men of leadership in the American Colonies, Washington stood out above all. Once the War for Independence began, he was quickly and logically chosen Commander-in-Chief of the Colonial Forces. Washington had the impossible task of taking a few thousand untrained volunteers and leading them against the armies of the world's greatest empire. Great Britain was a powerful and progressive nation with colonies and influence around the world, and she had mighty armies and fleets to defend her possessions. England could accurately boast that the sun never set upon her flag or the British empire.

General Washington led his men with a passion, courage and fortitude that could come only from total dedication. When the Continental Congress did not, or could not, send the funds for his soldiers' supplies and salaries, Washington paid for them out of his own pocket. He gained and held the allegiance of his men because he was fair, firm, resolute and dedicated. Moreover, he was a devoutly Christian man who made no

apology for prayer. He repeatedly called upon God for deliverance and victory in the struggle for freedom.

**THE MAN OF GOD:** The paintings of George Washington kneeling in prayer in the snow-covered woods of Valley Forge are based on fact. He believed that God would lead him to victory, and anyone who has read his handwritten letters and documents cannot help but be impressed by his reliance on the Almighty and his deep belief in Divine Guidance.

Strengthened by a sense of duty and honor, driven by a love of freedom and a hunger for justice, sustained by faith and confidence in divine providence – George Washington would not fail. He would fulfill his destiny. This uncommon man would lead the colonial forces to victory, become the father of our country, be unanimously acclaimed our first President, and set the course for what was to become history's greatest nation.

Little wonder, then that he was shown great favor by the God of our universe. As the prophets of old were shown the destiny of mankind, so was Washington shown the destiny of our nation. General Washington had an unusual and profound spiritual experience in Valley Forge. He was given a vision of so momentous importance that it prompts the writing of this paper and



the dissemination of this information to all concerned Americans.

Washington told of the event shortly after it took place. It was repeated to his close confidantes and fellow patriots during the 22 years he lived after its occurrence. And it has been carried in print from time to time over the past 200 years. However, since spiritual experiences tend to be ignored by secular historians, it has remained at times an obscurity.

It is the personal opinion of this writer that God moulded, inspired and directed George Washington. He was, indeed, chosen to be a special man, at a special time, for a special purpose.

**THE VISION:** Various accounts of George Washington's vision and prophecy all agree in content. There have been only minor variations in some details as the story was repeated over the years by those to whom it was related by General Washington. The place was Valley Forge, in the cold and bitter winter of 1777. Washington's army had suffered several reverses and the situation was desperate. Food was scarce. The Continental Congress was not sending supplies or money. Some of the troops did not even have shoes to wear in the snow. Many soldiers were sick and dying from disease and exposure. Morale was at an all-time low and there was great agitation in the Colonies against continued effort to secure our freedom from England. Nevertheless, General Washington was determined to see the struggle through.

These are the words of a first-hand observer, Anthony Sherman, who was there and describes the situation: "You doubtless heard the story of Washington's going to the thicket to pray. Well, it is not only true, but he used often to pray in secret for aid and comfort from God, the interposition of whose Divine Providence brought us safely through the darkest days of tribulation.

One day, I remember it well, when the chilly winds whistled through the leafless trees, though the sky was cloudless and the sun shone brightly, he remained in his quarters nearly all the afternoon alone. When he came out, I noticed that his face was a shade paler than usual. There seemed to be something on his mind of more than ordinary importance. Returning just after dusk, he dispatched an orderly to the quarters who was presently in attendance. After a preliminary conversation of about an hour, Washington, gazing upon his companion with that strange look of dignity which he alone commanded, related the event that occurred that day.

**WASHINGTON'S OWN WORDS:** "This afternoon, as I was

sitting at this table engaged in preparing a dispatch, something seemed to disturb me. Looking up, I beheld standing opposite me a singularly beautiful female. So astonished was I, for I had given strict orders not to be disturbed, that it was some moments before I found language to inquire the cause of her presence. A second, a third and even a fourth time did I repeat my question, but received no answer from my mysterious visitor except a slight raising of her eyes.

"By this time I felt strange sensations spreading through me. I would have risen but the riveted gaze of the being before me rendered volition impossible. I assayed once more to address her, but my tongue had become useless, as though it had become paralyzed.

"A new influence, mysterious, potent, irresistable, took possession of me.

All I could do was to gaze steadily, vacantly at my unknown visitor. Gradually the surrounding atmosphere seemed as if it had become filled with sensations, and luminous. Everything about me seemed to rarify, the mysterious visitor herself becoming more airy and yet more distinct to my sight than before. I now began to feel as one dying, or rather to experience the sensations which I have sometimes imagined accompany dissolution. I did not think, I did not reason, I did not move; all were alike impossible. I was only conscious of gazing fixedly, vacantly at my companion.

"Presently I heard a voice saying, 'Son of the Republic, look and learn,' while at the same time my visitor extended her arm eastwardly. I now beheld a heavy white vapor at some distance rising fold upon fold. This gradually dissipated, and I looked upon a strange scene. Before me lay spread out in one vast plain all the countries of the world – Europe, Asia, African and America. I saw rolling and tossing between Europe and America the billows of the Atlantic, and between Asia and America lay the Pacific.

"'Son of the Republic,' said the same mysterious voice as before, 'look and learn.' At that moment I beheld a dark, shadowy being, like an angel, standing, or rather floating in mid-air, between Europe and America. Dipping water out of the ocean in the hollow of each hand, he sprinkled some upon America with his right hand, while with his left hand he cast some on Europe. Immediately a cloud raised from these countries, and joined in mid-ocean. For a while it remained stationary, and then moved slowly westward, until it enveloped America in its murky folds. Sharp flashes of lightning gleamed through it in intervals, and I heard the smothered groans and cries of the American people.

"A second time the angel dipped water from the ocean, and sprinkled it out as before. The dark cloud was then drawn back to the ocean, in whose heaving billows it sank from view. A third time I heard the mysterious voice saying, 'Son of the Republic, look and learn,' I cast my eyes upon America and beheld villages and towns and cities springing up one after another until the whole land from the Atlantic to the Pacific was dotted with them.

"Again, I heard the mysterious voice say, 'Son of the Republic, the end of the century cometh, look and learn.' At this the dark shadowy angel turned his face southward, and from Africa I saw an ill-omened spectre approach our land. It flitted slowly over every town and city of the latter. The inhabitants presently set themselves in battle array against each other. As I continued looking I saw a bright angel, on whose brow rested a crown of light, on which was traced the word 'Union,' bearing the American flag which he placed between the divided nation, and said, 'Remember ye are brethren.' Instantly, the inhabitants, casting from them their weapons became friends once more, and united around the National Standard.

"And again I heard the mysterious voice saying, 'Son of the Republic, look and learn.' At this the dark, shadowy angel placed a

trumpet to his mouth, and blew three distinct blasts; and taking water from the ocean, he sprinkled it upon Europe, Asia and Africa. Then my eyes beheld a fearful scene: from each of these countries arose thick, black clouds that were soon joined into one. Throughout this mass there gleamed a dark red light by

which I saw hordes of armed men, who, moving with the cloud, marched by land and sailed by sea to America. Our country was enveloped in this volume of cloud, and I saw these vast armies devastate the whole country and burn the villages, towns and cities that I beheld springing up. As my ears listened to the thundering of the cannon, clashing of swords, and the shouts and cries of millions in mortal combat, I heard again the mysterious voice saying, 'Son of the Republic, look and learn.' When the voice had ceased, the dark shadowy angel placed his trumpet once more to his mouth, and blew a long and fearful blast.

"Instantly a light as of a thousand suns shone down from above me, and pierced and broke into fragments the dark cloud which enveloped America. At the same moment the angel upon whose head still shone the word Union, and who bore our national flag in one hand and a sword in the other, descended from the heavens attended by legions of white spirits. These immediately joined the inhabitants of America, who I perceived were well nigh overcome, but who immediately taking courage again, closed up their broken ranks and renewed the battle.

"Again, amid the fearful noise of the conflict, I heard the mysterious voice saying, 'Son of the Republic, look and learn.' As the voice ceased, the shadowy angel for the last time dipped water from the ocean and sprinkled it upon America. Instantly the dark cloud rolled back, together with the armies it had brought, leaving the inhabitants of the land victorious!

"Then once more I beheld the villages, towns and cities springing up where I had seen them before, while the bright angel, planting the azure standard he had brought in the midst of them, cried with a loud voice: 'While the stars remain, and the heavens send down dew upon the earth, so long shall the Union last.' And taking from his brow the crown on which blazoned the word 'Union,' he placed it upon the Standard while the people, kneeling down, said, 'Amen.'

"The scene instantly began to fade and dissolve, and I at last saw nothing but the rising, curling vapor I at first beheld. This also disappearing, I found myself once more gazing upon the mysterious visitor, who, in the same voice I had heard before, said, 'Son of the Republic, what you have seen is interpreted: Three great perils will come upon the Republic. The most fearful is the third, but in this greatest conflict the whole world united shall not prevail against her. Let every child of the Republic learn to live for his God, his land and the Union. With these words the vision vanished, and I started from my seat and felt that I had seen a vision wherein had been shown to me the birth, progress, and destiny of the United States."

Thus ended General George Washington's vision and prophecy for the United States of America as told in his own words.

Phillip, at Necedah, Wisconsin, our Lady's Messages of the 1950's revealed that China would invade America. At Bayside the nuclear invasion of the U.S. was often referred to. I was greatly moved then to learn that Our Lady had told the same to the Father of our Nation in the crucial moments of its bitter conception at Valley Forge, during the First American Revolutionary War. By God's design and grace I believed then what came to pass: that many George Washingtons throughout the United States and the

world would receive God's courage and guidance in the battle for God's glory and our survival as free, godfearing nations upon the earth. And I aspired very humbly to be such a servant of God, boldly offering myself, despite my incredible weakness of character and the odds against me. I realized that we would be moved and empowered by God almost totally, our greatest efforts being but constant acts of faith and trust in Him.

In 1985 your mother and I traveled to Necedah, Wisconsin, and there I believe I was given a special grace of patriotic fervor. Please read this for us while I rest, Son.

The following excerpts are taken from the introductory pages of Vol. III and Vol. IV of Henry Swan's 4 volume work, My Work with Necedah.

FOREWORD: Our Holy Mother, the Mother of Our Lord Jesus Christ, has through Mary Ann Van Hoof given certain work and facts, the purpose of which I do not know. I do know that the Revelations given change the entire world picture from that given to the people through the press, radio and television.

The cunning and basic plot for the control of the world has come down through the ages. It is of the devil, of the Anti-Christ. It has, in part or in its entirety, been adopted by groups or even by individual dictators, whose ambition was world control and world power. In its adoption by each one of these groups, it has been furthering the plan of those by whom it was first conceived.

Lenin and Marx in their plan for Communist control adopted it in its entirety. It is so diabolical, so cunning, so ruthless that those who have had an opportunity to read and study this plan can hardly believe that it could be conceived by a human mind. It is so well disguised, so cleverly hidden and the paths leading to the Central Plot and those behind made so complicated that in trying to trace back to 'those behind the plot, most get lost in the labyrinths where these devious paths lead them, and never get to the center of it.

... I asked Mary Ann if in any of her work the answer had been given as to who was behind this Plot from the beginning. She said: "It all started with 30 pieces of silver." In that very simple statement lies the answer to both of those questions and more. Those behind the Plot are the descendants of those who crucified Christ when He was here on earth, and have ever since that time been trying to destroy His Teachings and His Church.

...Russia is the seat of Communism today. Communism is controlled by the Jews and is only a tool that they use to achieve their purposes. The Russian Revolution was planned many years as part of this Yiddish Talmudic Plot, many years before it successfully took place. As early as 1900 they were infiltrating. Part of their plan was, as usual, to destroy and create situations which the Government could not handle and thus cause unrest and dissatisfaction among the people. When people are dissatisfied with their Government, then conditions are ripe for revolution and a change.

Russian Cossacks, horsemen of the Russian plains, were hired as paid Revolutionists. They created great terror among the people with their raiding, their cruel and inhuman treatment, murdering grownups and children alike in their cruel raids. The fact that the Government wasn't able to cope with this situation although they tried was one of the reasons the people were looking for a change. The Cossacks were able to dominate completely the Ukraine in White Russia, which is the wheat raising area, the breadbasket of Russia.

While this was going on, Lenin and other Revolutionists were

demanding the overthrow of the government which permitted those conditions to exist. The Czar and the Government were innocent and were trying to control things; in fact, the Czar, a good man, recognized what was going on, but was unable to control the situation.

... This great Plot was and is of necessity very complex. However, certain things are elementary. The public opinion must be led in the channels of thinking that they desire. We must be subjected to propaganda and kept from the truth. In this the Plot has been very successful. Our newspapers and press services are controlled. Many, many things are kept from the people, many are distorted and changed to fit best the purposes of the plotters. One of the main means of controlling the expression of opinions that might be detrimental to their cause or their plans is by means of controlled advertising. No newspapers or periodical can exist without advertising, so by means of threats to shut off advertising they can dictate editorial policies. They can handle that very nicely because they control the national advertising. Many papers in the Democratic South came out in support of Dwight Eisenhower for President due to this Pressure.

The depression which started with the market crash of 1929 was created to serve a purpose. Many of the newspapers, news services and magazines were bought up at that time as they were in financial trouble. Control of some were bought up for about five cents on the dollar of actual valuation. Radio, television and all means of communication are controlled. Some of our radio newscasters are among the male prostitutes who have sold themselves for a price. Their analysis of news directs the thinking of many, many people. Even false polls of one kind or another are used to influence public opinion. For instance, many people like to be able to pick a winner when they vote, and sometimes can be influenced in their vote by false polls.

Many items of news that could be harmful are stifled completely and never get into the news at all. The true story of Pearl Harbor has never been given to the public in the news. Pearl Harbor had been arranged to create an incident which would involve us into the war. These facts were revealed in the Work here. Kimmel and Short were made the goats, were accused of inefficiency and being derelict to their duties, but it was only to keep any suspicion from falling on those who were actually guilty. Exactly how many had guilty knowledge and had been in on the intrigue regarding Pearl Harbor, I do not know, but of these I do know as they are given in the Work. Franklin Delano Roosevelt was guilty in every way. He helped with arrangements, so was guilty of murder of those who lost their lives there. Harry L. Hopkins made some of the arrangements. This is a direct quote from the Work: "Scrap material and scrap iron was sent in great quantities to Japan first before the war. Also concealed under the scrap material was much new material of war, all ready to be used for the Pearl Harbor deal. All this was planned long in advance.

"Cordell Hull, Sinclair, Franklin D. Roosevelt, Louis D. Brandeis, Harry L. Hopkins, Harold Ickes, George C. Marshall, II L. Stimson, Walter Bedell Smith – all knew about it and helped to promote it to a greater or lesser degree ... Pearl Harbor was a great disappointment to them because there were too many survivors. It was supposed to be a complete massacre, like Custer's last

stand."

... The news coverage and propaganda on Korea was the same. In the first place, the Korean Police Action, as it was called, to cover up the fact that we had been engaged in an illegal war by order of the President instead of by Declaration as provided for in the Constitution of the United States, was a disastrous War which served its purpose in

the great world plot. It was designed to weaken us, to syphon off the manpower of this Christian Nation. It is to make us more susceptible when the time comes for our final destruction. Again Great Britain and their friend Russia were in complete agreement, as were the traitors in our own Country. Neither Russia nor Great Britain sustained any losses in achieving their purpose. We lost 150,000, the cream of our young men. They were not permitted to go in and win the war as they could have done, but were forced to fight according to the rules of our enemies, Russia and Great Britain. Our supposed Ally, Great Britain, was getting Lend Lease material from the United States as our Ally, and re-selling it to Russia to be thrown back at our soldiers by the Red Chinese, Allies of Russia. It was the greatest disgrace to which this Country was ever exposed, and it was all done with full knowledge and support by many in our government.

... General McArthur was called back to this Country in disgrace because he wanted to go ahead and win the War instead of seeing our boys slaughtered off in useless combat, in a War not supposed to be won. When he got here he was silenced by threats of reprisal against himself and his family and was finally bribed off by a big paying job. He could tell many things if he would talk.

The serpent is the symbolic snake of Judaism. It has been mentioned in the revelations on several occasions.

... They will strike at our most important cities first, the industrial centers. They have succeeded in ousting our Senator (Joe McCarthy) out of his work, they tied his hands. The Serpent blinded many of their eyes during the investigation.

... As early as 929 B.C., according to the records of Secret Jewish Zionism, Solomon and other Jewish learned men thought out a scheme in theory for powerful conquest of the whole universe by Zion. As history developed the scheme was worked out in detail. These learned men decided by peaceful means to conquer the world for Zion, with the slyness of the symbolic Snake. The head of the snake was to represent those who had been initiated into the plan, the body represented the Jewish people. The secret was always kept from the Jewish people. This snake has penetrated, devoured and destroyed nations all through history. It has been done largely by infiltration and economic control.

Many small nations have been subdued entirely by economic conquest. The plot calls for bringing about moral corruption and degeneration by any and all means, including the sacrificing of many of their own people.

A map of the course of the Symbolic Snake is shown as follows: Its first stage in Europe was in 429 BC in Greece where, about the time of Pericles, the snake started eating into the power of that country. Rome was next in the time

of Charles V in 1552 AD. ...

The head of the Snake appeared over St. Petersburg in 1881. England and Germany were to be spared economically until the conquest of Russia was complete.

... The statement about sports and funnies was intentional because it is part of the plan that people shall become so interested in those things that their attention is diverted away from the real issues. It is much easier to take over a people who are so occupied with inconsequential things that they haven't any time even to notice that their freedoms are being destroyed and they are becoming the slaves of their own controlled Government.

... I know as sure as I sit here and write that the big cry will go and the big smear against this book will start as soon as some of the Big Zionists get their hands on it. The agonized cry of anti-Semitism will surely go forth, but let it be known here and now that for the Jews that are being victimized by their leaders I have nothing but sympathy. I do not want to see

any persecution of innocent people. They have been victimized down through the Centuries and all through no fault of their own. The average Jew is no more guilty of the policies of their so-called Learned Elders than are you and I of the policies of our State Department, policies which are also aimed at our destruction. This statement in the Protocols in itself absolves the Jewish people of guilt. The head of the snake was to represent those who had been initiated into the plan, the body represented the Jewish people. ... The secret has always been kept from the Jewish people."

"At twenty, Father, I seem to be awakening to political realities. When did this time come for you?"

The beginning of my political awakening, Phillip, occurred at age 24 after returning from Vietnam in 1971. In DaNang I had known those Asian Catholics who fled from North Vietnam to escape the Communist butcher, Ho Chi Minh, whose soldiers I had met on the battlefield. I narrowly escaped with my life. I left in Vietnam a Vietnamese widow whom I had a great affection for. Hat was one of the most virtuous women and pious Catholics I ever knew. I will never know what became of her in 1975 when the USA *betrayed* the anti-communist South Vietnamese, whom we had formerly supported, helping them fight for their freedom from future Communist slavery. From 1971 to 1975 I watched in sickening horror as leftist American propagandists like Jane Fonda battered Americans' resolve to battle Communism. Fighting this altruistic war against the advance of atheistic Communism in defense of the good and defenseless people of the world was what the great power given by God to America was for. But Vietnam was all a set up like Korea. When we turned our back on this battle and the South was overrun, I felt that our punishment as a nation was sealed. It was like a strong man abandoning the defense of a child who was being murdered by a bully whom that man was capable of subduing. As if it was all planned for in advance, the USA gave in to the selfish whining of the anti-patriots who claimed we had no national interests overseas interfering in a "civil war." When the U.S. refused to resupply South Vietnam with

arms, morale collapsed, and the wave of North Vietnamese Communism subdued that nation in a matter of weeks. That year, 1975, I graduated from the University of Wyoming with a Master's Degree in English and Philosophy.

Vietnam was another Korea, with a UN engineered "demilitarized zone" which we could not cross in order to destroy the bases of the enemy operation. It was another UN managed war designed to further the conquest of the world by Communism. I was greatly angered, rudely awakened to the enemy within. They had used the lives of 58,129 U.S. soldiers (young men of my generation) to gain a hands-off-Communism-forever policy for the U.S.A., effectively leaving the sheep of the whole world as unprotected game for the ravages of the Chinese Dragon and the Russian Bear. I saw a large swath of turncoat Americans who had supported our troops in that war slowly turn color as they "kissed the butt" of the Media line. They had become de-moralized. The fall of Vietnam in 1975 was the great turning point for the USA in the latter half of the 20<sup>th</sup> Century, Phillip.

In turning America "about face," the enemy had banked on the fact that everybody wants to choose a winner. By dragging the war out, and by highlighting the casualties, the atrocities, the betrayals of our troops and of our allies, the Media had created a distaste for all this loss in the face of no obvious gains. Phillip, these half baked Americans who turned color liked to be called Pragmatists. No compassion or love or

courage or sacrifice here. Whatever happens is right; it was meant to be, obviously. The enemy, the insiders within our Government knew, if they could manipulate events as they wished, they could convince those many lukewarm pragmatists among us to second their motions. These worshippers of "public opinion," were in the majority because Americans had become morally soft and rotten. Just as Catholics were being misled by change agents infiltrated into the clergy and hierarchy, Americans were being led by a succession of traitorous Presidents and governments. They accepted the lie that what "happens" is ordained by God; it was "meant to be," it's the best.

"But isn't this true, Father?"

Some of what happens God only permits, Phillip. Evil He does not ordain. Because God permits some evil this does not excuse the evil or the evildoer. "But the way things turn out is ordained reality" was the new *modernist doctrine* of "providence." The "god of the moment" had arrived, the ultimate Communist/Modernist movement which needs no explanation, no rationale or philosophy – no reason. Totally arbitrary. What happens is to be accepted as permanent and inevitable, reasonable and good, the experience of Fate's ordaining will. We are talking about a hypnotism, a mass brainwashing, to arrive at a nation of programmed sheep. Terror or ecstasy are the ultimate reactions in this state of slavery. Something like this was observed in the German concentration camps and documented: masses of crowded, starved, naked people lunged, as one human animal, here and there like a



single crazed terrified being.

The difference was that Americans were treated like fattened cattle, constantly flattered by the media with the lie that they, the people, were in control, that *they* (by their apathy) were making history, while they were actually just watching it, participating only in a vicarious sense in their own destiny. In this way *people were told* what it is *they wanted*. If more adultery was reported by the press, it was because that's what Americans wanted. Why would it have happened otherwise. If most Americans bought floridated toothpaste, it's because that's what Americans want, not because nothing else was for sale. This is the hype language of the advertising or auto suggestion industry.

So, the Communist Press cultivated the pragmatic point of view by *managing* the supposed reactions of "the people" to the world -- which the media surrounded them with. The spiritual health of individuals, families and nation was probably roughly equivalent to whether and how much they uncritically watched television, read newspapers and magazines and watched movies.

I remember in 1985 at work I presented my study of the Overthrust Geological area I had been working on for a year. It was a good prospect, but it was torpedoed by a jealous geophysicist, who admitted later that he worked for the *personal glory* of being the one to find the oil. He only scoffed when I said that I worked to *find the oil*. Other prospects I had come up with, later drilled successfully by other companies, were shot down by our management for insufficient reasons. A few geologists were offended by similar treatment but were too timid to fight for the truth; others, the ones who stayed with and were promoted by the company said, "You have to go with the flow, Dave." I said, "No, I'm going to go with what I think is true and right, and if they don't go with it, I'd rather be emptying garbage cans. I'll know then that my work is benefitting someone."

Oil companies purposely turned down good drilling prospects, purposely financed poor ones and otherwise wasted money on expensive ventures that were never intended

to drill a single *producing* well. This made U.S. petroleum exploration look like a bad risk, and was used as a partial justification to develop much cheaper oil overseas in Communist countries or international waters. By the late 90's our oil industry was gutted of personnel and equipment, as well as exploration capital. Small producers had sold out to big companies. It became abundantly clear over the next 20 years that agents in the key management positions of all our industries were copying the tactics of big international oil companies.

Many industries allowed Internationalism to put America out of business, a big step in our takeover. Almost every basic American industry was decimated by 1999: steel, textiles, automobiles, most every consumer good, lumber, ranching, fishing. Everything was "Made in China," that is, made someplace else with slave labor or virtually stolen from the natural resources of the contributing nation, all at huge profits for the Internationalist Traders.

American competitors were undersold and put out of business. Because Big Money controlled the buying of our agricultural products, they could set prices so low for America's farmers and ranchers that they went bankrupt and their land and production facilities were bought up by international or foreign corporations

"We didn't even end up owning our own farmland?"

That which Americans owned was mortgaged, and the Federal or State Governments owned nearly all that was left, the forested high country and deserts of the Western United States. In 1999, by Executive Order, the President placed 40 million acres of Federal land off limits to forestry, mining and recreation. Already the U.S. Forest Service policies managing our huge timberlands had artificially produced diseased, overgrown, fire-ripe forests that would burn totally, sterilizing the earth. They prevented the harvesting of these tinderboxes while our forest industry starved for lack of timber to mill.

To try and fight all this fraud as an individual, without putting it wholly in the hands of Divine Providence, causes great psychological shock, even grief. But even when it was surrendered to God and a man had done all he could, great anger remained and a thirst for justice. I went through this fire, Son, as a teacher, as a geologist, as a patriot, and as a traditional Catholic trying to defend the true Church from her enemies within. I often cried out on my way to work, "My Jesus, My Confidence! Show me your will, O God." His will was that I be humiliated, sacrificed on the altar of the love He had given me for His Word, for my Country, for myself and my Family and for all men, for the truth and what is right. *Truth Contradicted*, as it suffered in all things and all matters, was the Crucifix of sacrifice I offered with Jesus on the altar of Divine Faith wedded to my frail humanity. And I believe the same was true in those times of all just souls, Phillip.

Sometimes I would walk into our house like a time bomb, primed to first preach against some evil and then end up in a rage. I was like two persons, one loving, one hating, one aspiring and striving after good, one despairing of ever having good. If I didn't fight for what was right, I felt the coward who forsook his conscience. If I did fight, I felt like the tyrant and the inevitable loser of all good. I know now, Phillip, that the just people of the whole world were going through variously similar hells. The Christian is crucified in the fact that he has a conscience that knows and loves good, but that knows he is a sinner too. He sees what is wrong about himself and all else and yet he

yearns for the good. So he is pulled in two directions, as one who is crucified. It was a time like no other times, when disillusionment tore people up psychologically like a dog shaking a rag doll.

"I feel sorry for you even now, Father. I could cry."

Except that it was also my personal failure of faith and trust in God, which led to a failure of self-control and humility; all this dragged me through the mud. But even this was a

grace, for in allowing me to bitterly experience what I lacked and where I failed, God provided me with the motivation to conquer these faults and seek the good I lacked. As the years went on, Phillip, I learned the crucially important lesson: *God* is in control, not me, not them, much less "chance" or "humanity" or "nature" or other such abstractions. God was putting us through a great crucible of suffering in order to purify the gold in us. As I grew out of my human sinfulness and my doubt, I saw that the personal hostilities and illicit attractions that had sometimes existed in my relations with people were due to a secret pride and self-righteous anger which saw others as somehow less than me, less loved by God. This was inevitable until I was forced to admit the depth of my own weaknesses, which put me on a level lower than those ignorant ones that I had secretly despised and those who were letting the enemy overrun us. For, the more grace and truth we are given, the more is expected of us. If I have ever done one meritorious act, it was only by the grace of God, Phillip. Only God is in final control. We can cooperate or not. Can you believe that, Son?

"I see in you only good now, Father."

But if left alone without God's grace, our potential may be for good but our inevitable willful propensity is for evil. If we do not return to consider our beginnings in the Fall of our first Parents, we will not reach out to Him. We will be swallowed up by *pride*. That is why our story had to begin with our first parents. We must acknowledge the handicap of our weakened human nature or be doomed to pride and all its pitfalls in overestimating the goodness of that fallen nature.

If I was anything in God's plan of salvation other than a heavy load for Him and for others to carry, it was only because He could use my good desire and efforts, however feeble and imperfect. It was like riding a wave. All you have to do is *stay balanced on your surfboard of humility!* I came to see that God could not expect heroic efforts of us but only a profound, heroic *Faith in Him!* His *grace* would make us Saints by our works of Faith, performed by the power of that grace. Through His power we became *witnesses* to His Power and Glory.

The more arduous the battle and the more confidence in Him we had to come up with, the deeper our personal humility and our dependence on Him had to become. For one does not depend on another for what he believes he himself is capable.

"So, Father, if we see that there is no good in us but what He gives us, He will recreate us by His Grace to rise above our fallen human nature. Our cup must be empty if He is to fill it."

Yes.

"How can we give anything to God, Father? I want to love Him, but I am so poor. He doesn't need me."

He doesn't need you in Himself, for Himself, but He needs you in the sense that He has made you a member of His team by which He means to overcome His opponents. And, if we use *His love for us*, which purifies us as the object of His affection, *to love*

*Him in return*, then we offer to Him the pure and Holy and Divine gift of *His own Perfect Love*. That Gift is truly valuable to Him, Phillip. This love was truly and always will be ours to give, since it was first given to us by Him. So, through His generosity, His self-giving, we frail creatures of free will can truly Love Him. The love we are given to give in return is the Love of God for Himself, in the Trinity, that is, God's own *Life*. From the Furnace of this Love all creation came to be. *We* can truly live the Life of God, for Jesus said the Trinity would come to abide *in us!*

The Army that God finally used to conquer the enemy was founded primarily on this humility that thirsted for the grace of God's Love. Humility was the virtue most eminent in the Mother of God, whose heel through the power of her Son, would crush the head of the serpent. (Genesis 3:15) The Seed of the womb of Mary's humility, the Holy Spirit of God, conceived the God-Man, Jesus Christ, Who came to Mary, the representative of God's People, as His chosen Mother, because of her total Faith in Him and her total humility in regard to herself. By Christ's power she and her spiritual children crushed the head of the serpent.

"So humility and Divine Love returned to God is the way of life and also the way of battle against the Antichrist?"

Yes.

"Can you picture to me in various ways what people were like in those days, Father?"

A whole society of individuals were in the paroxysms of a self-control disease. The cause was an inability to comprehend the eternal and the spiritual *behind* the temporal and material appearance of reality and our experience of it. When I saw God working behind the events of this world, I could "Let go and let God." My knuckles had been white gripping the steering wheel of life. As it slowly dawned on me that God not only created the world but was *running* it, *sustaining* it, *directing* and *protecting* it, the blood started to return to my relaxing hands. I focused more on guiding *my* life and seeing to the familial and civil duties that had been given into *my* hands. Responsibility became easier to carry, as did disappointments, and I could allow the imperfections and errors and sins that surrounded me to exist without personalizing them either as temptations or as objects of frustrating hate and rejection. I was not Jesus Christ, the Saviour; I was the one being saved; and it was most important that I follow instructions and keep my head low and my heart in good regular working order.

The psychology business grew explosively in the last 40 years of the Century. As the spiritual life of Faith was sucked out of people's lives, the craving for power and control over all aspects of their lives made them crazy, literally. Moral disorder ensued. And "Sin," as Our Lady said at Bayside, "is insanity."

"So your're saying that virtue is allowing *God* to control your life?"

Exactly! Humans have a *tendency* to lose control from birth to death, due to the consequences of Adam's sin. *Therefore, we must turn to God* for help. Even the ungodly must turn to a "higher power" to achieve this "other-direction" in their life, for man's spirit was not made to be independent, but is dependent upon a higher spirit which actualizes his potential to become what he was created to be. But man chooses that spirit. The wicked turn directly to Satan, the indulgent turn to food, sex, ease, the avaricious to wealth and power, Satan's lures. The basic principles of modern psychology, founded on the principles of the atheist, Sigmund Freud, and developed by the enemy, assumed that

man was a social animal to be guided. Therefore, psychological counseling often sought to direct the individual by group consensus which was based on the feelings and notions of the popular ethics and philosophy of that moment in the history of that culture or group population. So modern psychology offered someone who was driven to self-satisfying compulsions because he was not allowing God to be the ruler of his life, "help" in the form of controlling his life by throwing out God and His rules out and accepting society's lifestyles and his immoral values as okay, as long as they don't break its civil law.

"The sickness treated was real, but the proposed care was bogus."

Right, Son.

"They tried to solve personal problems of self control by denying the source of the problem as one's turning away from God in sin to begin with."

Yes. They said the problem could be biological, it could be the values you accepted from your parents, your imperfect upbringing, but it was never the willful violation of your own conscience, your God-given rational nature by sin. That concept of sin was strictly forbidden in discussion. The superficial control offered by psycho-therapy supposedly redeemed your self-esteem, saying 'walk within society's limits and then do what you will.' But the internal man is not dealt with here, just the social animal. People who had come into this therapy emotionally sick came out sufficiently cautioned to avoid breaking society's rules, but ethically sick, not renouncing, in principle the former sinfulness of lust, greed or sensuality, for example, that initially generated the antisocial, self-destructive and often illegal habit that brought them into therapy.

"In a way, the patient has gone from bad to worse, Father."

And the essential error was that you could believe anything you wanted about what was morally right and still be okay, but you must play by the rules or laws of the current community, where the only authority that concerns you resides. And of the modern secular mind, I recall the words of Hillaire Belloc, "It's not that they don't believe in God, they believe in *everything*." And so it was in my day, Son. People would go to church and worship the Christian God while the couple practices artificial birth control, men allow their women to dress immodestly and their children to enter into all kinds of darkness and temptation. Homosexuality or casual extramarital relationships were condoned under the supposed law of Christian tolerance. Viewing all kinds of immorality on the insidious TV tube was allowed by parents to themselves and their children because it was entertaining and acceptable to modern audiences.

"It seems that a principle of hypocrisy had entered society, Father. What was the cause of that?"

The culture of my time was an advanced form of protestant relativism that had quite logically given birth to a totally godless, antichristian spirit, a transformation which this philosophical serpent of relativism accomplished. In Belloc's essay *On Usury* he states the

essential difference between a Catholic and Protestant culture is that the former is based on principle, however sinful and imperfect, while the latter lacks principle.

"Next it should be pointed out that there is all the difference in the world between a system in which an immoral principle is admitted and one in which, though the immorality is practiced, the principle is denied. There is, and presumably always will be, plenty of adultery, murder, swindling, and the rest, present in society; but the society in which the rights of property are admitted, in which marriage is sacred and to which the taking of human life is abhorrent, is very different from one where the sexes are promiscuous, or where Communism prevails, or where killing for private

revenge or whim is an accepted pastime. To murder a bore, to run off with your neighbor's wife, even to pick a man's pocket, are still in our society abnormalities: abnormalities which we old-fashioned people ascribe to the Fall of Man, but which the most exuberant Pelagian will at least not deny to take place. There is all the difference in the world between a society in which such lapses continue, or are even tolerated, and one in which they are called good."

The modern, unprincipled culture that leads to hypocrisy -- which is none else than an absence of principle with a face of virtue, a cadaver if you will, the mere body or image of moral virtue without the soul animating it.

Modern psychology became a tool in the hands of Communism, the super-protestors against Christ's Word and Church. "We will," they said, "take away the idea of God, then offer you consolation with our impoverished view of man as a conditioned, social animal. Here each person's past experience or fancy could be validated, *except* those who claimed objective, absolute realities and values that bind all. That is, people of all persuasions can be validated, except Catholics, the real Christians. As you will see, Phillip, there came a time when true Christians were considered unworthy of anything but death. They were feared as mirrors of death-dealing truth. Bowing to the creed of pluralism became a social requirement, at the price of your life, just as worship of the Emperor did in the first three centuries AD.

"But I've heard it said that it was a very scientific age, and it seems a scientist would respect those who based their reasoning on objective realities, instead of relativistic evaluations."

So you would think, and so did I. But I noticed that a large percentage of young geologists, for example, tended toward atheism or agnosticism on one hand or, on the other, towards psychic spiritualism, Mormonism or Pentecostalism. Neither was the rational direction expected from a true scientist. I finally figured that my mistake was in assuming that either group were, indeed, scientists, except in a narrow, commercial sense. A scientist or man of knowledge works logically from intuitively known, self-evident truths to less basic truths or probabilities, a deductive process of thinking. The modern pseudo-scientist, however, would pretend to begin knowing nothing at all for certain, collect tons of technical data, and

then make conclusions based on the most "obvious" or useful or popular or "pragmatic" *interpretation* of that "*the data*" suggested. This phony, inductive method of "thinking" gave "data" an anonymous, yet unquestioned, authority for making *anyconclusions desired*, in place of conclusions, based on rational principles of human reasoning.

"So now the human being is not responsible for arriving at the proven truth, Father."

Right. In the workplace this phony objectivity, with its smorgasbord of most-convenient-conclusions-of-the-moment was a handy tool for coming up with evidence for what the bosses had made it known they already wanted to hear. I called it "kiss butt geology".

"A horrible term, Father."

But for a horrible thing, Phillip. All sciences, all jobs, all human business succumbed to the disease. Logical thinking was redefined as "personal prejudice." But, while deductive reasoning was falsely branded as prejudicial, subjective thinking or tampering with the evidence by the pseudo-intellectual was hidden by a pretended

submission to "the facts." The pretense was that "facts" were impersonal, certain and not subject to manipulation by personal value systems or questioning. Authority, therefore, rested in "facts". Actually "fact" is an abstraction denoting human observations processed by human judgements based on past knowledge, assumptions, values, etc.

"This is not purely objective then, Father."

No. But with their phony authority, the "facts" became slippery tools for those who refused to submit to the acid test of logic but who wanted their opinion to be accepted without question.

"So they claimed the right to be "objectively" dogmatic by pretending to be humbly submissive to the facts."

Exactly. The great error of the "Scientific Age" was that it was the very opposite of scientific; for the mind was given no credit as being a faculty created by the same God that created the rest of Nature, therefore having its own intrinsic standards of self-evident objectivity and validation. With this loss of faith in this logos or logic, scientific demonstrations designed to prove their conclusions were never begun or were called into question by the flimsiest objections or doubts.

Most people I talked to, no matter how much of an expert they were in regard to the matter under discussion seemed to utterly fail the test of the scientific mind. This seemed to occur in the degree to which they were or were not true Christians.

"Really, Father!?"

Reason itself seems to require Grace to operate well. Knowledge, as Belloc mentioned, depends on Faith.

"Faith appears to be the opposite of knowledge, Father."

If I tell you that 2 and 2 equals 4, you will acquire this certainty or knowledge upon faith in my authority or on faith in your reason, your intellectual ability to know the self-evident truth of such a matter. This same relationship between faith and knowledge exists in all subjects, and at every level of rationality. The so-called "scientific age" served to "build better mousetraps," with computers and robots virtually running whole factories and businesses; there were ingenious "systems" of all kinds, but the practical reason that conceived all this could not build an ethical grass hut, because the faith in reasoning truly about spiritual matters did not exist for the materialist, or to those who used the mere notion of morality as a rubber stamp for what they wanted, rather than as a science with its own self-evident truths, first principles, and commonly accepted body of doctrine.

"How did you endure it, Father?"

Because as a culture we had lost touch with reality due to this insanity of our age, the conversation of truly rational, Godly men turned more and more away from those around them towards the Kingdom of God shining from within. Through this *recollection* we became increasingly able to look through the 360 degree picture windows of the soul God had made for us. Our mental-emotional life became a prayer before the end, a continual communication or communion with God through the medium of His holy angels, who literally surrounded us with protection and inspiration.

"That sounds like a description of the 'saints of the latter days', Father."

The saints of those times were almost indistinguishable from the mass of suffering humanity. Quiet, courageous actions distinguished them usually.

Pseudo-science became the tool of sorcery, conjuring up all kinds of satanic fantasies. For example, it said abortion was not murder because no human being existed to be killed, since "the human fetus" is not viable until birth.

"Even a child can reason better than that, Father."

Why bless it with the name of reason at all, Son. It was part of the Din of Satanic Madness. Real science, even that of a child, would ask, "will this embryo grow to be a giraffe? or a frog? Would it not *only* grow to be a human being, every time, no exceptions. If so, it was always a human being from the moment of conception.

And so the various controversies raged, one after another. The sheep were being separated from the goats before the return of the Shepherd. The Community of God, *His* Church, was being refined and purified. Only His sheep were able to hear His voice and follow Him to safety in the confusion of voices.

In 1984, I said to Ruth, 'I want you to school the children at home. At first she felt overwhelmed, but as time went on she became more and more capable as a teacher. We learned that Jesus too had been homeschooled. The rabbinical schools of His time had been corrupted with error even as had our Catholic parochial schools.



The final push towards the major step of homeschooling for us was the school principal forcing our nine year old daughter, over our specific objections, to hear a reading in class from a pornographic, immoral, anti-Catholic, anti-parental authority children's novel by Judy Blume. We made local and national news on that one. It was rare for parents to object to books whose nine to eleven year old heroes and heroines were masturbating with the author's approbation.

This was probably the sin that first corrupted most youth and led to greater sexual deviancies later on in their life. If sex is okay for self-gratification, why not enjoy an adulterous relationship, fornication or any other sexual pleasure. When the public and parental disapproval of this sin of youth disappeared, the individual under temptation lost a significant help in resisting it. For me it was a struggle of many years, many confessions. The most wonderful thing about God is His Mercy. After rising from sin and repenting of it, He not only restores the grace that was lost but adds more in return for our merit in rejecting the sin morally. In this way a habit that causes so much discouragement to the just soul can be the occasion of progress, if resisted adamantly.

But "moderns" saw any suffering as the moral evil, while the objective sin that caused that suffering to the normal human conscience was excused as "okay." Therefore, because the decision to sin and the act of sinning did not feel bad, the sinning was okay, but the guilty conscience afterwards did feel bad, so this guilt was *not* okay. So the guilt and the conscience which produced it must be what is bad, they "reasoned." On the other hand, if it feels good or *feels* "right", do it.

"Father, I think you would want me to remind you to get back to our story."

That's right. Or Mom will think we have departed for the Promised Land. I think I left off somewhere between Mass and work in the brown Toyota. Okay. The big oil companies all moved out of the Rocky Mountains to Texas in their progressive abandonment of U.S. exploration. After four failures in getting my company to drill my prospects, I was glad to stay in Wyoming when they left the State. In my last year with them I had worked with a man I believed to be a Russian spy, a geologist, of shabby sorts, who had too readily offered an escape-from-Russia story. His mission, I believe, was to influence the U.S. handover to the Russians of certain islands in the Bering Sea

that were to be used later for staging the invasion of America. Since our government agencies handling any such exposes were thoroughly infiltrated with Communists, I saw no use in passing on my suspicions. He was a nice guy. I had a concern for his soul, but he proved to be a confirmed atheist. In the end, I withheld the geology he had dug out of me; so he left for the big meeting in Alaska almost empty-handed.

After 1987 I started painting houses, while developing a giant, first-class oil prospect in the Wyoming Overthrust Belt. For fifteen years I tried to sell it, but it was almost as if the

devil had used his influence over everyone to kill the development of new production in the U.S.

"Why would the Devil care about such a thing and how would he do it, Father?"

Why would God want a hospital to be built? To accomplish some good human purpose. How would He do it? He would inspire good people with the idea, the desires, the charity necessary to bring it about. So too, the Devil wanted the U.S. to be dependent on other nations for its vital oil, so that these sources could be cut off in the critical moments of America's fate.

"I am beginning to see that both the good and evil spiritual powers interact in the everyday experience of mankind."

My royalties, if I had sold my prospect, would have been used to promote the dissemination of the truth. The oil found would have helped America be free of the oil embargo that helped bring our economy down. I believed that the agents of the World Revolutionary Movement (WRM) had infiltrated all big businesses and all key positions of influence in the U.S. This seemed to be evidenced constantly.

After one rough winter of little income I was behind on house payments and had to go bankrupt. Here is a good example of usury. A house I had borrowed \$46,000 to buy for \$50,000 and had paid \$60,000 toward the purchase of in ten years was reappraised for \$31,000. I was levied the difference between this and the \$47,000 I still owed in principal and penalties. This was the last time I dealt with Banksterism.

With all our belongings on the patio, ready to move out before a court order deadline the next day, our would-be landlord backed out. Why had God brought me to this crisis, Phillip? Well I was forced into buying a house and two acres near the mountain I loved, with a good water well and 3 sections of useable State land behind it for only \$35,000 cash, borrowed from our parents at no interest. We saw it as a direct act of Divine Providence. The house lay in the same foothills that I had so often loved to stare at while being driven up the mountain by my parents. It was the same place I had gone to pray for a wife, and the same place in which I had for several years had dreams of starting a traditional Catholic community. For we used to take Sunday walks upon this land in the Spring, with its wildflowers dotting green slopes, rushing creeks and the rugged beauty of Wyoming's foothills. To me it was like Abraham's Promised Land, a physical place, yes, but with a personal, mysterious religious significance that seemed to promise a new, purified and chastened people, a home, a people who would "worship God in spirit and in truth". I held onto this dream for 15 years through desperate personal struggles, through good times and bad.

The new house I stained dark green as symbolic of our hope. Crucifixes were placed on all doors and a white armored knight with shield and sword knelt before a statue of the Virgin by our rose colored front door.

Our homeschool was a great success. Four of the first six graduates went on to college. We joined several very active homeschool organizations, where the children participated in many sporting events, field trips, and classes of various kinds. We associated with a few traditional Catholic homeschoolers and a greater number of Protestant Fundamentalists, who were the moral equivalent of a traditional backlash against Protestant liberalism. We prayed fervently for their conversion and gave them a good example of traditional Catholicism unstained by Modernism.

As a house painter I spoke on a casual basis with many people of different characters, faiths and occupations. They tended to be conservative politically and morally upright, at least in their own eyes. But, sadly, few under 50 could say they were still in their first marriage. Many were Catholics fallen away from the practice of their Faith. All watched television even though they spoke derogatorily of its viewing menu. Most understood that the moral corruption and insane socialist government was leading us towards a great crisis. Most were honest, and I was rarely cheated in residential work, where personal integrity and responsibility reigned.

"Did these people of common decency fight for their country, Father?"

And sacrifice their own security, comfort and self-interest? Most did not, Phillip. It takes unselfish love and solid principle to reach the point of real self-sacrifice. An awareness of surrounding evils and a desire for good is insufficient motivation. There must be personal commitment, a sense of binding duty for a person to act courageously and pay a price for it. The public acts of these common people I speak of did not match what they claimed to believe. Apathy hindered the execution of their duty before God and man. Or perhaps they assumed they could separate their personal interior life and their public life. The Media's propaganda machine intimidated the moral conservatism of people and made them feel isolated, when they may after all have been in the majority, a timid, silent majority that let the reins of government and of all power fall into the hands of evil. I saw in people this split personality: a God-fearing individual respectful of tradition, versus his public, opinion-poll image as a social animal, which he was directed to assume as a citizen by the god of human respect. Phillip, this public personality was controlled by the very pundits of the press whom this same person sneered at in private conversation!

"Do you mean they showed one face to you and another ..."

...To a person of a different persuasion. Two-faced. Many-faced, actually. I had great reservations about a patriotic army based on this kind of mediocrity of values and plebian hypocrisy. Could one trust such a person in crisis? Yet there was *some* potential for conversion. Sometimes great crises bring heroic charity out of tepid souls. A hope existed. I had no doubt about the inevitability of war. The only question was, how much resistance would there be? And at what stage of the deterioration of our civilization and nation would this resistance arise?

"How did you know war was coming, Father?"

The first major rehearsals of warfare and mass terror propaganda by the enemy within our Nation, Phillip, was conducted by their agents in the U.S. Justice Department, our FBI, BATF and Federal Marshalls. They were purposely ordered to burn alive over one hundred innocent men, women and children at Waco, Texas. These people had been led by a FBI asset posing as a religious doomsday nut into a building which was then surrounded by an army of militarized police. Tear gas was pumped into the building in a

lethal and explosive concentration. The inferno was then ignited by a government tracer rounds. The woman heading the Department of Justice not only took full responsibility for this mass murder, but she and the President told the Nation it was a warning to similar parties who might consider resisting a future Government Police State by forming a religious congregation, storing food and arms in preparation for war, etc. Of course, most of the actors were "just following orders." This is how systematic evil works. It proposes to the individual that he is relieved of his duty to obey his personal conscience, because a higher authority has assumed command, the collective *conscience* of State. But man's intellect faces God, Phillip. And God will require obedience to His Law and a rejection of all voices to the contrary.

"Many people must have been condemned for being the operators who enabled the evil system to carry out all of its programmed evils.

I believe vast numbers of these cowards are damned to Hell forever. I once read somewhere that "God hates a coward."

"I find it easy to sympathize with them, Father."

So do I, Phillip. We all faced fear. Evil, both small and great, was everywhere. So that the least act of merit or of good required the overcoming of fear, especially the fear of self-sacrifice.

"Then all personal evil or sin would be an act of cowardice?"

All roses come with thorns, Phillip. If we flee the good and the beautiful for fear of pain, then we have rejected all good for a false worship of ourselves. And to make this idolatry of self our overall and final choice is to merit Hell.

Many patriots clearly saw Waco as the shot fired across the bow of Ship America by an enemy that wanted us to know that it was greatly to be feared because it was merciless and savage to all separatists. Waco was a thinly disguised, naked threat to patriots. Yet all citizens were *expected* to publicly "believe" the atrocity to have been necessary and justified or to keep silent about their doubts, as if they did believe such a lie. Their follow-up atrocity at Oklahoma City was a response to those who objected to Government terrorism at Waco. It said, 'See! It's anti-government extremists who are the problem.'

"Let me try to understand this, Father. Do you mean that the enemy wanted all to know they committed murder in order to intimidate those who might oppose them, but also wanted all to knowingly approve of their crime and even join in their cover-up, saying that it was the fault of the victims?"

That would be their ultimate brainwashing victory, to intimidate us into being consciously two-faced; one face silent and knowing the truth, the other face proclaiming a lie for the sake of the community's faith and subservience to its ruthless masters.

But they also wanted to castigate and blame their opponents who hated what they were doing to our Nation through their unlawful government of it. These opponents were blamed

by the President for creating the climate of hate and distrust of government which spawned the right wing extremism supposedly behind the Oklahoma City tragedy. Their bombing of the Federal Building in Oklahoma City left hundreds of men, women and children dead or injured. Middle eastern, German and U.S. secret service agents committed this murder, but all was blamed on a single, white male, right-wing extremist fanatic who had openly voiced his protest of Waco as a government atrocity.

"So Oklahoma City repeated the lesson of Waco, Father?"

201

Yes, very much so. The idea was to murder many innocents and symbolically blame that onerous deed on all patriots who had protested Waco or the government in general. "Right-wing radicals" soon became, with media propaganda, anyone right of Communist Clinkerton, our sick-joke-of-a President. He was elected by vote fraud and was supported by phony opinion polls and slick Media propaganda. This President was later caught giving Red China the missile technology to put nuclear warheads on eleven major American cities, in return for their financing his election campaign.

When it was shown that the truck bomb at Oklahoma City could not have done a fraction of the damage actually done to the building, and that seismic records and demolition scars on the building's supporting columns pointed to other internal explosions coincident with the truck bomb, the government's "story" started to fall apart. Other facts began to point to an "inside job". BATF and FBI personnel were told not to show up for work that fateful morning, and their agents were seen disposing of an undetonated bomb from inside the building, which was never mentioned thereafter. The building was quickly and unnecessarily bulldozed to the ground in order to destroy evidence of bombs at the base of the building's columns. And a FBI informant had been allowed to detect and report a plot by government agents secretly posing as white supremacist anti-government radicals to blow up the building months in advance. But no action to stop it was taken.

But the public turned away from the hideous truth that this great crime was done under the supervision of our own government, which then boldly and brashly covered up the evidence of its involvement, so that all who dared to look would see that they could do any evil they wished and get away with it and cover it up. This semi-transparency was an intentional propaganda piece.

An historical example of this propaganda tactic was Hitler ordering the burning of a government building, the Reichstag, by his agents. It was then blamed on the opposition of whom Hitler immediately liquidated thousands, using as a pretext the protection of the State against such saboteurs and anarchists.

"The end justifies the means for these devils, Father?"

Oh, Yes!

"They use murder as the means to their end of acquiring power."

But what is more important, they brainwash the people into accepting this concept of the end justifies the means, and its corollary, "might must be right." After Waco and Oklahoma City the Hitlers of America did not liquidate the opposition, but they did propose legislation creating police state laws, which they did use later to liquidate the opposition of the "right wing" radicals who loved their country and hated lies. Waco and Oklahoma City were used as examples of why such laws were needed.

"So they called for laws which were supposedly created for to prevent the very acts of violence they perpetrated!?"

You understand correctly, Phillip. And such a transparent melodrama was enough to fool most Americans. That is the most amazing thing of all.

This kind of outrageous perfidity was standard operating procedure (S.O.P.) for secret government agents of the WRM. Americans believed in what their government *should be* at the expense of seeing what *it had become* in the hands of the traitors who ran it. But, these kinds of atrocities and botched coverups by the Government and the

press had become so common that many people were awakening. For even as the enemy was cowing the cowardly, they were alarming and outraging the courageous.

"What happened to the traitor Clinkerton when he was caught giving military secrets to China?"

Well, Phillip, they held a show trial in which they whipped the boy for his lying under oath about his sexual escapades as President. And this long, drawn out hand slapping, which was planned all along to fall thrillingly short of removal from office, was actually the cover-up of the traitorous dealings with China. These traitorous acts were never brought up as reasons for impeachment. And people stupid enough to watch the TV trial were made so sick of the subject of Clinkerton's guilt or innocence, due to the nonstop, never-ending coverage, that they had no taste for what they would have to go through for his conviction on other charges, such as the Chinagate affair.

"Why did people put up with this deception? It makes me angry."

The media treated the nation to an x-rated sex show, young children included, dragging out all the lurid details one by one. I personally suspect that the sexual liaisons themselves could have been preplanned and set up so the Presidency could be denigrated and sexual deviance could be posted as pornography for the whole country to see.

"It makes me so sick ... and angry."

That was intended too -- to enrage a citizenry and sicken it, and then show how unimportant their dissatisfaction was and how degraded those in public office could be, as long as they were viewed as doing a good job in the phony polls.

"What was happening in these times outside our Nation, Father?"

On the world scene, an Iraq dictator, Saddam Hussein was set up in power by U.S.

money and Russian military arms, murder and intrigue, in order to become a puppet dictator who would assume the role of a World Class Bad Boy. On command, he would tweak the nose of the "International Community," thus authorizing the UN's world police dogs to be unleashed to attack Iraq, destroy its people (for 10 years), but never touch the Bad Boy himself. The Desert Storm action was primarily used to set new UN prerogatives for dictating to sovereign nations with military force as a threat. This same scene was reproduced in Yugoslavia later. They raised a puppet-monster Milosovic, so they could decimate his country when he wouldn't accept a Nato/UN demand to abdicate national sovereignty to them. An example had been set for the future when such sovereignty would be demanded.

"The pattern I am seeing, Father, is that their repeated lessons are aimed at authorizing these Government tyrannies of either national or international scope to carry out mass murder on the basis of some pretext which they created themselves."

That's a fair summary, Phillip. Add to it the precedents on the domestic scene of the U.S. president involving the U.S. in war illegally, without congressional approval, and illegally placing US troops under UN command. Our military has suddenly become the body of a monster police state at the word of a single dictator pretending to be our President.

"So, Father, if the Bad Boy is Bad enough, the "world community" can break all the rules of morality and law, killing people by wars and embargoes, invading sovereign nations in order to deal with this terribly dangerous situation. But really it is all a show being staged for a pretext to set a precedent that can be used to do the same thing off-stage later on."

You are seeing their game plan. But remember, they usually kill two or three birds with one stone. For the sake of Arab propaganda, Saddam caricatured himself as the Suffering Hero of Islam persecuted by the Christian Satans of the West. Finally, when the time was right, Russia supported Saddam in leading Islam into a holy war against Israel and Europe, for Saddam was one of the puppet-monsters of the Conspiracy that led the nations into World War III.

For years a crushing UN embargo decimated the poor citizens of Iraq. This 10 year embargo cost many innocent lives, as did the first war with Iraq, where 500,000 conscripted Iraq soldiers were staked out in desert bunkers of sand to be routinely bombed and buried alive. It was all too convenient that Saddam and his own personal army could not be touched. This army was used to push the other troops into battle, remove their officers and communications, and abandon them to a pre-planned massacre. Saddam Hussein was a very valuable tar baby for the WRM. His sole job was to give the world a series of pretexts for WWII.

Son, I have chosen to discuss briefly a very small but representative number of the enemy's intrigues, in order to give you an idea of their subterfuge and propaganda. A thousand books could not detail their semi-transparent skits. The world was their stage.

Human beings were the willing or unwilling actors in their gruesome tragedies. Their Grande Finale was begun with a worldwide crash of the money system in 2000 AD.

Since 1990 a 400% rise in the value of the artificially propped U.S. stock market formed a completely misleading picture of our asset gutted economy. A tremendous "bubble" had been prepared for popping, something that would cause the value of money worldwide to collapse; for the Internationalist Financiers had *intertwined* the money, the products, and the markets of all economies by manipulation of currency exchange markets. They threatened a global financial meltdown if a single currency and monetary policy was not adopted by all nations -- an important step in creating a one-world government. This common currency scheme was called the "euro" in Europe and "dollarization" in the rest of the world. When dolarization was rejected, the "crash" was given the green flag.

The interdependence of money systems, debts and profits created an internationalism that paid off in a worldwide crash, each national economy falling in a perfect domino effect. It had been arranged that each nation was dependent on some distant nation for some of its most vital resources, so that when international trade ceased, these goods and services also vanished. Years of work on the enemies' part saw to it that no country was completely self-sufficient in all its necessary commodities. This built-in interdependence was the incentive they had prepared for all nations to enter into an international economic union and the single World Government that would practically necessitate it.

"But was it not this very interdependence that caused the world-wide collapse?"

Well, at least it was their manipulation of this interdependence that allowed them to topple the whole, Phillip. If you have 100 wooden blocks each sitting alone on a table, how could you make them all move at once. But, if all were stacked atop the others in an unstable arrangement, would it be easy then?

"Of course, Father. It reminds me of the Tower of Babel again."

Remember, their overall plan was to see that no nation community or even family was self-supporting or independent of their control or influence.

The WRM invoked the term "free trade", as a moralistic condemnation of antiprotectionist policies, where any country was made defenseless against cheaper foreign goods sold on their markets in order to reduce their capacity to economically produce these goods. The lure of cheap "foreign markets" had suckered many U.S. industries into giving up our national productive capacity, which could not be recovered overnight. The greater value of long-term, stable self-sufficiency was sacrificed for the lesser value of immediate profit.

The impression I need to leave you with of these times, Phillip, is that people did have ready access to a true, detailed analysis of the enemy's work. However, without a Godly conscience and a life based on that conscience, a person would not be motivated to go digging beneath the sanitized, superficial version that the Voice of Big Brother propagated. The



degree of Godliness, amazingly, was in an exact proportion to the degree of insight, knowledge and predictive-power that an individual or nation had.

"But were there not many innocent people who were just ignorant, Father?"

A few, Phillip. But usually ignorance is bought by those who really don't want to know and sold by those who want the control.

"I will prepare the supper tonight, Father."

Thank you, Son. After what I have told you today, can you see, Phillip, why a good man could have easily turned to God as his only hope and consolation and resting place in those days? The world was so insane. I remember one line of a prayer poem that we used to say after Holy Communion which expresses my feeling: "Just for you I live, Oh Lord."

205

[{TABLE OF CONTENTS}](#)

[{PREFACE}](#)

[{CHAPTER I}](#) [{CHAPTER II}](#) [{CHAPTER III}](#) [{CHAPTER IV}](#) [{CHAPTER V}](#) [{CHAPTER VI}](#)

[{CHAPTER VII}](#) [{CHAPTER VIII}](#) [{CHAPTER IX}](#) [{CHAPTER X}](#) [{CHAPTER XI}](#)

[{Bibliography}](#)

[{Bookstore}](#) [{Order Form}](#) : [{Instructions}](#) [{Notice of Permissions}](#) [{Download}](#)

[{Links}](#)

[{FRAMES VERSION}](#)

(Requires a frames-enabled browser)

*Website contents © 1999 - 2000 [Web Designs by Doc](#). Literary content ©1999 - 2000, Dave Pedry. All rights reserved.*

## CHAPTER IX

## RED CLOUDS OVER AMERICA

I recall it was early February, 1999, Phillip. Snowdrifts cluttered the back deck of our house high against the foot of Indian Mountain. Forty mile an hour southwest winds buffeted the house. Hunter stood in his shaggy brown coat looking through the sliding glass doors for his breakfast person, your brother Michael, who was ten years old at the time. The mighty Big Horn Mountains in the background rose to 13,700 feet ninety miles to the north. A distant, irregular horizon to the west would be the Rattlesnake Range. Other bones of the earth's skeleton were everywhere exposed in this land of wind, blue skies and vast sagebrush plains. I remember the conversation with your mother.

"Hey, Ruth, I like my coffee strong ... but this stuff could grow hair on my chest ..."

"I made it *the same* way you told me."

"How could you!?! ... But look at this. Come're. See this stock market graph showing this 8 year Bull run?"

"What's that?"

People investing more and more in big businesses.

"Sounds good."

"Looks good. But it's a bubble I'll bet."

"What's that?"

The appearance of continued growth in stock market companies causes people to invest money in them. But what if their value is only apparent. The Federal Reserve Banks who have lots of our money to play around with in the name of our Government are artificially maintaining the appearance of a booming economy when they act to offset in the stock and money markets the real decline of our economy, which is measured by industrial output and standard of living, after taxes and inflation are discounted, and by real return on investments. The long bull may really represent invested or borrowed debt money or credit not real assets. It looks like more wealth but represents less wealth in real terms. By this created appearance of profitable investment opportunity, people are propping up an economy that has already been gutted by usury with their hard-earned dollars, invested in a doomed stock market bubble.

"So now what happens?"

The money monsters will, in their chosen moment, pop the bubble.

How?

Probably manufacture some likely international incidents in conjunction with YK2 and use them as excuses to stop pumping money into our hollow, debt-bloated economy. In other words, the big banksters will virtually stop loaning money by jacking the interest rates on borrowed money through the sky. This starts a real money drain because payments on debts owed don't stop but the immediate income to pay them has decreased for lack of capital ventures and for a shortage of money loaned into circulation by the Fed. Then people panic and pull dollars out of all investments and banks, but find only about 1% of it is required by law to be there in stable assets. And those assets are Federal Reserve Notes, which are of value only as a loan, for no gold backs them. They are not really dollars, not really money at all.

Everyone who doesn't have money under the mattress is instantly broke and probably deeply in debt. When the value of stocks plummet and the banks stop loaning money, even to the U.S. Government, capital ventures and spending in general falls off a cliff. Everyone cuts back production for fear no one will be able to buy all their products. People stop paying for goods and services that are not absolutely necessary, hoarding their cash. Therefore, all business takes a dramatic nosedive, that of tradesman, merchandisers and retailers. Jobs are lost; investments and savings are lost as businesses fold. Every one naturally pinches pennies, making matters worse. And when the rest of the world sees the U.S. and the dollar representing its wealth lose value dramatically, the same loss of confidence and panic repeats itself in their countries. The U.S. dollar supports so much of the world's economy because of U.S. loans. And the value of other currencies are tied to ours because of money markets.

But when all this happens the world is just as much in need of goods and services as it always was, and resources are plentiful. People can work just as hard as ever. But the walls of the world's prosperity are pulled down for the simple lack of credible currency. The enemy controls the currency and the credit it is based on. By the blast of the usurers' trumpets marching around our fortified cities, the walls of our confidence in the wealth of our natural resources, labor and production crumbles.

"So when's it going to happen?"

"That's what everyone always asks, as if that's the important point." It *is* happening. It will totally collapse when they give the signal to withhold lending by raising interest rates and thereby lending requirements. Let's say we are floating in a bathtub of debt money. Suddenly the faucet is turned off but the drain plug remains open. In other words we continue to pay bills, including interest on our personal and national debts to the Banksters. But no replacement money is put into the system because the Feds are no longer loaning money into circulation. Pretty soon we have no money to represent the wealth around us. And because individual families and communities are far from self-sufficient, chaos ensues. We would have to trade goods and services constantly.

"So we trade goods then?"

Yes, but I would have to find a local farmer with a surplus of wheat, butter, cheese, meat, corn, etc. who needed his house painted. Fat chance. His food rots if he doesn't give it away or barter for something he probably doesn't need and can't sell. I remain idle and hungry. Our principle tool of exchange has been stolen by these Banksters. It's something like that, Sweet.

"So what do you think the events are which they will use to trigger the crash, David?"

I remember that I looked at your mother when she asked that question, Phillip, and shrugging my shoulders. "It could be a number of things they have set up to fall like dominoes. This YK2 thing is going to be part of it, I think.

"What's *that*?"

The clock regulating computers will have to be changed on January 1, 2000, or many systems would go down. There has been a lot of speculation about the trouble it would cause. I believe the enemy will use this as a pretext to foment riots or "right wing extremist reactionism" at that time, so a big Government, save-the-day-from-the-crazies gambit can be played out. Maybe martial law will be declared. Maybe the Big Bad Boy

207

investors that created the huge bubble I was talking about will use this YK2 instability as a pretext for triggering their disinvestment panic.

I was right, Phillip. Every agent in the WRM had a plug to pull in a sequence of supposedly cause and effect "events" that started on the first of the new year. If it was covered by the media it was a preplanned part of the skit. Very little was spontaneous, grassroots, public reaction. Any impression of public reaction was measured by staged events, interviews and other media "events".

When Iraq again violated the absurd restrictions that had been placed on them, we invaded and bombed Iraq in order that Russia could respond this time, on cue of course, and send planes to Saddam's defense. Clinton ordered a respectable Armada including 100,000 troops to the Red Sea. Mideast oil producers, including Saudi Arabia, cut off shipments of oil to the U.S. in protest. It looked like a Big War brewing on the horizon.

After provoking a war in 1999, NATO had attacked Serbia. Russia and the Arab oil producers had finally shut off oil shipments to Europe as well. All of this was secretly preplanned. When Russia in 2000 entered on the side of Iraq, it also entered war on the side of Serbia.

Greenspend, spokesman for the private "Federal Reserve" banks, began to complain that the rapidly escalating price of oil due to the Mideast crisis, and prospects of a massive shortage of oil had investment bankers shaking in their boots. Actually, we only received 14% of our imported oil from the Middle East. But he decided on a big hike in interest rates, and a moratorium was being contemplated by the Big Banks on all big loans *until the world situation was stablized*. Only lending to the Government for internal and external security or peace keeping efforts (war) were to be maintained. Since the Fed lent money to the smaller banks and had "guaranteed" their solvency by "insuring" them with public money against a run of withdrawals, these small banks lost heart and copied the big banks, raising interest rates to a prohibitive 25%. And in the meantime a panic on the stock market and other markets was being blamed on the YK2 turmoil, etc.

"Why raise interest rates, Father?"

A bank has relatively more money to loan when its investors are not withdrawing money from its reserves. They raised interest rates to slow borrowing so they could supply increased withdrawals.

As the wars developed, other conflict areas like the Korean border, Mexico, and Africa, heated up ominously. Seeing the mounting world instability, the common people began a run on the banks. It seemed like everyone was pulling money out, but many banks were shutting doors. The people had been robbed all along. Now they suddenly found out. When the banks began to close, the real panic began at the grassroots level. Then the stock market really plunged. The Fed reacted by placing a ceiling on the printing of Federal Reserve notes and treasury bonds, since the rapidly declining wealth (assets) of the nation did not represent the necessary collateral. The selling and buying of stocks, bonds, IRA's, etc. *stopped*.

Paychecks were being put on hold at government levels. Some major corporations copied this. There was an eerie, nervous public silence, Phillip, as would be the case when a person was being robbed. Letters to the editor slowed to a trickle. Blabbering lips stopped. The Media promoted the trouble by dramatizing it. People gathered around the tube like hungry children around their mother. As usual Media

voices had just the right amount of concern, optimism, fear, sternness or other tones of practical suavity. Their use of the news to create the effect they chose left one with a kind of nauseating admiration, Phillip. These were master manipulators of thought and emotion.

It seemed odd as I drove across town to see the many deserted building projects that had begun. Times had been so good only 30 days ago. It seemed unreal. The rumor began in the news that the Fed might offer to buy up all the shares in the stock market at a ridiculously low price in order to "save" the country from total bankruptcy. This would mean that public ownership of American production would be delivered into the hands of the International Bankers who owned the rest of those same businesses through shares and through mortgages covering outstanding debts. The people's money had been borrowed to create huge corporate assets which were now to be effectively converted to stolen goods.

In the fifth week of the show I said to Ruth, "After they buy all the stock left in America, they'll have almost everything. Then the Banksters will say that we need to bail them out because their generosity and lack of payments on outstanding debts have dried them up in this crisis. Now that they have stopped loaning the Government money, welfare will stop and our country will be defenseless because we can't even finance an army. We've been defeated in our armchairs watching the evening news."

"That's what they want then, our total collapse?"

"Sure, but in the process they want us to *voluntarily give* everything we have to them, including our freedoms, our Constitution. Then we have to accept our slavery as justly imposed by our own choice. That makes us more docile in the long run to our fate. We have lost the moral high ground. We can't fight back, because we are the enemy. This supine position all depends on us believing *their* version of things. So we are supposed to be ashamed when they say, "After all you're how many trillions of dollars in debt to us, now?"

A week later it was "leaked" that a "team" of high level government officials, including a "very worried" President were in "secret" meetings with a group of Fed representatives in Washington. As the conversation was "leaked out" over the next two weeks, it seemed that the Fed demanded a total government reorganization and essentially a different kind of Constitution based on the "collective ownership" of all production and resources by a single multinational BANK. So, everyone is equally poor, equally powerless, equally controlled -- except the Banksters and their troops who were making it all possible with their counterfeit credit and our money, our wealth, which they had "legally" stolen for the last 77 years. It all seemed so reasonable, even generous of them. And the collective versus private ownership of all things seemed to protect us poor people -- potentially everyone now -- from the "capitalist pigs" who must have taken all the profits and invested it foolishly and lied to us! Blame had to be placed on someone for ruining our Nation by greed. That's right, the Bankster controlled Media blamed it all on "individual and corporate greed". We all needed to "tighten the belt", "pitch in" and "build a better world," with Uncle Scrooge's help -- not just voluntarily anymore, but with more *cooperation!* this time -- like indentured servitude.

I remember laughing sickly at all this perfidy one evening in May, as I sat in the recliner waiting for the older children to show up for a family conference. I felt it was

time to pull together and make emergency plans. Major Rioting in one degree or another began in most cities, even ours.

When all 14 of us had gathered, I began by asking a rhetorical question: "Tim, if you own nothing, not even the means to keep your body alive, are you in control of your own life?"

"Not much. I can avoid walking over a cliff. I can control my body movements."

And what if you are told by the ones who are feeding you that, under threat of starvation or some other form of death, you are to do such and such with your body, even walk off a cliff?

"I'd fight back."

You don't own anything. They keep you alive. So they have a right to tell you what to do.

"God gives me a right to life, which means I can take and own what I need to sustain life. God gives me that much by natural right."

"Well said, Timothy. The right to life involves the right to own property and the means of producing the necessities of life. We also have the right to act on our conscience and in our own defense and the defense of our family and neighbors. No one can rightfully command us to walk over a cliff or in any way to harm or endanger our life or the lives of others. If they try to force you, your duty would be to refuse, resist and, if necessary, use the necessary means to defend yourself. We do have inalienable rights from God our Creator. Remember

that. He is the real Ruler, not these Banksters and their Brotherhood of government rats and the assortment of criminals running the show. They are going to try and take all away from us: our property first, then our power of self-government, then our power of self-defense, and finally, our freedom to act virtuously, to act upon our conscience in obedience to the natural law and the divine law. If we won't give our conscience up, they will take our lives. If we do give it up, they have taken our souls. We know what's worse.

"At what point do we resist, Dad?"

If a known thief and murderer were lurking around your house which is 100 miles from civilization, would you wait for him to break in and point his weapon at you before acting in self-defense? No, of course not. Would you surrender your weapons to him? No. Once you know the design of the intruder, you must prepare yourself to act before it is too late to act effectively.

"Everyone is saying the new Five Year Community Plan and the Five Year National Plan is fair to all and that it is the *only* thing that will work anymore."

"John, it *can't* work. It's pure socialism. The Communist countries found out it couldn't work. These Plans propose that everyone is an equal shareholder. Yes, equal in owning nothing but what is given them by their new masters!

Here's an example from nature to prove it won't work. No living thing, no working machine, no functioning organization is made up of totally equal parts, but rather a hierarchy of parts with ascendancy and rule based on the more *essential* functioning parts. *Only dead things have totally equal parts!* If you blast a factory or a man into atoms, all the parts are equal. But the thing they were no longer exists. We would say that a being no longer exists only pure matter. This collective society idea reads like a murder mystery. Somebody's gonna get killed. And we all know the author of the story did it, but he keeps looking for scapegoats."

"I don't get it, Dad."

No business can be started without someone who knows more than the rest about it. They must have the lead, the responsibility and the greater reward for success. Even if all in a group are carpenters or plumbers, one of them is the best or has more tools or more assets needed for the business. What the bad guys really want us to do is give up all we own; give it to them and trust *them* to distribute it fairly! Don't you see, the main thing they want is for us to be stupid enough to give them all we have, even ourselves. We can't do that. We are God's children, not theirs. Their father is the devil.

Everyone was silent for a time.

"Are we going to have to fight, Dad?" Michael asked.

"Most probably, Son, but the time and manner must fit the immediate need to resist. We will be guided by God."

"Will He send us angels?" John snickered.

"Yes, and He will also guide us by way of the order He had set amongst us, Son." I looked at each one of them. "Who is the human leader God has given you all in this family?"

"You are, Dad."

"That's right, Mary, and I will accept that responsibility. But you will all choose to be led or not. A father was not set up as a despotic ruler that doesn't honor one's free will to follow. He rules by God's authority those who consent to be governed."

"Well, I don't accept it. You're not going to rule me or lead me."

"So be it, John. Is there anyone else who wants to lead themselves ... No one? ... There is safety in numbers, John."

"God will guide me, not you."

"Maybe you just rejected His appointed guide for you, John. If He is guiding me, He would be guiding you through me, His instrument."

"Sounds good, but my experience is, it doesn't work that way."

"It only *works* that way with the consent of the governed, John. You have withheld that consent in the past; now it's hard to come up with." The love and hurt, the grief in my eyes was enough for John to know that he needed to leave us then.

"John, don't go, Son!" Ruth was in tears. Never had her hair looked so gray as in that firelit room. The younger girls began crying softly. I looked at John. He hesitated. Then turned upon me with a stern face.

"Dad, you're wrong!" He jabbed his finger at me. "God is going to bring this world to a better place. But you're going to cause trouble. You're going to get yourself and this whole family KILLED!!"

I too believe God is going to bring this world to a better place. I will do what is right before God, Son. If I am killed or those who follow me, that is His business. You are thinking to save your life by doing the will of our enemy. But Jesus said, 'those who try to save their lives will lose it, and those who lose their lives for My sake will save it.'

"And what the Hell sense does that make," he thundered.

"It only makes sense, John, if you are a fool for Christ's sake. We must do right for God, regardless of the threats of this world. In return, we receive His protection and His eternal life.

"Are we going to die?" wailed Kathleen.

I looked at her, lovingly, until she recovered. Looking into her eyes, I said, "Only if God wants you to come home to Him, Sweetheart."

"Why would He want us to!?! That's crazy!"

"Didn't He want all His martyrs to die, John? Were they crazy too? In dying for what is right, we will die for our God, out of an unselfish love for God and our neighbor. That's good



enough for me. We all have to die anyway. Why not take the royal road Jesus took?"

John stomped out of the house.

I looked at the others sorrowfully. "Are you all with me?" Slowly, the yes's came in. Quietly, but clearly.

"We have been told in Scripture and in the Messages from Heaven that we will be turned over and betrayed by our own." My voice was low, almost hoarse. "Many will be against me; they will be trying to rescue you, my wife and children, from a crazy, "conspiracy nut". Be sure and consider who it is who is trying to save you. These are the times when God tries men's souls and loyalties.

The wind suddenly picked up. We all seemed to be listening for something in it. "Those of you who live apart from this house, complete your storage of food, water, blankets, candles, arms and ammunition, and any other necessities. Talk with your neighbors. Ignorance of your neighbor is fear of him and vice versa. But don't share goods with them. Urge them to prepare."

"A lot of burglarizing and in some places mass looting has taken place. We should expect more of it as things get worse. Since the Food Stamp program ran out of money, the poorest folks are getting desperate. So keep your doors locked and opaque curtains over the windows. Open the door to no one trying to demand entry. And then remain armed and ready. Trust no one. In the heat of fear godless men are animals."

"We must support our law enforcement personnel against civil disorder, looters, and kidnapers seeking ransom. If our police are overrun or unavailable, we have the right under current law to make citizen arrests and otherwise act in self-defense. Our local police fear good men not being armed, because that means they themselves are more vulnerable to the lawless. Soon there may be too few of them to hold back the tide."

"Call up your friends. See where they stand. But don't form any alliances yet. Try to go through me with everything, so I can act like a switchboard, and we can all stay connected and somewhat directed. We need to discuss all with sound deliberation and pray about it. If we are going to stand by each other, we have to have previously made difficult decisions together too."

"There is no excuse anymore for individuals skipping the daily Rosary. And other prayers are necessary too. Read the Bible daily. Get close to God in your own hearts and minds. There is no substitute for this security. Pray for the salvation of souls. This will draw down God's Mercy and Love upon you."

"Remember, communication is our lifeline. I'm the switchboard. If I'm down, Mom's next in line, then Tim and so on through the boys down to Joe. Let's pray for John. I think he will see the light before long."

"I believe enemy agents that entered as illegal aliens are surely spearheading the big riots in Denver and elsewhere. Don't be afraid to shoot someone in *real* self-defense, not out of fear. But try to scare them off first.

Tim, you and I need to get together and look for a place of refuge in the country, or several of them. I want us all to meet at least once a week from now on.

"Dad, should we begin organizing a militia?"

An armed, patriotic, god-fearing citizen is already a member of the United States Militia in each State, in each community, Son. We are free men. Government is merely our servant. We can exist without it, just as we did before we created it. Essentially, we rule ourselves, joining hands with others for the common good. We will have to work hard to resurrect this fundamental attitude of the freeman which they have tried to beat out of us in recent years. Again, we have to wait for events obviously deserving of a lawful armed resistance to call us forth onto a field of combat, which itself must be carefully chosen. A solid, moral judgement is needed in regard to our right and duty to act in self-defense. If we act precipitously, we will be seen, rightly or wrongly, as part of the general disorder by the authorities and the people, even by those who remain loyal to the principle of our Nation and the real public interest.

"And what if the police and government demand our firearms?"

That's against the law of this land, Paul. That, in itself, is a call to armed resistance, because it is alien to the common good and the common law and the Constitution of this Nation established before God. False authority must not be obeyed in what is unlawful. The future existence of our nation depends on our resistance.

Phillip, before we take the walk I promised today, let me read from the *Gulag Archipelago* by Alexander Solzhenitsyn, a man who lived almost all his life under Russian Communism. He's been through all we feared for the future in those days of which I speak.

"And how we burned in the camps later, thinking: What would things have been like if every Security operative, when he went out at night to make an arrest, had been uncertain whether he would return alive and had to say good-bye to his family? Or if, during periods of mass arrests, as for example in Leningrad, when they arrested a quarter of the entire city, people had not simply sat there in their lairs, paling with terror at every bang of the downstairs door and at every step on the staircase, but had understood they had nothing left to lose and had boldly set up in the downstairs hall an ambush of half a dozen people with axes, hammers, pokers, or whatever else was at hand? After all, you knew ahead of time that those bluecaps were out at night for no good purpose. And you could be sure ahead of time that you'd be cracking the skull of a cutthroat. Or what about the Black Maria sitting out there on the street with one lonely chauffeur – what if it had been driven off or its tire spiked? The Organs would very quickly have suffered a shortage of officers and transport and, notwithstanding all of Stalin's thirst, the cursed machine would have ground to a halt!

If ... if... We didn't love freedom enough. And even more—we had no awareness of the real situation."

In 1978 this Russian, then in exile, gave a speech at Harvard in which he criticized the West and specifically America. We were herded along by legalism, just as the Russians were cowed by tyrants using the veneer of legality to demand they give up their human rights, which they held in perpetuity under the Common Law of God. Let's read a few passages from

his speech, Phillip.

"A decline in courage may be the most striking feature which an outside observer notices in the West in our days. The Western world has

lost its civil courage, both as a whole and separately, in each country, each government, each political party ... Should one point out that from ancient times decline in courage has been considered the beginning of the end?

**LEGALISTIC LIFE:** Western society has given itself the organization best suited to its purposes, based, I would say, on the letter of the law. The limits of human rights and righteousness are determined by a system of laws, such limits are very broad. People in the West have acquired considerable skill in using, interpreting and manipulating law, even though laws tend to be too complicated for an average person to understand without the help of an expert. Any conflict is solved according to the letter of the law and this is considered to be the supreme solution. If one is right from a legal point of view, nothing more is required, nobody may mention that one could still not be entirely right, and urge self-restraint, a willingness to renounce such legal rights, sacrifice and selfless risk: it would sound simply absurd. One almost never sees voluntary self-restraint. Everybody operates at the extreme limit of those legal frames. An oil company is legally blameless when it purchases an invention of a new type of energy in order to prevent its use. A food product manufacturer is legally blameless when he poisons his produce to make it last longer: after all, people are free not to buy it.

I have spent all my life under a Communist regime and I will tell you that a society without any objective legal scale is a terrible one indeed. But a society with no other scale but the legal one is not quite worthy of man either. A society which is based on the letter of the law and never reaches any higher is taking very scarce advantage of the high level of human possibilities. The letter of the law is too cold and formal to have a beneficial influence on society. Whenever the tissue of life is woven of legalistic relations, there is an atmosphere of moral mediocrity, paralyzing man's noblest impulses.

And it will be simply impossible to stand through the trials of this threatening century with only the support of a legalistic structure.

**THE DIRECTION OF FREEDOM:** In today's Western society, the inequality has been revealed of freedom for good deeds and freedom for evil deeds. A statesman who wants to achieve something important and highly constructive for his country has to move cautiously and even timidly; there are

thousands of hasty and irresponsible critics around him, parliament and the press keep rebuffing him. As he moves ahead, he has to prove that each single step of his is well-founded and absolutely flawless. Actually an outstanding and particularly gifted person who has unusual and unexpected initiatives in mind hardly gets a chance to assert himself; from the very beginning, dozens of traps will be set out for him. Thus mediocrity triumphs with the excuse of restrictions imposed by democracy.

It is feasible and easy everywhere to undermine administrative power and, in fact, it has been drastically weakened in all Western countries. The defense of individual rights has reached such extremes as to make society as a whole defenseless against certain individuals. It is time, in the West, to defend not so much human rights as human obligations.

Destructive and irresponsible freedom has been granted boundless space. Society appears to have little defense against the abyss of human decadence, such as, for example, misuse of liberty for moral violence against young people, motion pictures full of pornography, crime and horror. It is considered to be part of freedom and theoretically counterbalanced by the young people's right not to look or not to accept. Life organized legalistically has thus shown its inability to defend itself against the corrosion of evil."

"You were certainly not alone in seeing the evils of your times, Father."

Most people saw them in some degree, Phillip. The real dividing line was what an individual did about them. I saw to it, for example, that our family did not own or watch TV for 30 years, except for those videos we tried to carefully choose. In this I acted reasonably and firmly on what other people also saw but just complained about. One can believe in Jesus and in what He said, but if he does not act upon it, he has a "dead faith" that bears no fruit. In that exists the means of his own condemnation for not acting on the known truth.

In the fourth month after the stock market crash, Phillip, it was revealed that the grain storage bins of the U.S. emergency reserves had been depleted for years. This was no accident. Government food rescue operations were sporadic and mainly for the purpose of propaganda. Of the population 75% were eating the equivalent of 1 to 1 ½ meals a day, and the reduction of that was very clearly in sight. Spontaneously, real civilian demonstrations began to take place everywhere. The Press, playing messenger for the Government, told the people the only way they could mount an organized relief effort was to establish "temporary martial law", because the limited military and law enforcement personnel would need the help of stricter than normal laws to restore order. This "solution" was hailed with enthusiasm by the worried but unsuspecting majority of the populace. The bombshell contained in this solution was that everyone must voluntarily turn in their arms in alphabetical order on set

days as soon as martial law began and after States established firearm collection stations. Only those who did would be given a Receipt of Compliance (RC) card which would make them eligible for emergency food stamps.

"That spells 'Give up your guns or die of starvation', Father."

Exactly, Son. And the outcry against this was substantial. So, the Government waited a month, then re-extended the "offer." There were a few voices of dissent, but most of those who had made their decision to hide the arms necessary to defend themselves and their nation were among the silent too. All knew that confiscation was inevitable, since the Government was willing and able to withhold food from the people until guns were turned over. You could keep your gun or your life, but not both. That was how benevolent those in power were. The totalitarian police state had finally taken off its mask -- for all who wished to remove their hands from over their eyes.

But shortly after the call for firearms came the further condition that a law be passed beforehand by Congress that anyone hiding firearms would commit a felony punishable by immediate incarceration of not less than one year. The whole package, the "Restore Order Now" bill passed Congress within two weeks. But since it was an unconstitutional law, therefore, it was "null and void."

The first stage in "separating the men from the boys" had arrived. Patriots of courage determined to keep their arms and actively plan for a fight. Those opposed to the illegal suspension of the 2<sup>nd</sup> Amendment, but unwilling to fight, became very silent and very fearful of what was to come. The majority were bubbling with foolish confidence. Finally, they would be taken care of by their maternal terry-cloth Government. For years we had been conditioned for this Happy Meal Mentality -- by socialism, American style. The hidden corollary to suckling at the breast of Government was the implied lack of hope and trust in God's providence in supporting those who stood upon principle and

stood up against blackmail and extortion and the spirit of terror behind those criminal acts of the government.

As the weeks passed on, leading citizens were paraded like heroes and heroines before the people, pleading for their peaceful cooperation. Heavily armed military units and deputized armies of assistant law enforcement personnel established virtual encampments in larger communities. The gun collection process started.

Invoking the need to put down (bogus) anti-government resistance from right wing, fascist guerillas, the President asked the United Nations, without the permission of Congress, for a "peace keeping" force. How large a force was never directly addressed -- a fatefully intentional ambiguity. The pretense of a "heated debate" among U.N. bigshots and U.S. officialdom over this request was discussed *ad nauseum* by the Press. Finally, after three whole days of deliberation the UN accepted "our" request.

The first 2000 UN troops to arrive were shown on the tube as respectful, apologetic, polite, Caucasian -- their affable CO's welcomed by Mayors, governors and senators. "How kind of them to come," was the prompted audience response.

Then all pertinent Executive Orders relating to a state of emergency and martial law, plus a summary of the Code of Military Law and UN peacekeeping directives were *mandatorily* published by every newspaper, radio and TV station. Phillip, only six months after the Crash we had a police state "legally" in place and an invasion by foreign troops underway. Time seemed to stand still. The UN called on Communist countries to supply the bulk of troops for the U.S. "peacekeeping mission". They responded *generously*, with two million men, led by commanders in blue helmets -- all marching, sailing, flying towards the U.S.A. But the Press greatly underreported the numbers of troops involved -- a deliberate delayed-information deception. Oddly enough 85% of American military troops were on UN peacekeeping missions *elsewhere*!

"If they had been home, Father, we could have policed our own rioting."

That's right, Son. The rioting itself was not beyond the ability of our police, national guard and in country military to handle. It had been arranged, along the absence of most of our troops in order to make a plausible excuse for inviting a UN invasion. It was so typical of the enemy that I had easily predicted it. Prophecy loses all its art when you are dealing with serial liars and murderers like the Communists, Phillip.

Once again the President and his men, in response to a "plea" from the UN, repeated its request to Congress to take up the "reform" of the U.S. Constitutional system, "so that something like this will never happen again." How many times we had heard that line of garbage. Accompanying the request was a proposed draft for key Constitutional "revisions." "Reform," Son, was a code word for total overthrow. These reforms included a few apparently reasonable suggestions which were used as highly publicized decoys for the wholesale butchery of our founding principles of law, inherited from our forefathers.

"Didn't Americans care that this was happening."

Not much, Phillip. They had long since lost their appetite for the substantial spiritual goods of life. They had been fattened like hogs on materialism. The Constitution, properly interpreted, was just "a piece of paper" for the great majority.

Congress, reeling from the drastic steps already taken which had cast such a shadow of uncertainty over our liberties, felt no immediate necessity to give in to the UN's "request" for a Constitutional overhaul. They soundly rejected the proposal in a

vote. *Then*, within a time too short to doubt it being a response to America's recalcitrance in this matter, the Day of Infamy arrived!!

"What do you mean, Father?!"

The bulk of U.S. Armed forces overseas, probably 70% of our army, air force and navy,

were wiped out in a single day by tactical nuclear missiles fired from Russian submarines and mobile units. On the same day the atomic warheads of our landbased Minuteman missiles were destroyed in place. And on this day Chinese missiles exploded nuclear warheads over San Diego, Los Angeles, Seattle and Denver. The "neutralization" of our minuteman missiles was the work of the electromagnetic "cannons" I told you about earlier. Russia also dropped nuclear bombs on New York, Miami, Boston, Pittsburgh and Chicago on the same day using missiles from its nuclear submarine fleet. They also exploded several huge nuclear bombs that had been secretly put in orbit above the United States three weeks earlier. These massive explosions created an electro-magnetic pulse (EMP) that melted all the microcircuits in the 48 states. All industry, all vehicles, communications, timepieces, and computers that depended on this microcircuitry, which the Conspiracy had long ago led us to install in every phase of our national life, were immediately ruined beyond repair. All this, along with the deep economic depression, brought normal everyday business to a near-absolute halt.

This savage act of war on military and civilian targets was conveniently blamed on the actual launch of a U.S. Minuteman missile and Russia's immediate Total Automated Response System (TARS). This rogue launch was a calculated "mistake" by operatives in our Government. The next day after this Attack our President was faxed an ultimatum from the Kremlin: Civilian law enforcement and military authority must *immediately* submit *full control* to UN military commanders. He was also ordered to immediately surrender to the UN all remaining land-based missiles, the U.S. nuclear submarine fleet, and all U.S. military units of any kind in the world. The President announced his immediate submission to Moscow's demands with suitably sad features. The next day, Russia ominously "suggested" that Congress swiftly enact Constitutional reform and then "temporarily" submit to military governors in each State until those reforms were implemented. In less than one month a so-called Constitutional Convention was held. All the UN's suggested socialistic reforms were adopted and approved by the governors of all 50 States, but not by their legislators, as required by law.

The culmination of all these terrible series of events coincided -- not accidentally I believe -- with the first *massive* wave of UN led land, air and naval forces crossing U.S. borders from all directions. Without painting a true picture of this invasion, the press, with great calmness and dignity, publicized the capitulation of civil authority by governors, mayors, and other government officials to hokey looking representatives of the UN. It was apparent to many that these handovers were all rehearsed, studio events, many poorly and hastily acted out.

"And what was the affect of all this on the people, Father?"

The sacrifice of their lives by millions of civilians and by our men in uniform, who had been set up in a dozen relatively tight formations around the world for the sake of their convenient destruction by singular but powerful nuclear devices, did not come about without benefit to the United States of America, Son. For the people as a whole were greatly and bitterly outraged. A great deal of fat was stripped from their sluggish hearts. True, the greater number remained cowards in the end and soon returned to their

despicable state of moral apathy, but the numbers of those now willing to fight or cooperate actively in our cause, despite being completely unarmed in some cases, increased tremendously. Patriotism burned hot in those days. Many men and women were suddenly willing to give *their* lives too.

Arms came into great demand. Some of our bravest military and law enforcement officers, along with some of those they had deputized, cooperated in re-arming citizens, at great risk to themselves, of course. The Barrier of Terror and Servile Fear had been breached by the patriotic love of many people for their heroic countrymen who had died honorably for all of us -- for the Nation we all loved. A spark of honest courage had set many hearts ablaze with unselfish love, welding together many divisions among Americans. Without this great human sacrifice of our servicemen, and the greater number of civilians who died with them, it seems hardly possible that America would have put up enough of a fight to ever turn the Red Tide, Phillip

The shortages and hardships the people had begun to suffer in earnest had also prepared them, by self-denial, for a greater measure of self-giving. As neighbor talked to and helped neighbor, generosity became a kind of currency that people were proud to spend and hoped to bank on by corresponding treatment when they were in need. Many neighborhoods had formed loose cooperatives, where labor, skills, and material goods were shared and solutions to the needs of the neighborhood as a whole were sought, mainly the need for food supplies. All this, Phillip, was just what America needed to lead it back to the true spirit of free men of good will engaged in the benevolent work of self-government.

This is not to say that the battle for the patriotic unification of the minds, hearts and loyalties of the people had been won. Far from it. Self-interest formed the limits of motivation for the majority. But, in retrospect, the Day of Infamy was the turning point. And word soon spread that the White House had secretly ordered the firing of the "rogue" Minuteman missile at Russia, which was easily destroyed by their defensive missiles over the Atlantic before the attack began. And it was obvious to many that this attack was too complete, too effective and too instantaneous not to have been totally planned for that precise moment when it was launched.

The independent, self-organizing spirit of the American character had been activated by the economic collapse as well. Where ownership was still in the hands of individuals, the producing, buying, transportation and marketing of goods could be organized and managed. Of course, the government soon moved to end private ownership of property, without calling it that, of course. But the practical effect of such edicts was negligible for quite some time, and in the face of necessity and practicality, socialistic edicts were ignored anyway, unless the power to enforce them was present and effective. So many people during these days did not actually own the businesses, houses, cars and equipment they, nevertheless, had proprietary use or operation of. They simply stopped payments on mortgages and other debts and began to act, out of necessity, as if they did have legal ownership of what they possessed. Everyone simply ignored foreclosure proceedings, which were rare anyway, given the ubiquitous delinquency on debt payments. It became a homespun legal defense argument that "the common welfare of the people" demanded the maintenance of basic industries, which, in



effect, placed proprietary use of the assets of those industries in the hands of those who had been

operating them -- as long as excessive or selfish profit was not gained by these individuals at the expense of a helpless, impoverished public."

The creation of Local Emergency Governmental Organizations (LEGO's) were similarly argued for on the same premises, namely, that absentee or insufficient governmental management in a crisis situation automatically authorized the citizens affected to provide for their necessary governance, even without elections or appointments. People found that human necessity is the mother of lean, limited, necessary government.

From this point it was a logical next step to authorize the printing of local currencies. The good faith and honesty of the users was all that was needed to make this work. All such money was soon outlawed, but it remained in wide use by at least 60%-70% of the population.

The crisis the entire world had reached, Phillip, could be summarized as a situation in which people had to shred their security-blanket idea that *the State would provide*, and begin to act on their own authority, as those freemen had done who originally peopled and built and won this Nation from the tyranny of England. For many this was a thrilling real-life adventure that reformed their entire civic attitude, personal self-esteem and spiritual life.

Serious patriots in the years ahead reasoned further that much civil law had been unconstitutionally misconceived by legislatures and/or violated by its own officials so that its enforcement by authorities had become impractical, if not an occasion of disaster. In a degree the system as a whole had failed and had to be set aside. Both the natural law of mankind, it was reasoned, and the Divine Law of its Creator superceded civil law, therefore authorizing and validating the reordering and remaking of civil laws to replace the tangled web of good and evil legislation that had become a self-corrupting monstrosity. The repatriation of America finally came about, Phillip, on the basis of the original Constitution and the Ten Commandments, rightly interpreted by upright men. But this reordering took a decade to formalize on a national scale. In the meantime we found that right thinking and right living make complex bodies of law completely unnecessary.

"Isn't simplicity better in the matter of law, Father?"

Yes. The more detailed the body of human laws, the more room there is for ignoring the spirit of the law for the mere letter of the law and also of becoming dependent on laws instead of creative common sense to guide every minute part of life. As Alexander Solzhenitsyn saw, it is a dictatorship by legislation that cultivate increasingly irresponsible individuals, who then needed to be increasingly governed by more and more law. All this makes a society dependent on bigger and bigger Government.

"But the interpretation of the law cannot always be in question, Father, or a kind of

legalistic terror would reign among the people."

The rule of law is only as benevolent and unambiguous as the people, from top to bottom, are good and just and honest. In other words, only a right spirit can and will rightly interpret law. Man is the carpenter; law is merely the ruler he uses. The letter of the law can never rule. It is no better than its interpretation and actual use. In the end we patriots decided, Son, that any law that creates and maintains evil, injustice, and progressive disorder or any law that fuels its own abuse, by ambiguity, burdensome

detail, etc., is worthy of replacement. Patriot lawyers also cited the 10th Amendment, which labeled all unconstitutional law "null and void," to justify taking legal action against bad law or the misuse of law by the system. The lesson, Son, is that just men will act lawfully, though they be branded "outlaws," and unjust men will act unlawfully within the confines of their laws -- though appearances in both cases may be to the contrary.

Thus both sides of the worldwide conflict between godless tyranny and godfearing patriots came to call each other "outlaws." What complicated matters so much is that while a good percentage of the civil law was acceptable to Patriots, the "system" or context of those laws and their application and enforcement had contaminated the whole barrel of apples -- the result being the destruction of our liberties, our values, and social order itself.

Some men of conscience and good will were slow to abandon the Establishment. Although recognizing the same problem of "the system" and of its manipulation by an elitist-enemy, they made a prudential judgement, for better or for worse, that the *appearance* of law and order must be maintained to save us from anarchy. The difference between these and the fighting Patriot was that the latter had no faith in the outcome of keeping a *traitorous* Establishment in power by tending to the 'appearance' of their chief weapon: the manipulation of law and order. The Patriot knew only too well what preserving a *resemblance* to law and order had come to mean: namely, the real *absence of law and order*.

We reasoned that a risk needed to be taken. There was no more time to delay in cutting this cancer out of the Nation -- if the Nation as constituted was to live. Nevertheless, among good men there was an agonizing state of disagreement for a short time. And our enemy, by pitting the appearance of law and order against the reality of their misuse of it in ravaging the country, acted in typical, hypocritical fashion, in order to effect *division* among people of good will.

"So what did not exist at first, Father, was a neat division between two clear cut sides of the coming civil conflict."

Right. Varying degrees of discernment among the populace made the division of "the sheep from the goats" not easily determined by human faculties alone. And so we increasingly said the Church's prayer to the Holy Spirit for discernment concerning the trustworthiness of individuals as time went on.

Read this prayer now from the inside cover of our Bible, Phillip. *"Come, Holy Spirit, fill the hearts of Thy faithful and enkindle in them the fire of Thy love. Send forth Thy spirit and they shall be created. And Thou shalt renew the face of the earth. Let us pray. O God, Who didst instruct the hearts of the faithful by the light of the Holy Spirit, grant us by the same Spirit to have a right judgment in all things and ever to rejoice in His consolation. Through Christ our Lord. Amen."*

"Father, I can almost hear many people who stood against the Christian Patriots in every age, saying 'but I followed my conscience in the matter, so I can't be blamed'."

That sounds good, Phillip, but look at it this way: "Hell is paved with good intentions." Why? Because conscience must conform to reality to be a true and therefore a good conscience. Hitler could have said he followed his conscience too. But his conscience was in error. It was his responsibility to conform his mind to reality.

Phillip, I remember the day we had our 12th family meeting. I said, "Joseph, you're late Son. I was worried. Anything happen?"

"The police and a bunch of big shot deputies with guns were stopping everyone on Outer Drive, looking for guns and homemade money. I was cited for not having my draft card. I have to get registered Monday. Somebody told me they're going to draft almost all the men and place them on standby status, so that they will all be under the direct orders of a military officer.

"Everyone sit down. Did you boys hear what Joe said?"

"What do we do?" Tim looked worried. "We have Red Chinese soldiers swarming all over California."

"And they have withheld firing on the people because there's *no resistance*. I can't believe it; no one is fighting back." Paul's usual reserve was breaking.

"No one's firing on anyone, and that's the way they want it," I said. "They want everyone to follow suit. It's the easy way."

"When will the Warning come, Dad?" asked Marie.

"Don't cry! Don't everyone start that again! Marie, God knows the most effective time of the Warning. You all know the revolution in Rome must start first. It seems close, but ..."

"Nothing's happening, Dad."

"I know, Paul. The spark isn't here yet. Nothing will ignite without it."

"What is this spark going to be?"

"I don't know for sure, Son, but here's my idea. In the Warning individual consciences will be illuminated in regard to their past behavior, and from this they will have an accurate set of guidelines as to how they should act in the future. And the enemy will see their own evil and see that by this universal awakening from God they have been exposed and the way for the multitudes to escape their trap has opened up. For they will see that men are now more

afraid of offending God than of offending *them*. At the Warning all those who will follow the Divine Shepherd will start moving away from evil. At that point, the enemy must act to consolidate their power or lose their last opportunity. Some of the goats will remain frozen, cowering in fear for a time, but with no repentance in their hearts, they will begin to move on as before, following the spirit of antichrist. There will be a majority, probably, who will repent temporarily, until it seems the danger is over or until it can be explained away for them. This is the insincere seed that falls upon rocky soil, springs up but soon dies for lack of roots. The Warning will be the major spark, I believe, of the Second Revolutionary War. But the question is, "Can we afford to wait for it, if they force a showdown before that?"

"Like what, Dad?"

"Like using armed force to demand weapons from the people. Are we going to act on principle at that time, or are we going to wait until the whole population is disarmed and then fight a hopeless war, our backs against a wall."

"How can it be hopeless, David, if God is truly in control?"

You are right, Sweetheart, God does not depend totally on our good decisions. My point was that part of His control is that His soldiers, those whom He guides, will make humanly wise decisions like I have suggested and, although He *could* act without our decision, He does not ordinarily do so in the course of human events, and, of course,

it is presumption to think that we need not play our part, or that good will come even though good human choices are not made.

In other words we pray as if everything depended on God, but work as if everything depended on us.

How simply and concisely the Saints were able to put things.

"If we fight back will they bomb us?"

"They have and possibly will again drop nuclear or neutron bombs on big U.S. cities as a terror tactic or to crush stubborn patriotic resistance, but they won't start an all out nuclear holocaust on the U.S. because this is the apple of their eye. They want what we and our forefathers have worked for. They will not totally destroy this country physically, just the spirit of freedom and those people who cling to it or those people they choose to sacrifice to Lucifer. But in other underdeveloped parts of the world, there will be a nuclear holocaust. According to the Messages, Satan will direct one of his insane disciples to "push the button" that will begin a nuclear firestorm of apocalyptic proportions.

"What should we be doing now, Dad?"

"Paul, as much as I wish for an easier way out, I think we should be gathering supplies, keeping a low profile, and starting to form strategic plans for an armed conflict."

"Should we talk to others?"

"Yes and no. We need to feel out other potential patriots, but I think we need God's

help there. Scripture says that "*He who trusts in man is a fool.*" Say the short exorcism to St. Michael before approaching anyone. All eyes were on me, I could feel beads of sweat forming on my forehead. Phillip, being a leader was not comfortable.

"If we can form plans that are flexible, the less we risk sticking our neck out too soon. I would like to act as much as possible in union with the will of reasonable, patriotic citizens, even if they do not have the courage or ability to initiate military action themselves. We need to represent all those of virtue and good will.

I want to talk about our military preparedness with you boys tomorrow after Mass. We'll take a walk up to the foot of the mountain where we can survey the lay of the land. But let me warn you about the militia groups that you see getting attention in newspaper articles, on television and through these flyers that are being put on car windshields.

"It's happening all over the country."

"Right. And what does this tell you? Anything sound fishy, maybe a little too neat? Too much press. Is the enemy going to help produce its own opposition? These militias are the enemy's ant traps, spearheaded by their *agent provocateurs* and funded with all the money and press they need. They will be allowed to mouth off and stage conflicts without serious consequences. Why? They're trolling for suckers, who will be fed to the dogs in the end. The so-called patriotic fronts and factions that for years tore up countries like Bosnia, Albania, Afghanistan, Lebanon, etc., were usually communist fronts posing as anti-communist nationalist liberators. Their design was to invite retaliation by more powerful communist led governments. When patriots joined these fronts, they were neutralized and ended up serving the overall communist objectives.

"Did everyone hear what is coming down tomorrow?" Ruth asked. "The bishop told the pastor we can't kneel for Communion, and we will be kicked out of church if we

don't stand when everyone else does. Now what do we do?!" she cried. "We have to attend Mass on Sunday under pain of mortal sin."

"Not if that means doing something wrong in the process," I said.

"We're just obeying our Bishop's orders, Dave."

"That could be wrong too. They have no authority to prevent anyone from receiving God kneeling. That's false authority. It's worth our good example to kneel in defiance of false authority, and if we are refused Communion, we will get up and return to our pew. Jesus will then come to us in a spiritual communion if we ask Him."

"But standing for Communion isn't necessarily wrong."

"If there is a good or necessary reason, no, it isn't wrong. If I have a bad knee, for example, and cannot kneel. But necessity is not someone saying there is a necessity because they are telling you to do it."

"As far as kneeling at other times in the Mass, can we try avoiding a confrontation by

sitting in the back pew or going up in the choir loft or cry room where we won't be observed easily. They don't want a scene either."

"That's a good idea, Sweetheart. But they will not get our forced obedience, and they will have to pay for attempting that with a scene. That makes them think twice about their resolve and the correctness of their demands when it costs them a public relations embarrassment. When they make a big deal out of a harmless act of reverence, people start asking, 'what's so wrong with our Bishop that he will go to this extreme to prevent people from kneeling to receive their God, especially in times like this.'"

"The Sabbath was made for man, not man for the Sabbath" said Jesus to the Pharisees. If we are not permitted to fulfill our obligation of attending Sunday Mass because we choose to do what is right in regard to God's honor, are we going to be blamed by God for not fulfilling our obligation, or will it be they who are blamed? Nor are we positively doing an intrinsic evil by missing Mass on Sunday; otherwise, it would be forbidden to go camping in the wilderness over the weekend. This seems to be a case of giving good example and resisting an evil.

"Dad, can we pass out the Warning of Our Lady at Akita, Japan? It's Church approved by Rome, and people might be ready to listen now."

"Good idea, Mary. Let's do it. Go ahead and read it now."

DISASTROUS WARNING GIVEN BY OUR LADY AT  
AKITA, JAPAN, RECEIVES FULL CHURCH APPROVAL –  
Message of October 13, 1973 "... if men do not repent and better  
themselves, the Father will inflict a terrible punishment on all  
humanity. It will be a punishment greater than the deluge, such  
as one will never have seen before. Fire will fall from the sky  
and will wipe out a great part of humanity, the good as well as  
the bad, sparing neither priests nor faithful. The survivors will  
find themselves so desolate that they will envy the dead. The  
only arms which will remain for you will be the Rosary and the  
Sign left by my Son. Each day recite the prayers of the Rosary.  
With the Rosary, pray for the Pope, the bishops and the priests.

The work of the devil will infiltrate even into the Church  
in such a way that one will see cardinals opposing cardinals,  
bishops against other bishops. The priests who venerate me will  
be scorned and opposed by their confreres (other priests).  
Churches and altars will be sacked. The Church will be full of  
those who accept compromises and the demon will press many  
priests and consecrated souls to leave the service of the Lord.

The demon will be especially implacable against the souls  
consecrated to God. The thought of the loss of so many souls is  
the cause of my

sadness. If sins increase in number and gravity, there will be no  
longer pardon for them.

Pray very much the prayers of the Rosary. I alone am able still to save you from the calamities which approach. Those who place their confidence in me will be saved."

\*April 1984 – Most Rev. John Shojiro Ito, Bishop of Niigata, Japan, after years of extensive investigation, declares the events of Akita, Japan, to be of supernatural origin, and authorizes throughout the entire diocese the veneration of the Holy Mother of Akita.

\*June, 1988 – Vatican City – Joseph Cardinal Ratzinger, Prefect, Congregation for the Doctrine of the Faith, gives definitive judgment on the Akita events and messages as reliable and worthy of belief.

The next morning we attended church as usual and, probably to avoid a scene, the priest said nothing as we knelt (as all had done before 1965) for Communion, and before the homily and after the Our Father, beginning with the handshake of peace innovation. 'It was only a matter of time though,' I remembered thinking.

Back home after Mass I read to all the following as a reminder of why we went to such lengths to attend Mass and Holy Communion properly:

### HOSTS FLYING AWAY

"One of these last Sundays (June 21<sup>st</sup> or 28<sup>th</sup>, 1970) at the seven o'clock parish Mass, in the Beauceville church (P.Q., Canada), the parish priest Charles Eugene Houde (about 50 years old) was celebrant. He had already told his parishioners that they were permitted to receive the Holy Host in their hands, according to the directives given by the archbishop of Quebec. This day, before the Mass, he told his parishioners the following: "Henceforth, to avoid complications, everyone of you will receive the Host in your hand for Communion. (That was against the bishop's directions that allowed the people the freedom to take the Host either in their hand or in their mouth.)

At the moment of the Communion of the Mass, Rev. Houde turned to the people, holding the Ciborium in his hand. Before he had time to take one single Host and make a single step, about fifty consecrated Hosts flew out of the Ciborium by themselves, they went up in the air, and dispersed themselves around the celebrant, then slowly fell to the ground ...

Father Houde was so much struck by the prodigy that for a few minutes he remained motionless, having his face white. Then, interiorly inspired, he said to the faithful who were approaching the Holy Table: "Henceforth, all of you will receive the Holy Host on your tongue, not in your hand, because God just gave us a sign."

And, the priest knelt down and picked up the Holy Hosts scattered on the carpet, and he continued to distribute Holy Communion. Back at his prebytery he is reported having said, "Never in my life will I give Holy Communion in the hand."

If that is true, Our Lord wanted to show that to give Holy Communion in the hand is the same as throwing the Holy Host on the ground, because little pieces of the Host often fall from the communicant's hands. That is why the Church requires a paten held by an altar-boy to collect the little pieces containing the Body of Christ. That is also why the ritual prescribes the

priest to gather the crumbs possibly remaining on the corporal at the altar, and washes his fingers over the Chalice after Communion is distributed. All these precautions to avoid profanations and sacrileges.

By that miraculous fact and the many and multiplying profanations, the Authorities should be persuaded to cancel the permission to distribute Holy Communion in the hand.

224

JESUS AND MARY AT OUR LADY OF ROSES SHRINE  
SPEAKING  
THROUGH VERONICA LUEKEN:

THE LAITY MUST GO FORWARD ... "You will all pray for your Holy Father in Rome, Pope John Paul II. There is a devious and diabolical force now trying to tear asunder My Son's Church. The laity must now go forward and save My Son's Church.

"I am with you: as your Mother I will guide you through this battle. The final victory will be with My Son, but you will go forward in this battle of the spirits. It is your test of perseverance, sanctity, valor, and if you succeed in passing through this crisis without discarding your faith – as in test many may or will – you will then receive a well-earned and deserved crown in Heaven."

DO NOT ACCEPT MY SON'S BODY IN YOUR HANDS ...

"Again and again I wander to and fro directing My children to remain close to the Eucharist, the Bread of Life. but do not become misguided: do not accept My Son's Body in your hands. Satan, Lucifer, came as an angel of light And set his agents among the Hierarchy of My Son's Church and deluded them. All manner of abominations are being committed upon My Son's Body now."

NONE BUT A DULY ORDAINED, LEGALLY ORDAINED PRIEST ... "I repeat again and again that none but a duly ordained, legally ordained priest in My Son's House shall bring His sacred Body in the Host to another. Foul deeds are being committed upon My Son's Body! And you allow them, Neither caring ..."

"My child and My children, it is the will of My Son that only man – not woman – shall give His Body to the multitudes – only a man, a priest, legally ordained, a true descendant of peter, must bring My Son's Body to the multitudes."

CONTINUE TO APPROACH THE CLERGY IN YOUR PARISH ... "I ask you as your Mother, too, not to give in or give up in this struggle to retain a semblance of the Church of My Son upon earth. You will speak out and continue to approach the clergy in your parish. The monuments, the statues, must remain."



MAN MUST KNEEL BEFORE JESUS IN THE EUCHARIST ... "All honor must be given to My Son in the Eucharist. Man must kneel. My Son's House is the House of God and a house of prayer, and it must not be turned into a meeting hall.

"You shall not win souls and neither shall you enter Heaven when you use humanism and modernism and change as your approach. Heaven gave you a full plan for the redemption of souls. You will not change this."

OBEDIENCE HAS BEEN DISTORTED ... "Pray for your clergy. Obedience has been distorted now to make them servants of those who are not true rulers.

"You will pray for all of your Cardinals and Bishops. Because of a false sense of obedience, many go to destruction against their will. However, as man has been given a free choice in will, a man cannot use this as an excuse for his actions, for every man is responsible for the salvation of his immortal soul."

That morning, Phillip, your four oldest brothers and I (for John had returned) walked up to the foot of the mountain and sat beneath a big Ponderosa pine, singing softly in the steady southwesterly wind. I drew in a big breath, sturdied myself against my emotions and prayed silently for strength. Then I led us all in the Church's prayer to the Holy Spirit for discernment.

Men, let us go through the main considerations in any military engagement: 1) Reconnaissance is knowing as much as necessary about the location, strength, activity and plans of the enemy troops and their line of supply. 2) Establishing our own supply of personnel, food, arms, ammo, and necessities such as clothes, shelter and medical supplies. 3) A battle plan, starting with an overall military objective, with the projected means of accomplishing that goal. 4) A workable chain of command and communication system. And 5) Methods of fighting that are safest for us but as effective as necessary in accomplishing our objectives. Anything else?" Hearing my own voice, I doubted whether we were ready to talk about these concrete practical matters yet.

We sat still listening to the wind, the big blue sky overpowering, peaceful ..., occasionally broken by wisps of white cirrus clouds. This was *our* land. God had given it unto our care, for our first use, to live in peace and harmony all the days of our lives. Where else could we go? A foreign presence, with unacceptable terms of surrendering our national sovereignty and individual rights from God was pouring into our homeland without just or necessary cause by way of the traitorous cooperation of our leaders. The UN troops from foreign nations were aliens to this beloved land. The very sky above seemed to defy their presence.

"We have no choice but to fight, do we Dad?" Timothy said in a low voice.

"We always have a choice, Tim: to do what is right, or not. The real question for us here and now is whether there is more than one right choice?"

"Is it right not to fight too?"

"If we are capable of fighting? Well, let's reason it out. We know they want not just our land; they want *our* allegiance to *their* values and *their* plans for our nation. They will want us to lay down our divine Faith too, the gift we have from God which is much greater than this land or our mortal lives. Yes, it would be *wrong* not to fight against them, knowing all this. Of course, they do not in so many words threaten all this ... , now, that is. But we have every reason to believe it will come to that. What they know is that most of the people will accept appearances as they have defined them with their soft words which hide the hateful truth. But what most of the people do is not the basis of morality. The playwright Ibsen once said, "Most of the people are wrong most of the time." So, we must act on the probabilities and certainties of reason and faith. There will be few to help us because there are few that have or value their soul and their freedom enough not to look the other way and accept things at face value.

"But God will help us, men! I looked around at each one – young men, their love of life now flickering in the wind of doubtful fears, their youthful hopes of a pleasant life threatened by a dark future, where conflicts loomed like tremendous thunderheads. "Remember your true love and your true home. They are with God in Heaven. He asks you to give Him your life now. Put it in His hands. You owe all to Him. He will give you eternal bliss in exchange for your life given willingly here on earth. He, not you or any other power will choose when the flower of your mortal life on this earth will be picked from the stem.

"Dad?"

"Yes, John?"

"Over the last four months I have come to join you because I prayed. God showed me how vain and foolish and selfish my fears were. I was reacting out of fear, rather than acting as a man facing something fearful, with hope and confidence in God.

You asked if there was anything else a military effort should be composed of, and I think there is ... prayer. Prayer should have been #1. We need to pray together as an army, whether we are small or large. In whatever size unit we are in, we should be praying almost constantly, even a little short prayer like, "My Jesus, my Confidence, my Hope, my Love." We should especially pray *together* before every conflict or mission begins. Otherwise, we will be overcome by the fear of fearful circumstances. Because, as I see it, this job is too big for us alone as human beings." There was a time of silence.

Before speaking I wiped the two tear-streams from my cheeks. "You're absolutely right, John. That is the most important strategy of all ... by far. I can at least dream of the human *means* by which we might defeat these odds we're up against; but I cannot see us *accomplishing that end* without the help of God and His angelic warriors at our sides. And I

know they are here with us now. We must say the St. Michael prayer often. Let us fortify ourselves now:

*St. Michael, the Archangel, defend us in battle. Be our protection against the wickedness and snares of the devil. May God rebuke him, we humbly pray, and do thou, O Prince of the Heavenly Host, by the Divine Power of God, cast into Hell, Satan and all the evil spirits who wander now throughout the world seeking the ruin of souls. Amen.*

"Let us pray a moment longer, my sons, in silence, each one asking for courage and hope and determination and freedom from anxiety."

The wind had stopped. Minutes followed, our heads bowed. All of us agreed later, Phillip, that during this time God lifted each one of us up above human thoughts and sentiments and "Blessed us." He commissioned us. Each of us experienced a relieving of tension, a miraculous strengthening and a constancy and courage that from that day on grew into a habit of mind with each renewal of the intention to trust in God, to serve God, and to reject servile fear, which is the tool of the Devil. A certain visible appearance accompanied all valiant patriots we encountered thereafter, a look or manner that I associate with this blessing, which was a kind of enlistment in an invisible Army. I have always believed that from that day onwards St. Michael himself became our leader. The effects of this blessing were not violent or angry, but comforting, fulfilling vital, vibrant, confident, quiet, missionary, burning zeal for the Glory of God. Selfishness and fear seemed to leave us.

"Father, St. John wrote that "perfect love casts out all fear."

That is because one is not thinking about himself in love, but about the other? But servile fear is motivated by self-love, John.

Phillip, this special blessing was like the bestowal of a great commission, as when an officer's rank and responsibility are bestowed. We had become spiritual soldiers, ready for combat, not by our own strength but by conscription into a greater, invisible Army, the Hosts of Heaven.

We all seemed to awaken at the same time from our silent prayer, slowly returning to an awareness of the present. I was moved at that moment, Phillip, to read from Scripture a passage that had come to mind, for I had carried a small Bible with me. I stood up and turned to them and said: " Let us read I Kings Chapter 17 verses 36-52:

"For I thy servant have killed both a lion and a bear: and this uncircumcised Philistine shall be also as one of them. I will go now, and take away the reproach of the people: for who is this uncircumcised Philistine, who hath dared to curse the army of the living God?"

And David said: The Lord who delivered me out of the paw of

the bear, he will deliver me out of the hand of this Philistine.  
And Saul said to David: Go, and the Lord be with thee.

And Saul clothed David with his garments, and put a helmet of brass upon his head, and armed him with a coat of mail.

And David having girded his sword upon his armour, began to try if he could walk in armour: for he was not accustomed to it. And David said to Saul: I cannot go thus, for I am not used to it. And he laid them off.

And he took his staff, which he had always in his hands: and chose him five smooth stones out of the brook, and put them into the shepherd's scrip, which he had with him, and he took a sling in his hand, and went forth against the Philistine.

And the Philistine came on, and drew nigh against David, and his armourbearer before him.

And when the Philistine looked, and beheld David, he despised him. For he was a young man, ruddy, and of a comely countenance.

And the Philistine said to David: Am I a dog, that thou comest to me with a staff? And the Philistine cursed David by his gods.

And he said to David: Come to me, and I will give thy flesh to the birds of the air, and to the beasts of the earth.

And David said to the Philistine: Thou comest to me with a sword, and with a spear, and with a shield: but I come to thee in the name of the Lord of hosts, the God of the armies of Israel, which thou hast defied.

This day, and the Lord will deliver thee into my hand, and I will slay thee, and take away thy head from thee: and I will give the carcasses of the army of the Philistines this day to the birds of the air, and to the beasts of the earth: that all the earth may know that there is a God in Israel.

And all this assembly shall know, that the Lord saveth not with sword and spear: for it is his battle, and he will deliver you into our hands.

And when the Philistine arose and was coming, and drew nigh to meet David, David made haste, and ran to the fight to meet the Philistine.

And he put his hand into his scrip, and took a stone, and cast it with the sling, and fetching it about struck the Philistine in the forehead: and the stone was fixed in his forehead, and he fell on his face upon the earth.

And David prevailed over the Philistine, with a sling and a stone, and he struck, and slew the Philistine. And as David had no sword in his hand,

He ran, and stood over the Philistine, and took his sword, and drew it out of the sheath, and slew him, and cut off his head. And the Philistines seeing that their champion was dead, fled away.

And the men of Israel and Juda rising up shouted, and pursued after the Philistines till they came to the valley and to the gates of Accaron, and there fell *many* wounded of the Philistines in the way of Saraim, and as far as Geth, and as far as Accaron.

After reading a time of silence again passed between us. Then I stood up, surveying the foothills of the mountain below us, as they stretched in ever narrowing fingers to the river seven miles below us. "First, everyone who joins you should be willing to pray with you.

Secondly, our goal is to frustrate and protest the enemy's occupation of our land and drive them out. Therefore, we must interrupt their control of the populace, which is their goal. We can do this by destroying their means of communicating to the people, so that people will begin to talk amongst themselves again like good neighbors. Television and radio stations, cables and transmission towers are useful only to those who control them and we cannot long maintain that control over

them. These medias can be used as weapons against us and tools of evil propaganda. If we can cut off the voice of Big Brother, the fear of him will fade and people will begin to listen to the Voice of God within them. Only then could they begin to conceive of fighting for the truly good values they love and depend on. Without television and radio we will be on more equal ground with the enemy in regard to winning the hearts and minds of the people. At the proper time, we will destroy these facilities, if we can. The internet, CB's and short wave radios are not usable for public broadcast, and we must use them for our own communication purposes.

All acts of coercion or terror or intimidation visited by the enemy upon the populace, like wrongful incarceration or punishment of the innocent, withholding medical care, food, water, power, employment, theft of property, kidnapping, violence -- these must be punished, *severely!* so that the perpetrators themselves, as much as possible, suffer personally for their own actions. This shows the people that we are the protectors of the good, the innocent and, especially, the courageous.

The enemy will try to excuse their oppression and injustices by sending the people on a guilt trip with the concept of their "collective responsibility". That *idea* that all tyrants love needs to be discredited with the just retribution of those who abuse their presumed and usurped authority. This will cause each enemy soldier, their leaders and their accomplices among the people to think twice about following unjust, punitive orders. This policy of just retribution will secretly divide the enemy's ranks at the level of individual consciences by properly reorienting sympathies towards right, not might.

These punishments they receive must be swift, if not immediate, in order that the lesson strikes home. Such evil acts by the enemy should be resisted strongly while they are in progress, if they cannot be prevented altogether. We want the people to value our protection of them, especially those who will resist arms confiscation. This means we need a militia hidden amongst the populace as much as possible. Where not possible, we need spies that can quickly tell us what is going on where.

Full scale battles against heavily armed masses of troops could only come when we have gained much strength of men and arms. Smaller engagements, especially from ambush, with a good chance of escape are more advisable -- but only if a good purpose is to be gained. We cannot kill all the enemy. Their slaughter is not our goal. But maybe we can make them

give up some of their objectives or lose the desire to fight and gain a desire to go home, if we give them no peace and security, no easy reign of power. They must be made to pay a dear price for any control they have over the people.

In any pitched battle, we must have some real advantage or serious goal, and we must disengage before that advantage is lost or when that goal is attained or no longer attainable.

"What should we do now?"

"We await provocation, Joseph. We are obviously a weak, isolated, defensive militia. In the meantime, we must search out those who will cooperate. The women can help much here. One wife talks to another, who talks to her husband. Meetings or phone calls are arranged. We speak only in the possible future tense, setting loose plans but definite lines of communication.

Although their infra-red technology from the air does not let us hide under cover of darkness or of vegetation, darkness is still our best cover. We cannot assume they will be everywhere or always be able to employ effectively these body heat sensors.

We should find five hiding places and store food and water at each. Each recruit we find should himself recruit a two to five man unit. Each man will put together a full pack, so that he can sleep and eat and fight anywhere. Every man should have a compass and a topographic map of our area with township and range easily identified upon it. This will allow the communication of accurate plans to all.

At first each man must see to his own source of food and water and for the protection or hiding of his family, if his activities put them in danger.

"How will we protect the little ones and the women, Dad?"

I don't have any easy answers to that one, Paul. They too must have armed guardians and easily accessible hiding places. Above all, they must pray. We must constantly work to capture enemy weapons and distribute them where most needed.

"Will anyone join us, Dad?"

"Not many will fight until a foreign army arrives and begins to forcefully disarm the public. Then the writing is on the wall.

"One more thing; small groups of five can communicate better internally. All they need from time to time are objectives and the time and place of major attacks or defense actions. Don't join any big, safe organized militias, because I think the enemy will allow these to be created by their secret agents, in order to control them, render them ineffective or counterproductive or just lead them into ambush. Our ranks will grow from the grassroots, by ones, twos and threes. Be suspicious of big groups or individuals that seem too eager. Better to bring your own pre-selected members into a team. No uniforms are needed. If and when identification is needed, a set manner of wearing an article of clothing or a piece of equipment can be designated."

I raised my voice: "Men, the country God gave you has been invaded by our sworn, longtime national enemies, aggressive powers controlled by the infernal enemy. The lives and souls of our loved ones, our neighbors, our countrymen are in MORTAL DANGER OF DEATH!!! Fight! Never Surrender! Strive to remain armed at all times or have arms readily available. *Pass this message on!* Gather others worthy of understanding this danger and fighting for victory over the foe."

I lowered my voice and sat down on a boulder before them. "Let each of you try to gather four more trusted men at arms. No women. If they wish to fight, they form their own units. At your request, I will be a general to you and to all who choose me to serve their group in that way. Remember, I cannot serve you if you do not initiate communication or give me a way to contact you. So that's mainly your responsibility. Let it be a military order that each unit establishes prayer as a basic activity when together. Any person is free to leave his unit at anytime, as long as he does not directly endanger others in doing so at a particular time. Cowards are not useful to us; they are dangerous. Your trust in each other must not be based on formalities, human promises, rank or rules, but on a true, loving, loyal Godly spirit. In this war, in this time of times, all other loyalties and commitments are unworthy of trust. Pray fervently to the Holy Spirit in the search for these true souls. One of these is worth more than a thousand men of common mettle. You will see.

So we should go out and find our own team of five and then find other individuals telling them to find their teams of five?

"Right, Tim."

"And how will we all maintain contact with you?"

"Constant contact is not necessary. Each team will plan and execute its own missions according to the general order or objectives they see or hear about themselves or through me. As units multiply, I will give my location to the leader of every fifth unit which will be called a communication unit or "Com Unit." These units will send me a messenger, who will relay all directives and news to the other four units. All five units together we will call a "Company." The leader of the Com Unit will be the Company Captain. Each one of you will rise from captain to colonel when he has 25 companies to direct.

Right now with the main foreign invasion force of "peacekeepers" due here in about a week, we need to secure a hideout and gather recruits. The collection of firearms will be enforced door to door not long after they arrive. They know that half the people did not turn them in voluntarily when the first call went out a month ago. Questions?

"Why didn't they aggressively come after our guns when that call first was made?"

Well, Joe, they didn't have the manpower to enforce confiscation or to put down the open rebellion it could have incited in those who refused. That's what these UN troops are for. They didn't trust our own military or law enforcement to really believe in gun

confiscation.

"How many do you think will end up fighting for our country, Dad?"

Five percent I'd guess will actually fight. Maybe 10% more will support us. Trust in God providing all that's needed.

"How good life was, Father, before we spoke of all this," Paul said, his head hung in dejection and misery.

The time of earthly joys are near an end, Paul. The tribulation of the Apocalypse is here. We must cast our eyes and our hopes towards Heaven and Christ's Coming in glory, when He will crown our works with victory. Then will follow the Great Peace all good men long for. Let this hope be your comfort for now.

One more piece of advice before we go. Do not speak of these matters until you know from the others' conversation and actions of what spirit they are. To sound out a spirit, silently, say a St. Michael exorcism prayer and then keep your eyes open. In regard to others, even former friends, keep trust and wishful thinking in separate categories. Speak of these things only in strict confidentiality, and only out of absolute necessity. Even one's relatives are often frightened by what they do not have the moral fortitude to grasp or cannot at the time conceive of participating in themselves.

Phillip, we five slowly filed down the mountain in order and in complete silence. We learned later that several independent militias formed in the city within the next four weeks. In each case this occurred by way of this principle: "Birds of a feather will flock together." Many longtime friends with spiritual affinities joined each other for strength and encouragement even before they were ready to commit to arms.

But we found no one of our spirituality that we could trust, and I began to think that truly spiritual patriots in any significant number would only materialize after the Warning. Spiritual persons in these latter days did seem to be the special works of God's miraculous grace and intervention. But they were hidden souls, quiet, ordinary citizens.

We who fought for our Country, Phillip, will never forget the Sunday morning parade of truckload after truckload of smiling, waving Red Chinese troops, roaring down Center Street. Armored vehicles and tanks with rubber clad tracks followed. It took

one's breath away to see it. A ball of lead weighed in one's stomach. A steel fist seemed to clench within the chest. "Woe" was written on most every face -- a terrible hopelessness to witness. It was likely to be the most horrifying internal experience most Americans had ever endured. I thought then, 'This is now happening or has already happened or soon will happen all over this entire Country.' I felt like crying out in grief, "America, I love you. Don't leave me orphaned." But as the hour rolled on with more trucks, I determined that it was I who must not abandon my Country, for my Country was simply the totality of people like me who loved our unity as a sovereign, free people. That is when the dread left me. I stood erect, my eyes,



like steel daggers, glared out of a face set in marble; my body rigid, controlled, wound like a clock, ticking ...

I noticed that the same emotions of woeful dread were hidden under the looks of authoritative sternness displayed on the faces of our local officials, as they rode by in the parade convertibles, and on the faces of law enforcement personnel and National Guard soldiers, as they stood guard duty along the parade route. At least there was potential in this woe for their future resistance or noncooperation. I wanted to shout: "I've had *enough* of this rotten deceit!"

The Governor, mayor, city manager, DA, police chief, and various national guard officers led the parade, their cowardice pitifully clothed in skimpy, plastic smiles. I felt sorry for them. How difficult it was for them to be true to their conscience under such pressure. What inner fear must have alarmed them, in selling out the people they were elected to serve with the timid excuse, "This wasn't *my* idea." No, but it *was* their personal decision to go along for the ride or not. Each person put the mark on his own forehead in those times, Phillip. Preserve your body or preserve your soul, that was the choice. And the characteristic choices one had made before were the ones that usually triumphed in the crucible of coercion. Some had spent their lives coercing others, wielding too much power too personally and carelessly. Now they felt the rush of a more potent power pill -- to which it seemed impossible to say "no." All those years they had ruled over little sinners and they did not perceive their own terrible, bloodthirsty addiction to POWER! The ultimate thrill. Make it right with might. Cruelty always prides itself on its appearance of rectitude and objectivity. How else could it stand to look in the mirror of its own savage actions. Such were the sick ones that betrayed our nation and every nation in the whole world. These filthy politicians invited the enemy and his ways into America over the decades of the 20<sup>th</sup> Century.

As the last of the parade passed, I fell into bitter anguish. This, alas, is what America had come to -- INVADDED!! By the *invitation* of its own traitors and the apathy and laziness of us all. All was due to the moral and political laxity of our people which did business in the common currency of Human Respect. The time of final payments had come. The Bankruptcy of America had been declared! This was *Foreclosure*!

The next few weeks were disarmingly polite, Phillip. A huge public works project, with payment in food and necessities, employed over 2000 men and women in the building of fortifications and facilities for the Chinese troops. A dozen other smaller local government work projects employed another 2000 tradesmen and laborers. The lesson: cooperation with your new government pays off in subsidization of your life in an otherwise failed system.

The President, speaking in direct behalf of the Federal Reserve Banksters, had already promised new money to those communities who cooperated with their transfer of

power to UN military command. This transfer was euphemistically termed, "... hospitality to

our foreign visitors aiding us in our re-stabilization efforts." Grand plans were publicized for various public "reconstruction" schemes that would "put people back to work and restore our economic health."

The same ones among us who had always seen what was going on in the world had no trouble recognizing these collective work projects as leading to a virtual slave labor system -- a giant "Gulag Archipelago" -- but one with a happy American dream-whip face on it, for the sake of those eternally gullible 'n gutless ones that had brought us to this tragic pass to begin with.

Behind the *community festivities* a serious plan for gun confiscation was being laid. First, registered guns would be called in a second time, then a massive house to house contraband search would be conducted, accompanied by an extensive census information profile and a military/work status classification for males 14 years or older. Communists always separate men from families first. This effectively removes the family's strength and its breadwinner, making it dependent on government support or destitute, your choice. It also destroys the family as a loyal unit of self-confidence, of self-defense, leaving it without leadership and protection, terrifying its members. A military or work assignment for the sake of the Nation is a convenient excuse for accomplishing this all-important separation of the man from his family.

The owners of registered guns who had not yet turned them in were to be interrogated while their property was being searched. If the registered guns were not found, they would be arrested and taken to a heavily guarded, barbed wire detention center to await court martial. Punishment was a minimum of two years' incarceration in a labor camp.

It didn't surprise me in the least that our Bishop and all his priests welcomed the enemy every chance they got -- as if Americans really needed massive numbers of foreign troops to put us back in business and disarm us. What a fairy tale! Culpable gullibility is gutless subservience to human respect, meriting damnation.

And, of course, Americans' affluence was to blame for the economic crash said our new government mentors. So now everybody *naturally* "had to do with less." If you couldn't have gas for your car, it was because you used too much before. "We got what we deserved" was the song we were supposed to sing. But the refrain, "Be glad its not any worse than this," was what really gagged me, Phillip. It was trotted out as a justification for what was being done, not just as the meaningless statement of fact it was otherwise. But it also served double duty as a threat: "If we hear any complaint from you, if you don't approve what we are doing to you, we will do something worse! Our whole judicial and law enforcement community in America and around the world had been schooled for many years in the use of this systematic coercion and intimidation to get what they wanted without resistance. So the takeover presented no shock to our "system". They were, literally, made for each other.

Official pressure descended by mail from the Governor's office for all churches to guide their people into the peaceful and temporary surrender of their liberties and their firearms and, otherwise, total cooperation with all other dictates of the State.

Then came the call to relinquish all valuables, including precious metals, jewels, old money, etc. in exchange for bank credit. How wonderful of them to "redeem" our valuables, giving us in return their worthless "credit." That's why they wanted them,

Phillip. The "credit" would presumably equal a comparable value in the new money that was to come into a community *after* it had fully cooperated with the first steps of the IMF style reorganization-reconstruction-back-to-work Five Year Plan -- which had suddenly appeared as law without any real American's input. And confiscation of valuables for credit was the first step in this plan. "Promises! Promises! How cheap thou art," I used to groan.

The real reason old money, gold, jewelry, etc. was being collected by the new regime was that it could make them instantly rich and powerful and make us poor, powerless and at their mercy -- lest we frustrate their new "economic plan" to rob us and *keep* us poor; that is, to control all individual wealth. This theft was sold as giving each person "a common currency." "Dire poverty," I would tell people is the "common currency" you are being given in return for your remaining wealth, self-sufficiency and control of your life. Their credit is only as good as their reputation for honesty. Can you can imagine that?" My prediction that this would end up being a leveling of wealth to poverty scheme proved true. As it turned out, even if you had turned in more wealth and therefore had more credit in their bank than your poorer neighbor, that extra amount was heavily taxed, assessed, converted and otherwise spent (stolen) to the point where you were almost as poor as those who had turned in nothing at all. It was all done for the "*common good*," though! How often we heard such words, knowing that they referred to the exact opposite of what they purported.

Since all banks and title companies and other holders of deeds had gone bankrupt, their assets, the property of others, was taken by the Big Banks, to whom all debts seems to originate, as piglets suckling a sow. The Banks were collecting on the massive public debt and were financing the massive UN "Save America" Operation. Their ownership of all American assets would create the loans of "credit" to restart our economy. "How wonderful of them," many crooned. In other words, virtually all property that had some debt attached to it became the property of the Super-Banks, who then loaned some of it in the form of "credit" to the State, which, the story goes, represented "the people," so that "the people" would have some money to restart their new collective life. How sweetly "Theft" and "Dispossession" sounded now that everything had been explained by "Mr. Bill" and "Mr. Greenspend".

On Christmas Eve the boys and I viewed through binoculars the bunkers being built by our National Guard troops all along the foot of the mountain and the top of the mountain. Every road out of town now had crash-proof gates with two sentry bunkers armed with 60 caliber machine guns. At least two military helicopters seemed to be in the air at all times. I figured they were looking for activities by those who were planning to evade gun confiscation and incarceration. U.S.-made infra red scopes were rumored to be standard equipment for all Chinese platoons.

The news now seemed to be strictly controlled, with "public service announcements" four times per hour. Though one suspected that fighting around the country had already begun, only a few incidents were mentioned, always with very grim consequences for the "would be patriots" who had survived the crushing military response to their protesting gun confiscation.

"What are we going to do, Dad?" Paul said, as we stood looking at the red sunset in the West one evening.

234

"I don't know, Son. It looks grim. I'm so depressed I feel that I could die. Lord, God, come to our rescue!" I cried softly, turning my closed eyes upon the darkening blue December sky. "Guide me, Lord. I am in your Hands." That night I read the 30th Psalm of David, among others.

The UN, in response to a request from countries in Europe for peace-keeping forces, asked Russia for troops to man such a force. Communist agents in all these beleaguered countries had fomented massive rioting and every kind of civil disturbance and sabotage in order to prepare the way for martial law, just as they had in the U.S.A. After establishing martial law, the traitorous governments of all Europe called for help from the UN. The UN called Russia, and Russia complied, with an ill-disguised invasion. Europe was completely overrun and occupied in two months. What had worked in the U.S. worked in Europe too. The bulk of each country's armed forces had been annihilated by tactical nuclear weapons in the Middle East and African Wars into which the treacherous governments of Europe had so readily poured their citizens' sons as "peacekeepers." Communist "Islamic" armies were pushing into Southern Europe at a steady rate. By this time China had captured the governments of all free Asian countries in undisguised aggressive warfare. Their standard offer was to spare the country's government, military and law enforcement personnel, if they would largely take over the job of enslaving their own people. This "arrangement" was almost universally accepted, since the only option was wholesale slaughter. China's westward marching troops began to spill into Asia Minor. Africa was ablaze with internal strife. Almost every leftist nation in the world had sent troops to America under the UN flag, in order to receive a promised piece of the American pie.

All this appeared to me as organized, preplanned chaos. The UN repeatedly called for the "voluntary" surrender of sovereignty from every nation, that had not already succumbed. In return the UN promised a government that would bring about peace between the nations -- who just couldn't seem to get along with each other.

I was not surprised that the world's total surrender to the UN had been accomplished within a few more months, Phillip. As the UN posed national sovereignty as an obstacle to world peace, they cited the inequality and divisiveness of proprietary rights or property rights of any kind. Boundaries, different customs, religions, laws, national interests and other necessary divisions were blamed for creating conflict and war and poverty. But these limits and distinctions are what makes separate nations, separate families, individuals, cultures. Diversity, Phillip, comes with separate identities, with created individuality. This uniqueness of the nations and of individuals naturally defies monopolistic rule by anyone but God, *even as God so intended*. The UN's communist/satanic solution, therefore, was to *dissolve* all

distinctions and individual sovereignties. No more individual men standing before God; no more families and their sacred rights to procreate and raise children according to their beliefs; no more nations, the extended families of Noe.

By starting the fires of war and by committing "terrorist" atrocities everywhere, the Communists had given pretext for nations, controlled by their secret governments, to call in the UN, which poured more and more hardened Communist troops into the conflict until a forest fire took the place of what had been isolated brushfires.

Communism and all it stands for could be defined as the demonic appropriation of the prerogatives and the machinery of the State in order to execute its evil purposes.

The world had also followed America into a deep depression, Phillip. All economies were at a standstill. International trade was dead; for no shipment of goods was safe from Communist banditry in the air, on the sea or land.

The most important part of the Plan of the Serpent came across the radios and televisions. National leaders were calling for their nation to submit national sovereignty to a One World Government, which the UN prototype would negotiate and actually create. This offer to "voluntarily" submit your valuables and values, your human and civic rights and freedoms was patterned on the police state apparatus -- threaten someone with an apparently greater material evil, like death, than the evil you are "asking" them to submit to, like the loss of autonomy.

"Why, again, did God allow them to do this, Father?"

Because, indeed, it had come to a point where all mankind needed to decide between acknowledging and acting upon those values that led to eternal life as opposed to those which only led to earthly life at the cost of eternal life.

"So you are saying that Satan was being allowed to present to all a clear choice, however agonizing that might be?"

Yes, but "clear" is not to be taken as being without deceptive appearances and false promises, but clear to the naked conscience, stripped of its own deceitfulness.

The Communists and their pretentious, pompous tool, the UN, had a gun pointed at the head of the world. Nuclear devices had been used to destroy cities in almost every nation as a part of the threat: "This *could* happen to your country on a large scale, if you do not submit." Nuclear Blackmail and every other form of blackmail was being used. Patriots who fought back were hated and hunted as if they were world class criminals. They were portrayed as willing to sacrifice their own people and the human race for their nostalgic, outdated ideas of national sovereignty and inalienable rights.

"But the opposite was true, Father, patriots were fighting a last stand for the salvation of the human race."

Yes, Phillip, but not at *any* cost, like that of eternal salvation. Patriots knew the truth --

fear God *first*, serve Him, and save your soul, your family, your nation and the world, OR fear the Liars and Extortionists *first*, give in to their ultimatums and then lose *all of the above*. When the Warning came, all men, at least for that awful time, feared offending God more than anything else. All the evils that were coming about were seen to be *permitted by Him* as a corrective punishment for sin; and these temporal evils were seen to be a mere shadow of the *eternal evil* that would follow if one did not cease offending God and repent before death. Indeed, the temporal evils He allowed brought many to conversion.

Phillip, the greatest lie of the Devil is that *he* is the one who is free to punish or spare as *he* pleases. Not so!! He has no arbitrary authority or power. But it was all important to Satan that he "steal the show," appearing to control the fate of the whole world.

Indeed, it could appear to those without faith that only the spirit of evil was in control when the Chastisement occurred, as described in the blowing of the trumpets in the Apocalypse (Chapters 8-9). Here is described the divine chastisement of the comet and then in the "sixth trumpet" the diabolical and human chastisement of WWIII. Each would destroy one third of mankind.

"But understand this, Phillip, the plan of the Diabolical Conspiracy was to pre-empt Scripture: They would bring about WWIII but advertise it as the Final Judgement, as described in *Chapter 16* of the Apocalypse. The Final Judgement is preceded in Scripture by the battle of Armageddon, at which vast assembled armies are destroyed *by Divine Power* as they are about to descend on "Israel." The Israel referred to in Scripture is the Catholic Church. But the Conspiracy would have it be their false Israel, the socialistic state of modern times. These armies of WWIII, whom the Conspiracy fully controlled, were in place around the modern socialist state of Israel when, with Israel's secret electromagnetic weapons, these armies were destroyed. This was a staged human event with Big Media coverage, but it would *appear to be* a miraculous event, because of the invisibility of the weapons used. The still secret electromagnetic mega-weapons would destroy a "*purported*" 200,000,000 troops.

"So Satan's agents in the Conspiracy would be seen as God avenging the 'Jews of Israel' who had been long persecuted by the Christian Church and Christian civilization."

You have it, Phillip! And this act would be credited to their bogey "messiah" who would accomplish the "conversion of the *whole world*" ... *to the One World Religion and Government of Antichrist!* This conversion also would be an accomplished media event, with stooge representatives of every religion paraded before this messianic mediator to pay him homage for saving the world from the unconquerable rogue army of 200 million. Homage would be paid to this phoney messiah in the form of the promised cooperation of leading their people into the one "Religion" (of Antichrist).

In order to further mimic Scripture, all the world's so-called Jews, that is, those people practicing Judaism would be the first to recognize and receive the messiah. In case these

peoples didn't all *believe*, they would be represented by a known and "prepared" world representative of Judaism. Then, the Catholic Pope having been removed or driven into hiding, a high ranking apostate official or imposter pope would be conscripted to supposedly lead the "Catholic Church" into submission. This elaborate Grand Stand Event of "Armageddon" and the "second coming of Christ" was to become the wonderful formative event producing a One World Religion to go along with the One World Government being wrought at the same time. Suffice it to say, Phillip, God had other plans.

But "the *show* would go on." Before the great armies under their control which were no longer useful to them, but rather a danger, were disposed of in the great Messianic Media Event (MME), they were used to subject the world to the total tyranny of antichrist by disarming the people, destroying their resistance and their social order and placing them under crushing military rule that controlled life sustaining goods and services – all totally directed by World Government Representatives. (WGR's) A sufficiently giant mobile army was spared the great slaughter in order to put down any rebellion, worldwide. Now this evil army could be slain by the breath of the messiah. Just as the false messiah by the wave of his hand supposedly called down the divine power to slay these great armies, so too he would call for the slaying of any nation or community that did not accept his rule in mimicry of Israel slaying the idolatrous nations when entering the Promised Land long ago. A few communities in each larger nation were used for demonstration, with agent provocateurs creating the required resistance to the Bogey's reign, so that the "stiff-necked" people could be annihilated with secret weapons.

As clumsy as all this was when actually carried out, people who did not have an abiding Faith in God or see His Truth contradicting all this murderous, lying garbage were so desperate to believe in a Saviour that they were literally on their knees adoring this Stooge of Satan and fanatically carrying out his every word dictated over the televisions of the world. They were promised a new age of peace, the Age of Aquarius. But, I'm getting ahead of my story, Phillip. Here at home the time had come to make a stand.

"It's been a very long day. Let us sleep, Father. It is a beautiful evening. Can we not sleep outside under the stars? I want to listen to the wind in the pines as I go to sleep. That song may dispel the noise in my head from the hearing of so much carnage and fantastic insanity in one day."

Yes, Son, bring the robes. You are right, it is time to rest our minds. And yet we must never forget this lesson God left us of Satan's *incredible deceit*, purchased by the murder of billions of human beings; for he will come, again, before the end of time with lying wonders, in the person of Antichrist himself. Nor, in my opinion, will he disguise himself as being anyone else.

"Then how will he deceive? Here, you drink first of the dipper, Father."

The only example I can think of to explain it is that of a known prostitute who openly admits to the man before her that she is as unfaithful and evil as Hell itself; but, at the same time, she is smiling at him in the most appealing and lovable way. Being full of lust he deceives himself by giving credit to this appearance of good, despite the knowledge of evil beneath and unites himself to evil by sin.

"That is believable, Father, frighteningly believable."

238

[{TABLE OF CONTENTS}](#)

[{PREFACE}](#)

[{CHAPTER I}](#) [{CHAPTER II}](#) [{CHAPTER III}](#) [{CHAPTER IV}](#) [{CHAPTER V}](#) [{CHAPTER VI}](#)

[{CHAPTER VII}](#) [{CHAPTER VIII}](#) [{CHAPTER IX}](#) [{CHAPTER X}](#) [{CHAPTER XI}](#)

[{Bibliography}](#)

[{Bookstore}](#) [{Order Form}](#) [{Instructions}](#) [{Notice of Permissions}](#) [{Download}](#)

[{Links}](#)

[{FRAMES VERSION}](#)

(Requires a frames-enabled browser)

*Website contents © 1999 - 2000 [Web Designs by Doc](#). Literary content ©1999 - 2000, Dave Pedry. All rights reserved.*



## CHAPTER X

## THE SECOND AMERICAN REVOLUTIONARY WAR

In the morning Phillip and I sat on the front porch facing the rising sun, sipping raspberry tea and munching hard tack biscuits.

"Before you start today, Father, tell me ... how did you, personally, endure the fear of these days. It seems that a man would shrivel up and die from fear."

This is a very good question, Phillip. But many people in history have had to face great and fearful crises. And then too everyone has to die, and death is often such a crisis itself. But fears can also be of a daily variety. The anxiety produced by fear in people who allow themselves to be vulnerable can ruin health. Many sins of anger and violence are born of fear. Servile fear, that is, slavery to fear is a tool of the devil, an evil to be avoided. How to endure all these fears? Here is the answer it took me 50 years to learn and another 25 years to perfect.

God controls all eventualities. Like it or not, every man will endure what God finally ordains or permits, that is, what *God*, in general, *wills*. Peace of soul, relief from servile fear, and the resulting joy of life is gained by submitting one's will to God's Will. If you will what God Wills *before* some fearful event occurs, then this conformity of your will to His is fact, not just a good intention for the future. After this giving up of your will to His, there is no reason to fear anything but the loss of this submission of will to His Will.

In this way, servile fears are conquered, even though the evils that bring them about do not disappear. But we remember that God knows all things. He is all good, all merciful, all forgiving to the repentant. He is almighty. He is our beginning and our end. He will, therefore, take care of us perfectly, if we submit our will to His, if we allow ourselves to be His instrument. This confidence produces the courage that faces fearful eventualities with resolve, daring or resignation, as the case calls for. Here is peace and security at last. It does not escape fearsome evils; it rises above them and conquers them with their opposite, *confidence in God*.

The peace and confidence that results from this total surrender allows you to walk to your death in an arena of "hungry lions," as the early martyrs actually did. It has allowed men to walk into battle without servile fear. Fear of an evil is normal. But servile fear is inordinate to fear. It allows this emotion to control our reason, so that we become a servant of the emotions, of fear, which is the tool of the devil.

Most people do not achieve total surrender of their will to God's, and they suffer from fear and other passions to that degree. The less our will is tuned to accept whatever God's ultimate goodness allows, the more terror or anxiety disturbs us, for the mere possibilities for evil are infinite. We either trust that Benevolent, Intelligent Goodness (God) is in control, or we live in constant fear of what *could* happen. Pure Evil is pure potentiality, pure possibility, and in dwelling upon the possibility of evil, fear is born. But, on the other hand, God is Pure Act, the opposite of pure potentiality. He is the source actualizing and ordering all potentialities. Behind this actualization is intelligence, goodness, reason, order and, therefore, hope for temporal and eternal happiness.

"So you're saying, Father, that it is unreasonable not to accept beforehand God's Will, because it will be so regardless of our disposition to it?"

Yes. But also, positively, our endurance of His Will will be so much sweeter, in good

times or bad, if we conform to it willingly in advance. So there is a very desirable

incentive to surrender your will in those matters beyond your control or your duty to act. It is the imponderables, the unknowables and uncertainties that worry us, because they are beyond our area of control or responsibility. Such is God's business. Let *Him* conduct *His* business. We can't or we shouldn't. For example, we wouldn't really *want* to know what was going to happen to us in the future. It would ruin our natural responses. It would produce great fear or complacency or laziness.

But when we see an approaching evil, and we will what God Wills, we should also feel free to pray to God for the cessation of that evil and then place our *Hope* in Him that He will do what is good for our salvation. Only if we need to suffer this evil will He permit it. Phillip, are you a little concerned about something right now?

"Well ..."

"Anything?"

"I thought last night that I did not tell Daniel to lead the cattle to a new pasture about this time. For the cows need new grass for better milk, since the newborn calves have dropped by now.

A fine example of a normal fear. Now, try this experiment: Relax your mind a bit.

"Okay."

"Since there is nothing more you can do to solve this problem, can you trust God enough to give up this concern to Him, since He is capable of seeing to the matter and taking responsibility? Are you willing to suffer the consequences of your forgetfulness that He ordains?"

"Yes."

Are you willing to make this kind of surrender a habit of mind? And do you think it would be good to do so?"

"Yes."

Are you willing to suffer all good or evil, joy or sadness that God wishes you to?"

Phillip thought for some minutes. "Yes, I am, Father. I have no better or more reasonable choice."

"Maintain this good attitude by way of a daily re-affirmation and you will see more peace come into your life from this day on than you can now imagine. And this peace will flow through your whole spirit, relaxing your mind and body.

Now, let us continue. Nothing can fully prepare a man for war, Son. It is a great evil which God allows only out of the necessity of bringing us back to eternal truths and the eternal reality they are based on. I cannot explain how troubled I was in mind and heart preparing for war against at least some of my own countrymen. This paradox tries the heart of a patriot to a white hot intensity, as those in the First Revolutionary War and the Civil War of

1860 knew; for it is a love of his people that motivates the patriot to begin with. A chipmunk scurried atop the woodpile and chattered at us for a few seconds. Then, with a twitch of his bushy tail, it disappeared.

On New Year's Eve the four boys and I spent the day dressing, packing and arming for the campaign, Phillip. That night we found a camp near a stream several miles from the house and stored some gear. We established for display on the back porch some emergency message flags and flashing light signals in case there arose a need for help at home or to give us a warning that the house was under surveillance. At midnight we prayed most fervently for God's protection, help and encouragement.

The next day we drove to Sunday Mass, somberly. The little ones were crying softly. Outside in the parking lot I spoke to all my family: "We have asked God to help us. He will not fail us then. Would a father give his son a scorpion if he asked for an egg? Much less will our Heavenly Father give us evil if we ask for good. I say to you this, then: keep praying constantly in every difficulty and between difficulties. Thank Almighty God for all He has given and then ask for all that we need. Pray constantly the prayer of Faith -- Trust in Him, who is All-Good, Almighty, All-Wise.

That morning, Phillip, we walked into church and took our places. When the priest entered, he immediately walked to the pulpit and began speaking without ceremony. "After my homily, the bread and wine, which have already been Consecrated, will be distributed following a brief prayer service. This is by order of the new Bishop, who has received a request from the Congregation for the English Liturgy in Rome that all Masses be suspended for the safety of priests, many of whom have been killed at the altar all over the world. The same is predicted in this country in the near future. Even though I have no fear for myself, I must obey the Bishop's order. Until we let you know otherwise, there will be no Masses, only Communion services. I will say a few Masses in private each month in order to consecrate large quantities of hosts, which will *not* be kept in the church tabernacle, in order to guard against possible theft and desecration. You know only too well the evil elements at large these days that want to destabilize our government. Also, in the future, I have been ordered not to be present on Sunday, again, in order to protect me from assassination. Eucharistic ministers will handle everything. For Confessions you will write down your sins, initial it and send it in a sealed envelope to the rectory. The priest will read these once a week and give a general absolution. We priests will soon go on a *long* retreat. In hiding we will be safe so that when the dust settles we can be back amongst you in one piece. Believe me, I don't like this. But I must obey. We will pray for you all."

He went on to urge the people to keep the peace by turning in their firearms in the coming dragnet. "Trust in God" he kept repeating. And each time I would silently scream, "But it's not *God* you're trusting in, it's *man*!" If you trusted in God you would say keep your

arms, because trusting in God is always doing what's right, not what's wrong. God did not ask us to give up our second Amendment rights, which were spelled out in our Nation's constituting document to protect all of our other inalienable, God-given rights.

As our family approached for Communion, I knelt down to receive. The priest bent over and whispered, "The new Bishop asked that you not receive kneeling, David."

I opened my eyes and looked straight into his and whispered, "Father, God *told* me to *only* receive Communion kneeling. Whom should I obey? God or man?" I closed my eyes, opened my mouth and remained ... in silence, until I felt the Host on my tongue.

Just before the service ended we left, and I charged Paul and Timothy to station themselves out the back doors and preach to the people our prearranged message, while the girls passed out the Akita Message and our tabloid, *Warnings from Heaven*. "Tell them that trusting in God means protecting our land by retaining the freedoms He gave us, including the freedom to bear the arms to protect those freedoms as guaranteed in law by the Second Amendment to the Constitution. Tell them *not* to trust in man, especially those using godless foreign armies for manpower. Tell them *not* to surrender arms now, that such an action would be national suicide!"

I rushed for the front door. Outside I raised my voice high. "Everyone! Listen! There is an emergency Message." I shouted, "Gather round!" Several times I said this, motioning. Most did not approach, but, as I had hoped, they did not leave.

"God gave us this land and our Constitutional Government. Do not listen to *anyone* telling you to forsake that Constitution! It is our only bond of unity now. The Second Amendment to the Constitution gives us the RIGHT!! to bear the Arms that will defend us from Tyranny. Hide your weapons and be ready to bear them soon in self-defense of our Nation!" Some loudly scoffed. I continued until the children had done their work of passing out the tabloids. Some I could see speaking to others in approval. Finally I shouted at the top of my voice. "When they have our guns, we are theirs! Stand before your God! like a *man* who owes *Him first allegiance*... It's our only Hope!!!"

"Dave, Father is very upset with you."

"It doesn't matter, Ruth. Where is he?"

"In the sanctuary. Don't ...!"

I pushed past her and hurried into the church, calling back, "Get in the car!" I called out as the priest was about to enter his sacristy "Father, please, let me ..."

"You've stepped over the line, Petri!" he shouted.

I stopped five feet from him. "Father, your life is in grave danger!!"

"What?!"

"They plan to kill you and all the priests when you enter the retreat you spoke of, the hideaway! I know, Father. I have heard. Please believe me!"

"What? Are you joking? The FBI themselves are forming the escort. They'll be there all the time."

"That's precisely the danger, Father."

"What!? Petri, you're crazy! Crazy!!"

"Don't you understand, Father? The Enemy has infiltrated our Government and its agencies. They want to destroy the Church. How better than to kill all the priests. The Messages have told ..."

"To Hell with those messages! They're from Beelzebub!" His raging voice ended in bitter hatred. It was as if the words had been spit into my face.

I stopped, stunned. He glared at me, opened mouthed ... speechless! He pointed me to the exit. I spoke quickly. "Heaven spoke well of you priests-- vain, blind, leading your sheep to the slaughter. And now, unlike the Good Shepherd, you *are abandoning them* in their time of greatest need." I spun on my heels and marched out, rigid with anger. At the door, I turned around, pointed at him, where he still stood between the altar and the sacristy. I spoke loudly, in a trembling voice: "You priests were all warned!! By Jesus and Mary. And you ignorantly label them and their words as diabolical!!? Will you all take responsibility for stopping your ears and for blasphemy!!? What price are you willing to pay?! Can't you see your blind pride is ruling your reason, and ruining your spiritual vision!" My voice had settled down. "Do you think you will have another warning, Father?"

I stumbled out the door, weeping, without tears. Phillip, your two oldest brothers suddenly grabbed me by the arms and rushed me to the car. I could hear police sirens in the distance. We raced up the mountain. The boys and I grabbed our gear and headed out in two Jeeps, driving to my parent's house, from there I called home and told Ruth to keep us posted at this number if she was contacted by the authorities. My mother was so

afraid, Phillip. I told her as little as possible but she could see we were all upset. The five of us huddled up downstairs. I knelt down and began to pray. "Dear God, see your sons here at your feet. We await your instructions, Lord. Guide your servants in the time that has arrived. Speak to us, Lord." We knelt for some time, each of us deep in silent prayer.

"Boys, we have done nothing to cause our arrest. The priest probably won't file a complaint. But the police will want to talk with me. They will soon be at the house. I will talk to them -- over the phone. But never again will I place myself in their custody. For considering what our authorities are allowing, they no longer serve our Nation, our State, or our communities as founded and constituted. Therefore, the authorities have lost their authority over me and over every man, woman and child of this nation who maintains allegiance to our Constitution -- for this is our *last* rallying point... because it is *first* in defining our union and our sovereignty, our mandate from God as a separate nation.

I then said to them, "I guess what I have just said is God's answer to our prayer. I am at

peace with this separation. It gives my conscience rest. Take courage. The Lord is with us in these difficult times.

I called Ruth. They were already there. I spoke with the officer, telling him of my strong feelings with the sermon and exactly what had happened. "I broke no law, officer." He was understanding, to a point. The police had probably been briefed weeks ago to expect strong emotions concerning gun confiscation and not to overreact and precipitate incidents.

He ended with, "There won't be a citation given this time, Mr. Petri. But I will place on file a recommendation that your involvement in any future disturbances of the peace should result in arrest."

I turned after hanging up the phone and said, "Give thanks to the Lord, Men."

"Amen," was the immediate chorus.

"Mom, let's have some breakfast. We're starving."

I then picked up the phone and called the community's small newspaper publisher whom I had known for years.

"Hello, William, it's David Petri. Give me a price for sending out a one sheet flyer to the whole county."

"Okay. Well, I've been putting a grocery advertiser together, and I could include it in the center of that."

"Fine! Everyone reads grocery flyers these days."

"You remember the *Christian Patriot* you printed for me in '85? This new flyer will be political too -- an urgent lecture on keeping our Second Amendment rights."

"Oh, boy!"

"Being hidden on the inside of a folded grocery ad will get it through the mail okay."

"They *could* shut me down, Dave."

They haven't made a law against freedom of speech, yet, Will. Tell them you're just the businessman trying to make a buck in hard times. This is our *last chance*! This could swing a lot of guys at the last minute. If everyone knows that all have seen this flyer ... "

"They'll sit back and wait for someone else to act first! I've seen apathy how many times?" There was a long pause ... "Okay. You didn't convince me... but let's do it anyway."

"All right!"

"And you pay the attorney's fees if they come after me."

"It's a deal!"

In three days it was out, Phillip. Will worked day and night, as I did. It proved to be a real call to arms, as we found out much later. A great many people took heart at seeing it, even those who complied with confiscation.

"Let's look at that flyer, Phillip. My satchel." I pulled out a severely yellowed newsprint. The huge headline read: "STAND BY YOUR ARMS, AMERICANS. THE LAW

IS ON OUR SIDE." Here is the Second Amendment, quoted and explained thoroughly, Phillip. Here, the propaganda and lies of the establishment are disputed in clear, bold terms. On the left of the headline I pictured this soldier of the First Revolutionary War, rifle in hand. On the right, I painstakingly drew this resemblance to that same patriot in today's dress: jeans, flannel shirt and hunting rifle. In between them is this banner with the words: "GIVE ME LIBERTY OR GIVE ME DEATH." And the bold letters on the bottom of both pages: **"Any power, foreign or domestic which attempts to confiscate the arms of law abiding American citizens has declared war on the people, thus authorizing the instant response of the United States Militia, formed by individual initiative, in just self-defense of our lawful Government, the personal liberty it grants us, and the inalienable rights given us by God Himself."**

The day it came out, I gathered with my sons. "Men, the time has arrived. The resistance must be touched off like the fuse of a cannon! We can't sit here and rest in the hope others will resist to the point of arms. What if they don't? What if they do? We must be responsible for *our* actions! We are at war. I have a plan. Let us rouse the people one last time through the media for gun confiscation will begin tomorrow.

"Another flyer?"

No, forceful entries into radio stations and television stations during the local evening news, which everyone is listening to these days. This would gain us a few minutes of live broadcast time, in which we could read a declaration of war against those conducting the invasion and confiscation of arms. I will prepare an explosive statement. Let's discuss details. As I talked, Phillip, I saw "cold feet" mirrored in the eyes of your brothers, and I felt "butterflies" in my own belly.

"Should we break the law, Father?" John asked.

"Consider this, John. Our cowardly representatives have surrendered our national sovereignty to a foreign power, having no mandate or right to do so. Authority to govern us in the name of the United States Government exists, but it is no longer theirs. So, we don't even break the letter of the law in what we do, but we certainly abide by its spirit in fighting the enemies of our Nation. It is a principle of our Constitution that authority and powers not delegated or exercised by the Government *return to and reside in the people from whence that authority originated*. We are that people. If our elected and appointed governors fail, their authority automatically reverts to us, the people who love and honor the Nation as it was *originally* constituted and established."

"But they say the will of the majority wants a new constitution."

"Then they will have to go through the proper steps to legally change the Constitution, John. And they have *not* done that."

"This Bulletin, this forceful announcement over the airwaves will be a formal

declaration of war by the Wyoming branch of the United State Militia. The announcement should take no more than five minutes. If fired upon, we will return fire. We will resist capture to the point of death. Before leaving the station, we will have the option of damaging the studio equipment with gunfire. We have a duty to destroy this equipment, as a weapon of the enemy, but I need to think more about whether the time is ripe." I noticed Paul's complexion was bloodless white. "What is it, Paul?"

"Dad, I don't know if I can do this. I have not hatred of any man."

There was silence for a while. "We do not hate anyone, and I do not advise it, ever. We hate the evil taking place, not the evil doer. We must do what is right and charitable for all, and that may involve overcoming the resistance of an enemy by physical force."

"That's what they say they're doing, Dad, the right thing."

"Just because we say the same thing does not mean we *do* the same thing by what we refer to with these words, Son. The important thing is the truth of what is said, not just the fact that it is said. The suggestion that there is no reason for war because there are just differences of opinions on both sides is the lie that led this nation to its present plight and the lie that will keep its good citizens from fighting for the truth with pen or sword or anything else. Two rights or two truths never contradict each other beyond the mere appearance of a paradox. When you hear that sarcastic, hypocritical voice feeding you arguments to the contrary, know that it is the chief weapon of the enemy being fired at you. Their lies, dripping wet with human respect, have and will take more Americans from the battlefield than all their physical weapons ever could."

For two days we rehearsed our mission and surveyed the targeted stations. It was decided to wear bandanas to conceal our identity. Escape would be on a narrow country road leading into the mountains.

"Men, our final rehearsal is tomorrow morning. Keep these words ready upon your lips at all times: "The just war is honorable, but slavery by way of cowardice is dishonorable."

"And also, "My Jesus, My Confidence."

"Thank you, John."

At 5:21 p.m. on Friday night Joe and I walked into the television broadcast room with rifles in present arms position. I announced in a stern, loud voice: "There is an emergency message that *must* be delivered." And more softly to the studio personnel, "Quickly take a place in that corner." I took the microphone and stood before the television camera as Joe stood to my side and two steps in front, with a determined, sentry's countenance. The natural appeal of his youthful patriotism shining through probably moved the public more than my speech:

**"The time has come to announce that because the Constitution of the United States, the Second Amendment of which concerns the right of citizens to bear arms, has been infringed by foreign or traitorous agents pretending to act in the name of our elected government, while allied with and aided by the foreign powers whom they have chosen to serve, we of the United States Militia, composed of all true patriots and loyal U.S. citizens, declare War on the offending persons and powers.**



**Such parties have lost all rightful authority due to their crime of Treason, and they are heretofore declared unworthy of any obedience, fit only to be killed or driven from the land of our Fathers -- unless they submit in word and deed to the authority of the people, acting in the spirit of our Constituting principles. We of the United States Militia will punish all crimes against the people and we can rightly expect the support of all citizens, who are not traitors, and that to the best of their ability. The United States Militia demands that all patriots STOP the present disarmament of the people."** Then, Phillip, we both shouted: **"GIVE ME LIBERTY OR GIVE ME DEATH!!!"**

We left quickly. I had decided not to shoot up the station's equipment, because freedom of speech had not yet been formally suspended by the enemy and because, initially, any distasteful or negative feelings on the part of the people should be avoided, in order not to confuse the real issues with the *appearance* of lawlessness and vandalism -- a charge we knew the enemy would make use of to discredit us. Whether this was wise, given the use of the station for subsequent enemy propaganda, I cannot say. At such times of uncertainty, I reasoned, God gives us the freedom to do what seems best. Therefore, such a decision is His Will.

Tim, Paul and John, having completed a similar mission, were soon following us on the narrow paved country road at high speed. When we crested the big hill Joe shouted that four vehicles were in hot pursuit a mile and a half behind their Jeep. I was glad we had opened the barbed wire gate exiting the pavement two hours ago. To my great relief it was still open. Our Jeeps took to the rough dirt road well, but the two low slung patrol cars were soon being tossed and banged about. They soon high centered on the deeply rutted dirt road. We shouted for joy. The other two slower vehicles proved to be Chinese military 4 X 4 units with mounted 30 caliber machine guns. Because we knew the road well and had lighter vehicles, they fell behind. Then, halfway through the valley between Indian and Red Rock Mountain we saw the lights of a helicopter. This I had not foreseen! We doused our lights. "God give me light," I remember praying.

I headed up Red Rock Mountain on an old logging road. We had to slow down to 5 mph at times. Halfway up the mountain the glare of searchlights told us the helicopter must have spotted us in the moonlight. Joe shouted that a half dozen vehicles with flashing red lights were descending Indian Mountain road toward us six miles to the north. My goal was to get into the trees where we could lose the helicopter a little easier. But this was not to be. A 50-caliber machine gun volley raked the road twenty yards in front of us. "Return Fire!!" I yelled, slamming on the brakes and killing the engine. Within thirty seconds five 30-06 rifles were putting lead into the hovering chopper two hundred feet above us.

I remembered thinking, "perhaps this was not what they had expected!" The chopper, a red star on its fuselage, did a 180-degree turn and bolted down slope, trailing smoke. I saw a huge orange ball of flame suddenly appear in the rearview mirrors as I rapped out third gear in four-wheel low. From atop the rim rock we sent a few long shots into the Chinese vehicles, and then easily lost them, driving all night into the mountains and then circling out again 30 miles to the east. Finally, we camped forty miles from the chopper crash site in good cover near the Platte River.

The next morning we boldly drove into town with the 8 a.m. traffic and gassed up. We wore brown duck work clothes and baseball caps. I called home. William, the

publisher, had called and said the authorities *were* questioning him about the flyer, asking him *who* had submitted it. He told them.

Ruth then asked if we had heard about the goings on last night. I said, truthfully, that we hadn't heard anything but were thinking about going fishing and that I wanted her to meet me at Mom and Dad's with some gear, my cell phone and six days worth of food. We returned to our hideout down by the river, posted a rotating sentry and slept for 12 hours.

Phillip, Mission #2 began three days later. I said, "Boys, I know you don't want to fight this war alone. So, we must arouse the hope of effective resistance among any would be Militia out there who are hanging back. I put the emphasis in our radio and TV broadcast on one objective, resisting gun confiscation. *We* must give the first example. This is where *the rubber meets the road*. We fight here or forever lose the initiative and the edge of the sword necessary for cutting out the cancer. The people need their weapons if they are ever to fight. It's that simple!

"How can five people attack the 25-50 men, which is what I hear they have on each confiscation task force? And they have at least three operations going on all the time." Timothy, the practical one, was somewhat angry with me.

That's what we have to talk about, Tim. Cool down. For one thing, their slow pace in using only three collection teams right now is being done in order not to alarm the people, and to let the people think and worry themselves out of resisting confiscation. But when we light the fuse of resistance, their pace will increase dramatically. That's my guess. Make yourselves comfortable."

Everyone found a dry, sunny spot in the circle of tall sagebrush where we sat around our little fire. It had warmed to around 38 degrees. "Let's go through some general rules of strategy.

- 1) They will group. We will not, unless safe from attack.
- 2) They are on the inside, surrounded, if possible, but we are never surrounded. Retreat is always our option.
- 3) They defend. We harass them in reaching their objectives. We stop them, retreat, continue to harass, or disappear; our choice.
- 4) When they finally attack in force, we're gone.
- 5) We fight amongst the people, always demanding or seeking their involvement and/or support.
- 6) We go where the enemy goes. We follow them. We stop or frustrate their work and their leisure.
- 7) We protect our people and their necessities.

8) We threaten the enemy troop's security, the lives and comfort of their leaders.

9) We take weapons and immediately use them or hide them for later recruits or for our improved firepower.

10) We never give up. We die fighting.

11) The people will give us transportation, medical care, food, arms, or we have the right to take them. They are Americans or anti-Americans, friends or enemies. From either we have the right to obtain support.

"Anything else?"

"Let's get to the details, Dad. Let's say 35 men are going door to door, two houses at a time, with two armed personnel carriers standing by. And with resistance, they will add more troops and a tank or two."

"Well, here's my initial plan. One driver, four snipers. The driver can shoot too. We are using scopes at 150-200 yards. We take out some troops in a first volley. Pick off what more we can see. Damage some vehicle tires, maybe. We will be out of their range of accuracy. When I blow my whistle, we scam, the back tailgate up, all windows down. If they are hot on our trail, we stop. Let'em have it in the driver's windshield. They crash or stop. We move on. Our main job is to let the whole town know there is resistance.

"Dad?"

"What John?"

We need a newspaper. Just one 8 1/2 X 11 pager, secretly posted around town, say by the older girls. Mom drives. It tells every week the news of the Militia's exploits and other vital news.

"They'll pull them down," Tim objected.

"Officials would, but not the people. They'd read them and pass all the news on by the grapevine. We could post them in different locations each time. Also one put in several doors on a block here and there and everywhere would start the word rolling. And we could do telephone reports. It can be done."

"John has an excellent idea here. True, they will oppose our every move, but we will try to gain something. Let me call home for news and get John's newspaper idea going."

When I called, the military police had just left the house after questioning Ruth about our whereabouts and demanding any guns. She told them I was fishing and planned to be back in a week. She said we didn't have any guns in the house. They searched the house and left. She was very frightened. I told her to get paper and copier access set up. We'd be home tonight.

I took sentry duty from 3 a.m. to 5 a.m. that night. Ruth and I slept in each other's arms. Sad smiles, tears, kisses, and hugs all blended. All punctuated by worry, fear and constant supplication for God's mercy and help. I told her the family's prayers were keeping us safe. I

declined to say what we were doing in case they made her take a lie detector test.

The next day inside the closed garage of a friend, we took three 15 gallon gas barrels and built a wooden frame for them in the back of a Jeep. Two barrels were filled with gasoline for extra fuel and one with motor oil cut with a gallon of gasoline so that we could release an oil slick on the road while being pursued. A perforated hose from that barrel ran the width of the car. A shut-off valve controlled the release of the oil. All barrels were surrounded by two-foot high, one-inch thick steel plates. This crude device proved to be of great service, saving our lives a dozen times. A St. Benedict's medal was fixed in each Jeep. All of us had worn them for many years, as well as the Brown Scapular, the Rosary, a Bayside Rose petal and other medals.

Ruth had made a demand at breakfast that the War Report Flyer would also contain short religious prayers and devotions and encouraging quotations from the Psalms, etc. in order to arm the people spiritually. It seemed like a good idea, and it was

much more palatable to her woman's sensibilities too. "We'll add something new to each issue," she said.

Our first gun confiscation skirmish went our way. After a week we repainted both Jeeps another color in the garage after midnight, also patching the nine bullet holes. We made at least one attack every two days.

After mission #4, Phillip, we heard the wonderful news that someone had copied our actions!

We began visiting neighborhoods which had not yet been subjected to confiscation. In the late evening, we visited two houses at a time and only two houses per block. We urged resistance and where there was no positive commitment to do so, we asked for all guns and ammo.

The first "War Report" was posted around town. Some were mailed. Some put in doors, one thousand in all.

In our next move we ambushed two Red Chinese jeeps, killed all occupants and took the vehicles and bodies to a location where the engines were destroyed and all weapons, gas, clothes, etc. were taken. The two grenade launchers and two machine guns captured were used in every attack from then on with good effect. From the first we had decided to try and make all casualties Red Chinese soldiers, sparing our countrymen if at all possible. Our actual military effect was so small that the public relations value of what we did was the far greater concern. Our acts did, I believe, cause fear in the Chinese soldiers; for they saw in us the tip of an iceberg of potential resistance to their presence among the populace, leaving their imagination to picture how totally vulnerable they would be if a population like this changed its mind and rose up as a whole to expel them.

But our greatest enemy was always the unprincipled neutrality, cowardice and

selfishness of our own people. They would rather hear no evil, see no evil, think no evil and cover their own tail. But after one month we estimated one dozen separate Militia units were at work. Our captured weapons made us much more formidable in ambushes. We had gained some respect. They knew we were willing to fight. With a 30-caliber machine gun in the back of a jeep, we could surprise-attack a 3-7 vehicle convoy with devastating effect. And after causing eight wrecks with our oil slicker, we were evidently getting a reputation for being very dangerous to follow, especially since ambushes could be set up on an instant by simply turning a corner and stopping. In the aftermath of these skirmishes, we gathered many weapons and sometimes a vehicle to transport them. We parked these in preset hiding places for unloading and stripping or for later use.

I knew that better Militia communications and organization had to be established. So we switched our activities for a week to tracking down Militia units engaged in combat. One day, by staking out five hilltop listening/observer stations around town, we determined the position of other Militia teams at work. A bullhorn was used to contact a Militia team member from a safe distance, so that a message could be delivered explaining the need for organization. Then a hand delivered message with a cell phone number and e-mail address was given to that person, along with instructions to deliver it to their top leader soon. The message advised all commanders receiving the message to pass it on to militia groups independent of their own.

Within two days I figured 75% of the units formed to date had contacted me. All were asked to call regularly. I gave the same message to all who called, identifying myself only as David. I explained our general rules for engagement and military

objectives. Targets were denominated, such as barracks, military headquarters, radio and TV stations and towers and any printing presses publishing enemy propaganda. I called for two mobil short wave radios and a phone chain to be set up. I said I would try to set up a mobil coded signal light operating every three nights between 4:30-5 a.m. somewhere on the face of the mountain in case all other sources of communication were shut down. I had them write down a short form of the code with common words or ideas being represented by two to five light beam pulses, and two phone numbers to contact were coded. For example, two long and two short flashes would mean to call a certain telephone number for the latest bulletin. This proved to be the best communications tool of all in the long run. Even when helicopter gunships had orders to fire on any and all lights flashing on the mountain, we just responded by having a heavily armed reception party for it, or by controlling the light by remote controls to protect the operator.

In the first meeting of myself and the city's Militia, the boys and I met the independent Militia commanders one night in a secluded spot outside town. We talked all night long, finalizing a communication system and making detailed plans for attacking larger enemy

targets. Since we had almost stalled the gun confiscation program before it had contacted more than 30% of the population, we agreed that we had come close to winning the first battle. I expressed my concern that they would retaliate to our success by cutting off the public food, water, and electric power supplies as a collective punishment to force people to "voluntarily" bring their weapons to well fortified depots. We decided to attack these depots, no matter how well fortified, or better yet, to attack their own living quarters before they tried such a confiscation maneuver.

I was elected commanding general with my sons as colonels and liaison officers coordinating four "divisions". The twenty commandos were given the captains' rank and were divided into four groups of five. We were simply referred to thereafter as The Militia. All commandos or captains were in immediate command of their own troops.

I asked each one to organize their company of men into squads or platoons and then pass on the contents of our present meeting to all. I gave them for distribution twenty copies of most of what we had covered that night in the way of general instructions, etc. I also offered to all a Catholic devotions packet, including the apologetics necessary for conversion to the true Faith. I stressed the spiritual nature of this warfare we were in and expressed my belief that God would protect and guide those who sincerely sought Him. I preached against the concept of pluralism, which had replaced a search for the truth, in favor of acknowledging all opinions as equal, thus producing endless division and confusion. The positive response to this frank discussion of the True Church and the one Faith was amazing. Conversions followed in the months ahead.

From then on we included all Captains in our daily family prayers, and also in the prayers of the tremendous interdenominational prayer chain that my wife had recently established by contacting women over the last month. We told the Captains that night before leaving that they would be in the spotlight of these prayers, not by name, but as "men in great need of spiritual support for the benefit of all patriots." I assigned much of the success of our Wyoming Militia later to the fraternal Christian spirit that animated and flowed out of that meeting and to our combined efforts thenceforward. It was truly wonderful to finally talk to those who were fighting with us. A great deal of comfort and mutual respect and admiration were present that night, Phillip. I knew then that the

twenty-five men in that moonlit circle were the core of a truly patriotic, God-fearing army.

Finally, as dawn arrived on that same night, I suggested plans for our first major assault. We would attack the Chinese barracks in two weeks at 2 a.m. At least two machine guns would rake each barracks from outside the compound as our soldiers within damaged as many vehicles' tires, headlights, carburetors, windshield, ignitions, and gas tanks as possible.

"How many militia soldiers did you have, total, Father?"

We figured only 120 at that time, Phillip, barely enough to do as I suggested, if all were

daring, courageous, and sufficiently armed with a precise, spring-loaded plan.

On the night of that attack we had loaded a huge bulldozer onto a semi truck trailer. It crashed the main entrance, just as all sentry posts came under heavy fire from long-range snipers. Vehicles with machine guns and militia lined up outside each barrack pouring heavy fire into them. Ten other vehicles brought in vehicle wreckers and saboteurs who would also try to penetrate the ammo dump and other targets as a grand finale. I had scheduled the attack to last only 15-20 minutes, depending on the ability of the enemy to effectively respond.

The bulldozer blade was used to ruin the track mechanisms of each armored vehicle and tank. A simultaneous, long-range grenade and rifle assault was aimed at the fifteen helicopter gunships stationed at the compound.

One week later another coordinated attack destroyed all mass media centers in town, which had been formerly heavily guarded by the enemy. The semi-truck and bulldozer combination came into play in these operations, too. We had made the cab and engine of each bulletproof. In one powerful lunge the monster bulldozer could penetrate the walls of the station to destroy the electronic control room.

The tube was finally out! The great Communistic Propaganda Machine and Patriot Pacifier was down, and we were determined to keep it there. This was the night we also destroyed the printing press of the major newspaper in the state printing enemy propaganda.

The reputation of the enemy and their traitorous hosts had been dealt a severe humiliation. Our short wave radios and internet operators worked overtime to broadcast these victories as far and wide as possible, in order to encourage emulation.

A week later, as I saw enemy troops evacuating Jasper, I suspected that the city had been targeted for total destruction by bombing. They had lost 450 troops and 90% of their equipment had been severely damaged.

Since the enemy's occupation of the city was now ineffectual, and they had suffered a disgrace, they could not afford this example of daring resistance to go unpunished. I was almost sure, Phillip, that they would make an example of our heroism by razing the city. The sudden exodus of their troops helped confirm my suspicion. I ordered the Militia units to drive to the airport and take all planes we could find pilots and rural airstrips for. These planes and their fuel trucks were camouflaged and hidden 30-50 miles out of town.

We worked nonstop to organize each neighborhood community into emergency evacuation units. Three days after Chinese troops began to exit the city, our exodus began, barely in time to avoid disaster, as it turned out. Of course, the Militia was immediately enlarged by a factor of 50. We had 6000 soldiers now. Many confiscated

weapons had been recaptured from armories. Each family was told to bring all arms, food and water, camp gear and other necessities, plus one or two vehicles. Every group of 5,000 people was sent to ten different wooded areas within thirty to forty miles of the city. It is true

that many did not leave the city because they believed the enemy would not attack the city as I predicted, but these were, in almost every case, those who had trusted the enemy, believed in their authority and served them actively or passively. Many of these learned the truth too late and were destroyed, but the majority of those who did escape death joined the resistance later.

At the ten camps all gear was unloaded and the vehicles were driven to locations at least five miles away and in every direction possible. The idea was to separate vehicles from people since they were impossible to hide from aerial reconnaissance and therefore from subsequent bombing by enemy aircraft. Scattering everyone would make difficult an immediately effective bombing campaign. This was all we could do to protect ourselves on such short notice. Within each encampment, smaller, camouflaged camps of one hundred families each were ordered at least 500 yards apart. Sentries were posted.

The city was destroyed on April 9, using conventional ordinance dropped by sixteen B-52 bombers, all flown by U.S. pilots who served the Communists under the UN flag.

Many of the people in my camp who could see the city cried aloud as they heard the bombs and saw the huge balls of flame and the plumes of smoke. Some had friends or relatives who had chosen to stay.

I expected the enemy to return after initial aerial reconnaissance almost immediately to mop up what was left of the militia and the population. When they found so few of either the living or the dead, they would come looking for us. The critical decision coming up was how to protect the people from that attack. For three hours my sons and I consulted with the Lord, whom we referred to in the Militia as "The Supreme Commander in Chief." That night we met with all of the rank of captain under a huge ponderosa pine, just as my sons and I had months ago.

I spoke: "We are in an extremely desperate situation. The people are short on supplies, and they are extremely vulnerable to an enemy force that simply intends to murder them all with bombs, helicopter gunships, armored vehicles and well armed troops. What are our options?"

"We can break the people into groups and send them fanning out, hunting off the land and building hidden communities," said Paul.

"We could see what's left of the city, rebuild it, and keep fighting."

"John, I'm afraid the enemy -- you can see how much they care about the lives of the people -- would kill everyone outright. They have to make an example of this community's resistance."

"We could all go and dig caves and build hideouts and fight right where we are," Joe said.

"Tim?"

"I don't know. We could do all these things, but how is the war going to continue. We haven't won yet. We have just won a battle and lost everything but our lives."

"And our sacred honor as Americans," I said. "Material things don't count for much anymore. The whole world will need rebuilding when this is over. Here is my idea. We need to aid other cities in the State in repelling the invaders. In turn, the patriots



in those cities can aid us in our plight, supplying food, shelter, etc. Let us send our residents then to the other cities of the state in numbers proportionate to that city's population. One third of the militia will stay with these families as they travel overland in order to protect and guide them. Another third will form an advance army to go to those distant cities by the fastest means possible in order to organize that city's militia and prepare for the coming refugees. They will find homes of fellow patriots there to take in the families in migration who will show up later. But the last third of our militia will accompany another portion of our city's population who will build hideouts in the mountainous country in a 50 mile radius around Jasper; for soon the enemy will give up our city which they destroyed and leave it to us for reoccupation, and these families can then begin to resettle it for themselves and for the others who are dispersed, but who may return some day. Tradesmen capable of rebuilding necessary facilities should be included in this third army group.

We should present these plans to the people in the next few days. If there are those who wish to go their own way, let them go. God may have other plans for them; or they may not be of a good spirit, and we don't want them among us anyway, in that case. Many potential traitors may still be among us. Let all know that those who separate from us are on their own from then on, and they should not expect further support from us or communication with us. Separate these from the rest of the people first and send them away from the assembly before you speak of our plans.

At that moment a woman walked up to us and asked for David. She wanted to know if I knew where a priest could be found. I looked at the boys.

"Fr. Keogh is here in our camp. The other priests have never returned since they left two months ago on their retreat." Fr. Keogh had refused to go, Phillip, and had, in fact, gone into hiding to keep from being taken forcibly.

When Fr. Keogh came, I asked him to hear confessions in each of the emergency communities within the next weeks, choosing ten Catholic militia members to assist and transport him. He agreed. I asked that the word be given throughout our camp that there would be a 5 p.m. Mass at this spot. Confessions would start at 1 p.m. Then I asked Father if he would act as a traveling missionary for Wyoming in the future, with twenty militia of his own choice to accompany him, preferably with some single young men interested in religious vocations who could assist him in ministering to the people. He immediately agreed. Then to my surprise he chose Paul, whom he had known before, as his first assistant. Paul, who had long aspired to the priesthood, was delighted.

I chose John to take charge of the pilgrims and militia in the NW quarter of the state; Joe, the NE, Tim, the SW, and myself, Jasper and the SE quarter where Cayenne, the biggest city, was located. Alone on the prairie flatlands, with its giant airbase next door, Cayenne would present the greatest military challenge. But I decided to save it for the last and aid the other three quadrants as needed first. I advised all three to choose Captains and organize the great number of new "recruits" into companies ASAP, and plan to begin their migrations the day after tomorrow. Our eleven year old, Michael, was enlisted as my camp aide. Phillip, you inherited the 4-10 shotgun and the job of protecting your mother and sisters in my absence.

"I remember those were very hard times, Father. We were often hungry. And I was not

always a very good hunter. I remember the little cabin you helped us build in the trees."

During the Holy Tridentine Mass that day we all noticed the most spectacular and ominous sunset. I felt an overpowering sense of gloom, as if a terrible judgement was to be rendered. As the priest raised the chalice against the backdrop of that fearful sunset, lighting struck all around and it thundered overhead. I felt an interior presentiment at that moment that the Warning was near. After Mass I announced to all the nature of the Warning and asked them to spread the word that very night to be prepared tomorrow morning with a repentant heart. "Do not look at the sunrise," I said, repeating the caution of Mary at Bayside.

Then I explained the Miracle that prophecies had indicated would follow soon after the Warning. It was said by Heaven that the Miracle would take place over Garabandal, Spain at 8:30 in the evening of a Thursday between the 9th and the 16th day of the months of March, April, or May and that it will be on the feast of a martyr of the Eucharist. I said, "Since the Miracle is to closely follow upon the Warning, let us look in our missal to see whose feast day it is this Thursday, the 13<sup>th</sup> of April I read: 'St. Hermenegild, martyr. He was the son of the Arian King of the Visigoths in Spain. He was put to death for refusing to receive Holy Communion from an heretical bishop in 586 AD.'" Surely, this was a martyr of the Eucharist, the 13th day of April is a Thursday between the 9th and 16th days of the month. Since the Warning must precede this Miracle, we have only two days left if the Miracle is the 13th. Tomorrow, April 11, I read was "the feast of St. Leo the Great who turned back Attila the Hun before the gates of the Holy City by his eloquence; he defended Papal Primacy and he enriched literature with his profound discourses. He died in 461." I closed the missal.

There was silence for several minutes. I climbed upon a tree stump. "If I am correct, Pope John Paul II is fleeing or has fled Rome and the Red Revolution threatens Rome as Attila the Hun did. Communism, the Red Dragon is at the gates of the Holy City. What more fitting date for the Warning than the Feast of Pope Leo the Great then. Is it not time for this Enemy of all mankind to be stopped in his tracks by God's Warning -- that is, by the Eloquence of an angry God giving fair Warning that the time for man to continue to offend God has come to an end." I then read to the people of the Warning. I asked the militia leaders to listen well for they would have to pass the word on to the other emergency communities they would soon be with.

AT FATIMA, PORTUGAL—1917: Jacinto Marto prophesied to Mother Godhino before she died: "It will seem as though it were already the end of the world. In this *cataclysm* everything will be separated from the sky – which will turn as white as snow."

AT GARABANDAL, SPAIN: At various times from 1961 to 1965, Our Lady explained to Conchita Gonzales: "The WARNING will be a correction of the conscience of the world. ... The WARNING will be like a revelation of our sins, and it will be seen and experienced equally by believers and non-believers

and people of any religion whatsoever. ... Dying is preferable to a mere five minutes of what is awaiting us. ... It will be like fire. It will not burn our flesh, but we shall feel it with our body and in our soul! ALL NATIONS, EVERYONE – WILL FEEL IT. No one will be exempt."

ON APRIL 21, 1973 OUR LADY LET VERONICA SEE AND EXPERIENCE: "It is as though everything exploded in the sky – the flash! It is very hot, very warm. It feels like a burning. Now – the sky is very White ... colors: blues, purples, it's like a huge explosion. NOW – this VOICE, the VOICE, the VOICE, Our Lady says it is a voice within you: 'YOUR WARNING BEFORE THE CHASTISEMENT'

## 254

ON JUNE 8, 1974 – JACINTA MARTO APPEARED TO VERONICA AND SAID: "It is true that I gave a final message, but I, too, could not give the date – only to warn the world that a great warning would come to mankind. It would be a great cataclysm/warning, and then there would be a great miracle. And after that, If nothing changes and man continues to offend the father, He would have to start this terrible trial, for there will be a great war, and there will be a great, terrible chastisement!

ON APRIL 5, 1975 – OUR LADY WARNED: "Know that a great warning will be sent upon mankind. All who remain in the light of grace will have no fear, they will pass through this great warning without suffering. I cannot promise you that none will die in this great warning. My child, for there will be death."

ON SEPTEMBER 14, 1976, OUR LADY GAVE VERONICA A CLUE: "... I give you one indication in regard to the WARNING that the time is ripe when you see, when you hear, when you feel the revolution in Rome – when you see the Holy Father fleeing, seeking refuge in another land, know the time is ripe..."

ON JUNE 12, 1976 – OUR LADY GAVE SOME VERY IMPORTANT INSTRUCTIONS: "My child, you must pray more, do much penance, for The Warning is coming upon mankind. There will be a tremendous explosion and the sky shall roll back like a scroll. (*Apocalypse 6:14*) This force shall go within the very core of the human. He will understand his offenses to his God. However, this warning will be of short duration, and man shall continue upon Their road to perdition, so hard are the hearts now, My child.

"There will be tremendously high waves roaring and taking with them cities; buildings shall disappear from their moorings; the atmosphere shall spew forth currents of great heat; a darkness of spirit and a darkness of atmosphere shall settle in a deadly quiet upon mankind.

"As the day follows night, so shall this warning follow soon. Beware of the sunrise! Do not look up to the sky, the flash! Beware of the sunrise – Do not look up to the sky, the flash! Close your windows! Draw your shades! Remain inside!! Do not venture outside your door, or you will not return!! PRAY! PROSTRATE YOURSELVES UPON YOUR FLOOR! PRAY WITH ARMS OUTSTRETCHED AND BEG FOR MERCY OF YOUR GOD, THE FATHER! Do not seek to receive your animals into your homes, for the animals of those who have remained of well spirit will be taken care of."

'KEEP BLESSED CANDLES, WATER, BLANKETS, FOOD WITHIN

YOUR HOMES! The candles of those who have remained in the state of grace shall not be extinguished, but the candles in the homes of those who have given themselves to Satan shall not burn!!!"

ON DECEMBER 24, 1973 – OUR LADY SPOKE TO VERONICA ABOUT THE MIRACLE: "The Warning which will be sent upon man must be effective. And in the mercy of the Father, a great spectacle will then be placed in the sky for all to see. However, the agents of Hell will try to prove – disprove the hand of the Father in this Miracle.

"You must cleanse your souls of all sin, mortal and venial. Come to My son in belief. Believe what you'll see at Garabandal, and turn back from Your ways that have been created by Satan. Return to the Father, do penance And atonement, for your Chastisement will soon follow upon the great spectacle. I bless you all, My children, as the Father blesses you with sad heart." *The above message of Our Lady, speaks of "Garabandal." For those who do not have the background on this – Garabandal is a small village in northwestern Spain, where from June 18, 1961 to November 13, 1965, Our Lady appeared to four young, simple little girls. The message was very much like that which is now being given to Veronica. The girls also spoke of the Warning, the Great Miracle which Our Lady said would take place in the*

255

*pinces near their village, and also the Chastisement.*

Conchita (one of the four girls at Garabandal) writes this in her Diary about the Miracle: "The Blessed Virgin has told me the date of the Miracle and what it will consist of. I am suppose to announce it eight days in advance, so that people will come. The Pope will see it from wherever he is, and Padre Pio also. The sick who are present at the miracle will be cured and the sinners will be converted.

There will be no Doubt in the mind of anyone who sees this great miracle which God, Our Lord, will perform through the intercession of the Blessed Virgin. And now as we await this great day of the Miracle, let us See if the world changes and the chastisement is averted." *Conchita is the only one with whom the Blessed Virgin discussed the Miracle. It will coincide with an event in the Church and with the feast of a saint who is a martyr of the Eucharist and it will take place at eight-thirty on a Thursday evening.*

When I finished I asked all present to please pass on what I had said this evening to all those who did not attend Mass. Ask them to read the description of this Warning in Revelations 6:12-17. Father Keogh approached me.

"Yes, Father." I bent down to hear the priest's words better.

"One more thing!" I called to the people, "Father Keogh will camp and at this spot tonight in order to be available to all who still wish to have their confessions heard. And he asks that all candles be collected and brought to him for blessing and distribution to all who will receive them. I stepped down. My legs were shaking. "Thank you, Father."

"Thank you, David." He laid a gentle hand on my shoulder. I remember it being so comforting. I had begun to suffer internally, without realizing it, because the resistance in which I had led the people had resulted in the destruction of our city.

"I think I know what you're going through, David. Paul told me."

"Yes, Father."

"Do you think God is going to blame you for fighting when only He could have inspired and encouraged you to do so in the first place?"

"I hope not." I felt something hot and wet on both cheeks. My vision went blurry. I blinked and two huge teardrops fell.

"General David!" A young 16 year old voice cried urgently.

"He's over here," Paul waved. "We're going Dad."

"Wait Paul."

"General!"

"Yes, Son, speak. Take it easy now."

"Sir, our recon team just radioed that 200 vehicles full of Red Chinese soldiers left Jasper an hour ago heading this way. Captain Mark estimated they would be here by noon tomorrow."

I turned to the priest and asked him to step aside. "Help me, Father, with your prayers and counsel. If I don't tell the people about this advance, and I am wrong about tomorrow morning as the time of the Warning, they won't be prepared to fight. But if I tell them now, and I am right about the Warning, they will be diverted from preparing as they should for the Warning." I crumpled onto the stump, my head hanging like ripe squash.

"David, give yourself the time that the Lord needs to clear your judgement. Never let your emotions take the lead like this. You are exhausted from constant effort, lack of sleep and worry. God has not abandoned you."

After some time, I hiked up a ridge to the north, but only after giving word that both news of the enemy advance *and* of my prediction of the Warning should be broadcast immediately by all possible means to all ten communities. The moon seemed to be slowly turning into a maroon crescent. I knelt down and finally collapsed, praying in the form of a cross on the cold sandstone rimrock. At midnight I awoke. I saw a string of tiny lights at ground level, maybe thirty miles away. I sighed aloud, "Let tomorrow bring what the all-merciful God wills."

The Warning you remember, Phillip? It was something almost indescribable. It was like a Trumpet Blast that shook the whole earth to its core. The sky turned pure white and seemed to roll up. No man could move or speak. One hundred people died that terrible morning in our ten camps. A dreadful darkness breathed upon every soul and we buried our faces deeper into the dirt. Time seemed to stand still. The vision of my past unrepented or insincerely repented sins burned all delusions, all excuses, all dishonesty to a white ash which blew away in the Great Wind of the Father's Thunderous Voice, which seemed to say: "BE YE WARNED LITTLE ONE OF THE EARTH. THE TIME OF MY JUSTICE HAS ARRIVED. OBEY ME

OR FOREVER FEEL MY DIVINE WRATH!" It is far beyond me to convey all that I actually understood, but those words summarize the awesome experience that I and others felt.

Throughout the Warning and for twenty-four hours the candles of the just burned without diminishing, and everywhere one heard fervent prayers and cries of repentance ascending. During the Warning the fright of the little ones had been pitiable, but the fear of the rest of us was an almost palpable substance that twisted countenances into woeful shapes. It was truly a terrible experience, but the degree of terror seemed to correspond with the degree of a person's dishonesty before God; for the Warning was a brief time of perfect, unavoidable honesty. All of good will benefited greatly in the future by means of this white hot flash of honesty, this truth about their personal relationship with God and man.

Afterwards, no one sought the company of others; nor did they eat, drink or speak, except in tearful prayers. The enemy column was never seen or heard from again. I knew we had been saved by God's mercy.

On the 12<sup>th</sup> of April the darkness broke and the extremely thick, dark skies began to clear. A tender, humble charity gleamed in the actions of many, who tended to the comfort of their families and neighbors. Still, few ate food, sipping only a little water. On the 13<sup>th</sup> we all looked with hope to the skies. The air seemed wonderfully fresh, filled with sparkling oxygen. In breathing one seemed to be filled with vigorous life. The sky had never been a more lovely blue, shimmering in a shower of crystalline sunshine. These we later recognized as signs preceding the Miracle, which would occur physically over Garabandal, Spain at 8:30 p.m. on the 13<sup>th</sup>. A luminous cross was left permanently in the sky for all to see until the end of time. But all persons throughout the world felt the spiritual effects of this Miracle, which were the infusion, in receptive souls, of the knowledge of God's Love, Mercy and Providence for all people. For non-Christians the Miracle was a witness of the Divinity of Christ and His Church.

God saw that the need of souls for graces unto conversion was very great, Phillip. And so His remedies were great in response to this need. All people experienced the spiritual effects of Faith, Hope and Charity inasmuch as they had elected to open themselves to grace, so that in those who so chose, a truly miraculous conversion took place. Indeed, following the Miracle a great many people over the entire earth embraced without reservation the Church of Christ or returned to its true Faith.

I remember being so happy I wanted to die in that state of bliss. All that I had suffered in the Warning, all the repentance I had gained, seemed to be transformed at the Miracle into a chalice that was being filled by the miraculous wine of God's own life.

Perhaps these words of Jesus from Scripture spoke of these two great events, Phillip. First the Warning: *"And immediately after the tribulation of those days, the sun shall be*

*darkened and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of heaven shall be moved:"* (Matthew 24:29) And then the Miracle in verse 30: *"And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven:"*

"I remember too, Father. It was so wonderful, the time of the Miracle. I was eight then."

"And did it not help us through the times ahead, Son?"

"Oh, yes, I remember you would say in the sad and fearful times, "Remember the day of the Miracle? You said, "that was a taste of what will come after these trials. And soon will come the rapture that Jesus spoke of, when He will take us up with Him when He comes to reap the earth." And then you would read from Matthew 24: 31, 40-41:

"And he shall send his angels with a trumpet, and a great voice: and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from the farthest parts of the heavens to the utmost bounds of them. ...

Then two shall be in the field: one shall be taken, and one shall be left. Two women shall be grinding at the mill: one shall be taken, and one shall be left."

"Father, what happened to the Pope at the time of the Warning and Miracle?"

You remember that Mary promised at Fatima that Russia would be converted when the Pope consecrated it to her Immaculate heart in union with all the bishops of the world. The enemy, of course, feared this consecration and had long tried to prevent it by threatening the Pope with great evils if he did so. Many bishops were enemy agents and would refuse to obey the Pope's request for the consecration of Russia, thus invalidating it. But also the enemy threatened the persecution of the Faithful and a worldwide schism in the Church, where the national churches they controlled would rebel from Rome, as had already happened in Russia, China and to a lesser extent in the USA and most other countries. And so it was that because the Pope had commanded all bishops under pain of immediate excommunication to join him on April 13 to consecrate Russia to the Immaculate Heart of Mary, as the Mother of God had requested at Fatima, the enemies of God attacked his person in Rome, but he fled, narrowly escaping them on April 11 -- by the intervention of God, in the form of the Warning! Pope John Paul II *did* consecrate Russia on April 13 and the Miracle that occurred was the *instrument* of Russia's conversion. But six months later Pope John Paul II was found and crucified by the Enemy. Then the Enemy rushed to have their candidate established as an unelected pope, for the turmoil of the world prevented a conclave of cardinals. But one year before the Chastisement God rallied the Cardinals of His Church, and they elected Pope Peter II, who came to be known as the Angelic Pastor. Peter II and the long prophecied "Great

Prince" fought for Europe and all Christendom against the enemy before the Chastisement, by which God Himself finally achieved victory.

"But how did Pope John Paul II get all the liberal and Communist bishops of the

Church to consecrate Russia with him, Father? I heard that their reluctance in the past to do so had caused him to delay the consecration."

The Warning helped a great deal in convincing many bishops to obey the Pope. But the act that made the consecration of the complete Church possible was the Pope's excommunication of all who refused to consecrate with him, effective at the very moment of the consecration. This meant that all *who were still bishops* consecrated Russia with him. Thus, the whole Church was represented, and all that was corrupt had, simultaneously, been cut off.

"Did such an extreme measure keep him from consecrating Russia sooner, Father?"

I think it did, Son. For this act would have precipitated a great schism in the Church before the time was ripe. The Pope wanted, I believe, the time of the Consecration to be very close to the moment of Divine Intervention.

After the Warning we noticed that many people became much better. But many more, after their fear had subsided, seemed to become much worse; for this always happens, Phillip, when one rejects in his heart an evident truth of God. The separation of the sheep and the goats, the wheat and the weeds was taking place *rapidly*. Two very definite sides began to appear in the wars and conflicts throughout the world and the fighting became increasingly bitter and desperate. The evil of the American Police State finally increased to the point where there was no resemblance between it and the United States of America which was now hidden in the catacombs with its Militia and those citizens who supported it. The United States of America *did* exist in the hearts, minds, souls and actions of Christian Patriots. It became clear to all that fervent belief in the Christian God was essential to true American Patriotism and that unbelief (atheism) was the heart of all the Communistic Police States throughout the world -- which could be pictured as a basket of hideous, black snakes. These snakes craved only the abject slavery of all people: power over others, control, absolute control of mind, body and soul.

But just as ferociously did the God-fearing seek liberty from this fearful tyranny, and more importantly they sought, often without realizing it, the liberty of being totally engulfed in and protected by the will of God. Only in this total dedication was there any comfort or relief or joy in this life of misery and suffering, agony and pain. And this total confidence and dedication to God's Will is gained, spiritually, not by a simply act of human will, but with the addition of a divine gift of grace -- the consecration to and union with the Immaculate Heart of Mary, the only human person who had ever achieved perfect obedience and union with the Will of God. This is why she is the Gate of Heaven. After the Warning people who were disposed to receive grace were *driven* to God; but for those who had smothered the flame of Faith, they too were equally *driven* by their master, Satan, to a love of sensual pleasures, unrestrained wickedness and the abandonment and hatred of all good and spiritual things. In the end they came to hate their own bodies and their own souls and those of others likewise.

In these times the Catholic sacramentals were greatly feared by wicked people. Those with the mark of the beast would literally run from crucifixes, rosaries, medals,



scapulars and other blessed objects such as statues and pictures of Jesus, Mary and the Saints. All these items were highly treasured by the few of us who still had them.

Phillip, before I continue to narrate the conclusion of the War in America, I wish to give the spiritual background of those times. For that let us read Scripture which tells what takes place after the Warning (the Sixth Seal), but before the opening of the 7th seal, which is the great Chastisement.

"And I saw another angel ascending from the rising of the sun, having the sign of the living God; and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea, Saying: Hurt not the earth, nor the sea, nor the trees, till we sign the servants of our God in their foreheads."  
(Apocalypse 7:2-3)

Then in verses 9-17 of this chapter, those who are sealed upon earth are identified as being in communion with those in heaven who have already passed through their tribulation. So, this time we are entering in our story, up until the Chastisement, is one in which the elect were signed and sealed and the reprobates received the spiritual mark of the beast. It became very possible, Phillip, to physically see and feel the difference in these two classes of people in those days. A natural aversion, separation and division of people occurred over this 3 1/2 years. But in some mysterious sense we could not account for time in these days, for time was shortened, as Jesus said in Matthew 24:21-27. And false prophets, who were possessed of the devil were everywhere in these strange times.

It was also a time of exceedingly profane heresies and sacrileges, because the "Abomination of Desolation" had occurred after the flight of the true Pope and the pretended seating of the antichrist "pope." All sorts of heresy gushed forth from Rome. And all over the world horrible characters pretending to be Catholic priests, along with some of those fallen priests who had sold their Faith for their earthly life, worked day and night to organize ecclesiastical orgies in which evil spirits were called down during thinly veiled black masses, to enter into the frenzied worshippers. After these services, in the advanced stages of this progressive religious experience of satanism, certain worshippers were secretly led into sumptuous bedrooms prepared for blasphemous sexual fornication rituals. And such eroticisms were styled "the love of god." No one could have imagined or foreseen that the former errors of the Charismatics and neo-modernist heretics who had before pretended to be of the Catholic Church could lead to the production of such delusions of religious fervor and ecstasy so boldly contrary to the 1<sup>st</sup> and 6<sup>th</sup> Commandments of God. But when the diabolical spirits actually entered the bodies of those deluded heretics, all human decorum fled, and even sanity itself was overpowered and cast aside for the sake of the sensual spirit that always invites error into the mind; for the principles of sensuality oppose the principles of reason and corrupt its works with error.

God allowed these aberrations I have noted as a warning to all who had any Faith left that they were to flee this phony Ecumenical "Church of Man," this One-World Religion that had taken over the buildings of every sect and invited in atheists, satanists and hardened reprobates of every kind. In the society of those wretched souls who frequented these "religious" orgies there occurred many murders, not a few of them ritual murders by those

who had ascended to the priesthood of the wicked, a kind of satanic

"Upper Room" community within the "Church of Man," which officially called itself The One-World Church of God's Among Men" or the "Church of the Man-Gods."

In those days we called it the "Church of Devils in Men" or simply the "Church of the Possessed". The ogres of the "upper chamber" committed beastly massacres in the employ of their God, the State, and their Goddess, the Earth.

During these times when the people were being starved, while their tyrants feasted on what little food remained, there appeared everywhere the demon transports, the so-called "flying saucers," especially near diabolical crime sites. Many of the wicked were seen being taken up into these "false miracles of the latter days," never to return – at least, never in one piece.

"When did God's Wrath in the form of the Chastisement finally come to end all this, Father?"

The Chastisement came on the 6966th year of the world since the creation of Adam in 4963 BC, according to the Benedictine's. That is the year 2003 AD. The exact date was October 13. October 13, 1917, you remember, was the date Our Lady of Fatima appeared in Portugal to Warn us of these times. A great Miracle of the sun was witnessed on that very date by over 70,000 people, a miracle Mary had predicted months before. The sun seemed to plunge toward the earth and the people thought it was the end of the world. This great public Miracle was a sign of what was to come; for it closely resembled the Ball of Redemption, that is, the Comet plunging toward the earth at the Chastisement 86 years later. Many were converted at Fatima, but many more at the Chastisement. And just as the colored lights of Fatima's sun afterwards dried the peoples' rain-soaked clothes and all seemed renewed and wonderful, so too the Great Peace followed the Chastisement.

"Is the 6966th year significant, Father?"

Perhaps. In symbolic numerology, the meaning of the number six is imperfection or evil. Six is one short of the perfect number, seven. When the year of the Chastisement had come, the world had reached the height of evil.

"And when is the end of the world?"

The year 2037 will be the 7000th year since God's completion of creation in making Adam. We know what Our Lady said at LaSalette, that the period of peace coming after the Chastisement would last only twenty-five years, ( $2003 + 25 = 2028 + 9 = 2037$ ) and then men's sins would invite the devil into the world again. And this time Satan would perfectly possess a man to become the Antichrist *in person*. I see the seeds already of this sinful reinvasion. This will be your fight, Son. But I will fight alongside you in spirit.

For three months after the Miracle, a silence, or calm seemed to pervade the world. This I saw as a special time of separation between the sheep and the goats -- as when the cream

floats to the surface of fresh milk. For, as the psychological shock of the Warning and Miracle wore off, souls, by their free choice, gravitated towards the acceptance or rejection of God's merciful, saving grace given through these two indisputably convincing Messages from Heaven. Many non-Christians were converted, especially the little, pious, hidden souls of every nation and religion who may have become lost in ignorance and worldliness, or become mired in sin, but who had also preserved in their hearts a love and yearning for the true God and the true Word of God, their Saviour.

In the lull created by these Events, my sons managed to move the godly people who stayed with them into the larger communities of Wyoming, where they greatly strengthened and organized the patriots already in these communities. The destruction of

Casper served to turn many in the State against the remaining puppet government, while it caused the cowardly, the people pleasers to fear the Red Army, our real governor, all the more.

The enemy had fashioned a new national flag. They planned to fly it for the first time across the nation on July 4. I felt that this event should be used to launch a Militia offensive. I gave secret orders in early May for all to prepare, and I asked short wave radio operators to spread the word in coded form around the Country on the Patriot calling-chain that had developed. We learned through these operators that the idea of a Militia Protest Party, in the spirit of the Boston Tea Party had caught fire in all the States. Indeed mighty efforts were made to reclaim our Nation as Constituted on that traditional celebration day of our Nation's birth, even as the enemy, using the same holiday, mocked that Nation with their conquering internationalist flag. This was an all-important public relations opportunity for us. It proved to be a great symbolic and moral victory for us to destroy those new flags and raise the stars and stripes, even for a few minutes, hours, or days. And in the two years thereafter we proved our presence, strength and continued determination by repeating this show of force.

Without my knowledge one of our pilots and his bombardier, as well as bride-to-be, flew a light plane over the State capitol building in Cayenne, where the greatest festivities and anti-patriotic indecencies were taking place. The two swooped down on the ceremonial grounds just after the flag raising ceremony, and dropped a 100 pound homemade explosive from an altitude of only 200 feet. The detestable flag, the decorations and a handful of "dignitaries" were blown up. Militia resistance had not yet arisen in Cayenne, but this heroic act regaled the patriots hidden in that city, and thereafter they stood up to risk their own lives and fortunes for the glory of God and Country and their beloved State of Wyoming.

However, the sad news came to us that moments after the bomb exploded, a fusillade of rifle fire damaged their plane critically. A splendid crash landing was made on Pendleton Boulevard. They were immediately taken prisoner.

News reached me in my mountain hideout in the Laramie Range. I was dismayed and

speechless. I immediately called up 100 of my best men and headed for Cayenne. We were able to contact Militia members in Cayenne to coordinate our plans by radio for rescuing Anne and Peter. The summary execution of these two teenagers had been scheduled for that evening. We were moving into position when we heard over the public radio of the two captives' incredible escape. We rushed to the area. A force of 200 soldiers surrounded a small building in which Anne and Peter had taken refuge. They were defending themselves with small arms taken from the two guards they had dispatched in hand to hand combat. I ordered the close quarters' attack of the 200 troops. We left no enemy survivors, while losing twenty-five men ourselves. The war in our State capitol began with this great little victory, followed by an even more miraculous escape, as we freed the captives and battled our way out of the city.

"Was it just to give up the life of twenty-five men for the sake of two, Father?"

Elsewhere in the state we lost men in an attempt to raise the flag of the United States of America, Phillip. All is justified by the cause, the overall good for which we fought. And raising the patriotic morale of the people and fighting for their freedom in the way I have described was worth the price we paid. A man's life is for spending. You can't take it with you, Son.

"Father, I do not understand how a man can fight so courageously as you did. I cannot imagine myself being so brave. I can only dream of it."

If you are to be brave, your life must seem worthless to you next to your honor before God. Men fight in different ways. Sometimes only from behind cover or with superior arms, or when their back is against a wall and a horrible death is the only alternative. These motives do not involve honor principally. But let me read to you of the spirit, the zeal that I could truly say possessed the true patriots of the latter days and carried us on to daring acts. I read from I Kings 17:42-46, 50-51:

"And when the Philistine looked, and beheld David, he despised him. For he was a young man, ruddy, and of a comely countenance. And the Philistine said to David: Am I a dog, that thou comest to me with a staff? And the Philistine cursed David by his gods. And he said to David: Come to me, and I will give thy flesh to the birds of the air, and to the beasts of the earth. And David said to the Philistine: Thou comest to me with a sword, and with a spear, and with a shield: but I come to thee in the name of the Lord of hosts, the god of the armies of Israel, which thou hast defied. This day, and the Lord will deliver thee into my hand, and I will slay thee, and take away thy heard from thee: and I will give the carcasses of the army of the Philistines this day to the birds of the air, and to the beasts of the earth: that all the earth may know that there is a God in Israel.

... And David prevailed over the Philistine, with a sling and a stone, and he struck, and slew the Philistine. And as David had no sword in his hand, He

ran, and stood over the Philistine, and took his sword, and drew it out of the sheath, and slew him, and cut off his head. And the Philistines seeing that their champion was dead, fled away."

And tonight I bid you read also I Machabees Chapter 2, and you will come to see that this world and all evil is overcome by true faith in God. Victory then is ours, if we witness to our Faith in Jesus; and this witness itself is the living *embodiment* of the true Faith. No unbeliever or heretic can have this Faith or the courage born of honor that flows from it. It is reserved for them who love Truth *for its own sake*; for that truth is the Word of God, Jesus, our Saviour. Many daring things are accomplished in battle and in daily life by motives other than the love of God, the honor of God of which I speak. These acts, however good, do not merit the crown of glory in Heaven, for they do not originate in the Spirit of God. Man must be raised *above* his nature to enter Heaven. He must live a supernatural life here in order to merit supernatural Life for eternity, and that is possible only through the grace of God, for which we must *ask*.

"Let us retire, Father. You look so tired again. I fear you may fall."

Telling you all this seems like my last battle, Son. But I have thought that way too many times and found myself in the thick of another.

"But how will others know all this if you do not also tell *them*, Father?"

Would you have me write a book, Son? My strength *is* failing now!

"But after you tell me, it will all be fresh in your mind, Father."

I shall think about it. Always another mountain to climb. That is how God brings out the best in us. Let us go for a walk in the beautiful evening air.

"How good it is to be here, Father."

And yet think that it is only so by the grace of God.

The next morning I was much refreshed, so we headed for the high country. Walking at a leisurely pace, I was able to continue the story, until reaching its climax just

as we reached the top of Castle Mountain, a broad table-top mountain of massive pink granite walls jutting above an enclosed, flowered meadow, like the ragged battle shorn walkways and parapets of an ancient castle guarding the precious lives enclosed within.

Phillip, after the battles of the 4th of July around the State that year, we established a regular mode of harassment. Of course, those citizens who were hostage to the government we not only did not harass, but protected and encouraged and helped to become productive, especially in growing crops and raising livestock, for we exacted tribute from them, most often voluntarily, but sometimes with a show of force in order to protect them from being suspected as our supporters.

Our overall tactic was to tie up the enemy all over the State and Nation by making their presence needed *everywhere*. Then we would concentrate our forces on the weakest locality at

a time. If their troops were transferred to defend that target area, we would attack the reduced garrison they had just left or we could retreat and focus on the next city chosen in advance. By variations of this strategy, we were able to retain a limited, safe, offensive position. We held the initiative. Many of our long-range western hunting rifles had telescopic sights that often afforded us an advantage because we could strike the enemy while he could not effectively return fire.

I found that considerable advantage and momentum could also be gained by a force with inferior arms if it bravely engaged the enemy at close quarters. By surprising them and charging them quickly, fear was struck in their mercenary hearts, and they often ran, making easy targets. We killed as many as possible at those times in order to send the fear ahead of us, to those who had yet to tangle with us.

In addition, I gave orders that all militia were to aim when shooting, not just throw out volumes of lead. This alone accounted for an unusually high casualty rate among our enemy on the battlefield. Neither did we take time to set up fortified positions of defense, where superior firepower would soon pulverize us in place. We literally fought on the run, stopping only to aim and shoot. Every soldier was an athlete of mind, heart and body.

Over the next two years starvation, sickness and casualties caused our numbers to diminish, but this was also true of the enemy, who lost many troops by desertion as well. But during the last year before the Chastisement, their forces began to grow alarmingly, as new, battle trained troops could be spared from victorious campaigns elsewhere.

In the last year, during that bitter winter, the food for our army ran out. I called all leadership together from around the State. The priest was there. All had converted to the true Faith but a few, whom I sent off on errands. Then I asked my wife to bring me the blessed grapes of San Damiano, which we had stored for 21 years in brandy, as the seer had directed. All who believed or hoped they would thenceforth be preserved from starvation as Our Lady had promised the seer took a blessed grape and ate it. Though we suffered some feelings of hunger, from then on we were miraculously preserved from starvation until the last day. Also our individual strength and courage seemed to rise up to more heroic proportions after that -- until we each fought with the energy of five men. And so our forces matched our enemies in combat, though our numbers did not come close; and they were astounded and cast again and again into terror and panic, sometimes at the mere sight of us or knowledge of our presence -- in the area -- because, Phillip, the heart of an evil man or a man who fights without good motive is cowardly. He depends for boldness only upon the presumption of his superior or invincible power or upon the

suggestion of that appearance. But face to face, he withers before a valiant man, first losing his head, then control over his body... and then his life.

As the time of the final conflicts drew near, all patriotic people were given to almost

constant prayer, no matter what they were doing.

Our heroic priest, Fr. Keogh, and my son, Paul, had taught the people holy songs and prayers. And each day was laid out in a firm but flexible ritual of prayer, a kind of divine office of the laity. Paul traveled widely, preaching and administering Holy Communion as a legally ordained deacon. At other times he prepared communities for the secret arrival of the priest, so that their service at Mass was of the utmost reverence and value before God. These prayerful souls were the *heart* of our army. They were locked in spiritual combat with Satan, as fearful and mortal a combat as my soldiers endured. Many died of sheer mental, emotional and physical exhaustion, and those we revered as martyrs and saints gone from among us to receive their blessed reward.

And as the end drew near, Faithful souls began to mysteriously disappear from our midst. When this began happening, we knew that the Rapture was taking place and that the time of the Lord's appearance was very near. A new hope washed over us at those times and lifted us up like a great wave carrying us towards our longed for and promised land. There was rejoicing and even mirth, for we knew that these blessed souls had been taken up in the Rapture of which Scripture foretold, and that soon, we believed, many more of us would ascend. We made sure to spread this and other news over the radio chain to our countrymen, so that a kind of unity of spirit prevailed among us.

It was in June 2003, that I saw the inevitability and moral necessity of a great showdown with the enemy. For the people were being prepared by fierce propaganda and death threats to renounce fealty to God, Nation and family in a single event. An oath of "Allegiance to the Earth and the Enlightened of Mankind" had been crafted by World leaders and mandated for all peoples to swear to. The language of this oath clearly placed other gods before God, the one Who was never mentioned. In God's place there was the "Goddess of the Earth and the Universe" and her collection of messianic enlightened ones, the "Grand Ascended Masters." These Masters swore allegiance to the "God of Nature," and their mission was to mediate the "salvation" of mankind from destruction by its own sins against the common laws of the universe. The main "sinners," according to these New Age adjudicators, were those who honored the old, worn out religions and values. The Great Oath was the instrument the Grand Masters and their agents would use to eradicate these values or the sinners who retained them – either by conversion through fear or by death.

Elaborate plans were made for a gala event in which all people would be required by a special World Law to come together at great local festival gatherings held simultaneously all over the world to worship the god of Nature and there sign *the Universal Pledge*. Those trying to escape this Earth Day of Worship, it was unofficially rumored, would be sent to the "Unhappy Hunting Grounds." Even those not planning to sign the Oath, however, were ordered to come, so they could prove their openness to "the Great Spirit" and also receive his "graces" for conversion. Perhaps those who refused would be executed on the spot to deter others from imitating them.

I knew from our many contacts that fully half the citizens of the State were, at least nominally or secretly, Christians and wished, if they were not slaves of the State, to practice their religion. These, as well as other borderline believers would be sorely

tempted to conform to the Pagan Services in order to save their earthly lives and those of their children, thus losing their souls when they were slaughtered after the Festival or during the Chastisement.

I had a very strong suspicion at that time that WWII would be completed by a nuclear holocaust and as a free ride to Hell immediately after this pagan worship. Our reconnaissance indicated that, all would be required to swear allegiance to a false god and to a world state, disavowing one's own God and Nation. Then, to ratify this blasphemy each person would be compelled to perform an act of human lust, thus committing a damnable sin. This act of sin was also the disavowal of their being children of God and their adoption as children of the devil. Their death was planned immediately thereafter. But this was being kept a very close secret.

Satan, upon seeing that the coming of the Lord was at hand, determined to lead souls into sin and then murder them all, taking them to Hell with him; for "misery loves company." To offset and mitigate this awful plan to sacrifice souls to Satan just recently given over to sin, I felt that Christian Patriots must also be willing to sacrifice their lives, if necessary, for the honor of God and the salvation of their brothers and sisters, in a tremendous effort to disrupt this colossal human sacrifice of souls and turn it into an exodus from Egypt, an exodus of souls whose hearts yearned for God and the liberty of spirit that He offers them. What convinced me more than all else that this diabolical event would be followed by the Chastisement was its date being set for October 7, 2003 AD only six days from my estimated date for the Chastisement on October 13. But in that date of the 7th I foresaw a great Christian victory, for it was the feast day of Our Lady of the Holy Rosary, by which Mary said she would save the world, the Rosary, which the stigmatist priest Padre Pio called his "weapon" against evil. And October 7 was the anniversary of the defeat of the Islamic Armada at the Battle of Lepanto in 1571, before which Pope Pius V led Christian Europe in saying the Rosary.

On August 15, after recuperating from our usual 4<sup>th</sup> of July "fireworks", I gathered with the priest and the Militia leadership to discuss the plan I had drawn up. We met on a beautiful summer day within a secluded mountain meadow surrounded by stately white aspens seventy feet high, their little leaves rustling in the breeze like a tremendous symphony. We sat upon the grass around a big, lichen colored boulder, upon which the speaker would stand. After the Mass, followed by the recitation of the Rosary, I spoke at some length. After setting out the grave moral situation, I proposed we form two armies, one internal and the other external to the pilgrims attending this diabolical event. I revealed that an orgy would follow the ceremonies; for I had just received certain confirmation concerning it. Thousands of male and female dancers who would gradually strip to full nudity and then engage in sexual and homosexual acts with each other were to entertain and enflame with lust the people, who would finally themselves be given orders to shed their clothes and "return to Nature," fornicating with whom they chose, *immediately after all had signed the Great Oath!* And there would be the tremendous pressure for all to sign from human respect and fear of death.

I explained that the internal army would disguise itself as docile pilgrims, having only



concealed knives or sharpened walking sticks. The external army would wait in ambush beyond the range of the thousands of troops "guarding" the poor sheep who were being led to temptation, sin, and slaughter. I told everyone that it had now been determined with certainty that after the sexual orgy and the orgy of narcotic laced liquors

266

to follow, as the people slept in their drunken stupor, all were to be slaughtered on the spot by the troops, who had been promised for themselves the spoils of their victims and the rule of the land. It was promised that they would be, thereafter, priests of the gods because they had pleased the God of Nature by slaughtering in sacrifice those who had freshly given up their "sins of religion and civilization" to embrace the free love of one another in the non-exclusive Community of Mother Nature. These elite troops who were assigned the duty of execution were told that their victims would be in "Paradise" after death.

I laid out my plan carefully under the aspens. In the middle of the first speech given after the celebration begins, the external army, "E", would appear from the north and attack the armed troops on the outer fringes of the pilgrims. Small decoy units would be dangled in precarious positions in order to lure many troops after them into ambush and also to divide the main force and draw it away from the pilgrims as much as possible before the major assault. This commotion would also draw off many troops stationed on the south of the column of pilgrims and also those stationed amongst the pilgrims and around the great podium. When the battle of army "E" was well underway, the remaining enemy troops inside would suddenly be attacked by army "I" at close range. This would be the critical and daring key to victory. Army "I" would take the weapons of those soldiers they had killed and turn them on the podium dignitaries and remaining soldiers. Then all our noncombatant men and women stationed evenly throughout the masses would, in an authoritative manner, direct all within shouting distance to lie down and not panic. This would help protect the people from gunfire and prevent a stampede. Our targets would then also be highlighted. The enemies' leadership must be killed, every one.

After this these same "pilgrim directors" would quickly urge the people to move southwest at a rapid, but orderly pace. Army "I" will lead them, surround them, and destroy any enemy opposition. Those pilgrims who refused to leave would be left to their fate. Just before this exodus began, I myself would take the microphone and tell the people that they were being led to safety, because the troops had a secret plan to murder them all.

"But they will know you from the beginning, David," someone said.

I answered that I would be disguised as a very old man with a gray and white beard, wearing a ragged gray-blue coat with big gold buttons.

We would form three separate columns or groups when leading the people away so that each group could go in a separate direction, the better to disperse ourselves as a possible target of air attacks or attacks by enemy troops. Finally, the people would be dispersed from

the front of the huge columns, being instructed then to return home and thereafter resist evil and pray in repentance for what they may have been about to do, having great confidence in God's mercy in preparing for the Chastisement.

Now I want to read to you something about this confidence and the humility that goes with it. The reading is from a book called *Divine Intimacy* by Father Gabriel of Saint Mary Magdalen:

HUMILITY IN OUR FALLS: 1. "If we contemplate our misery without raising our eyes to God, the Father of mercies, we will easily become discouraged. By examining ourselves thoroughly, we will see that discouragement always comes from two closely related causes. The first is that we depend upon our own strength; through it our pride is

## 267

wounded and deceived when we fall. The second is that we lack reliance on God; we do not think of referring to Him in times of prosperity, nor do we have recourse to Him when we fail Him. In short, we act by ourselves: we try to succeed alone, we fall alone, and alone we contemplate our fall. The result of such conduct can only be discouragement. Indeed, how could we expect to find in ourselves the strength to rise again, when it was our very want of strength that made us fall? God does not want us to act by ourselves. "Woe to him that is alone," says Sacred Scripture, "for when he falleth, he hath none to lift him up" (Eccl. 4,10). Woe to him who relies only on his own strength to put his good resolutions into execution. When he falls, he will not have the aid of God's might to lift him up; thus he will remain in his misery, confused and discouraged.

Just as we should not make good resolutions without counting on God's help to keep them, by the same token we should not view our failures without considering God's mercy at the same time, for as God is the only One who can help us persevere in good, so He alone can raise us up from evil.

That is why all the saints have taught that the knowledge of oneself must never be separated from the knowledge of God and vice versa. St. Teresa of Jesus says, "The soul must sometimes emerge from self-knowledge and soar aloft in meditation upon the greatness and the majesty of its God. Doing this will help it to realize its own baseness better than thinking of its own nature, and it will be freer from the reptiles which enter the first rooms, that is, the rooms of self-knowledge".

"2. True humility, however deep it may be, neither disquiets, nor troubles, nor disturbs the soul; it is accompanied by peace, joy, and tranquility. ...It enlarges it, and makes it fit to serve God better." On the other hand, "false humility only disturbs and upsets the mind and troubles the soul, so grievous it is. I think the devil is anxious for us to believe that we are humble and, if he can, he will lead us to distrust God."

Distress and lack of confidence lessen our capacity for loving and the devil's aim is to hold back souls on the road to love. He tries in this way to overcome those especially who would never give in to open temptations to sin. In this case we must react in a positive way and recall, as St. Therese of the Child Jesus teaches, that "what offends God and wounds His heart most is want

of confidence."

To be wanting in confidence in God's mercy, even after a grave fall, is never a sign of true humility but of insidious pride and diabolical temptation. If Judas had been humble he would have asked pardon and wept for his sins like Peter, instead of despairing. Humility is the virtue which keeps us in our place; and our place in God's sight is that of children who are weak and miserable, yes, but confident children.

When we fall into the same imperfections after so many good resolutions; when after many efforts we still do not succeed in correcting certain faults or in overcoming certain difficulties, and we find ourselves in one way or another far beneath what we ought or would like to be, let us have recourse to the infallible remedy of humility. "Humility," says St. Teresa of Jesus is "the ointment for our wounds." Even if we seem to have used up all our strength, if we feel unable to do anything and see ourselves always prostrate, powerless to rise, there is still one possibility for us: to humble ourselves. Let us humble ourselves sincerely and with confidence; and humility will supply for all our miseries; it will heal all our wounds because it will attract divine mercy to them.

COLLOQUY: "O Lord, my misery "does not surprise me. Nor does My utter helplessness distress me. I even glory in it, and expect every day to reveal some fresh imperfection. Indeed these lights on my nothingness do me more good than lights on matters of faith.

"What an illusion! ... We wish never to fall? What difference does

it make, O Lord, if I fall at every instant? It will make me realize my weakness and I shall derive great profit from it. You see what I am capable of, O my God, and so You will be obliged to carry me in Your arms. If you do not do so, it will mean that You are pleased to see me on the ground ... but I shall not be disturbed. Full of love, I shall always lift up my suppliant arms to You. I cannot believe that You will abandon me.

"O Jesus, it is true that I am not always faithful, but I never become discouraged, I cast myself into Your arms, and like a little dewdrop, I sink deeper and deeper into Your chalice, O divine Flower of the field, and there I find all I have lost and much more besides.

"Yes, O my God, I am happy to feel little and weak in Your presence, and my heart remains in peace. ... I am glad to feel so imperfect and to need Your mercy so much! When we calmly accept the humiliation of being imperfect, Your grace, O Lord, returns at once."

After reading this I asked for five minutes of silence. Then I said: "Yes, we could avoid this terrible event and perhaps save our mortal lives. But if God has used the humiliation of our own sins and weaknesses to save us, does He not also wish to do the same for those who are going to be herded into this great compromise and can we be too proud to serve them in their great need. If our humility is real, we will not see ourselves too good to reach out to miserable sinners. If our humility is fraudulent we belong to the society of hypocrisy that has brought the whole world to this terrible state. But if we wish to consecrate ourselves to God,

we must be willing to give our lives in order to save souls in their hour of greatest need. If we ourselves can endure all temptation and resolve to face death without fear for the love of God, we are invited by charity, I believe, to act as rescuers. Therefore, only volunteers will be accepted from among our ranks. All others must pray for us. Are there any questions?

"You ask us to risk our lives for those who will allow themselves to join this group of misguided pilgrims!? Most of them are the very enemy among our countrymen that we have been fighting these three bitter years. Many of us have lost our loved ones to them."

Listen again to Father Gabriel: "God is so insistent upon being loved in the neighbor that He makes this love the essential condition of our eternal salvation. When Jesus speaks to us of the last judgement, He gives no other reason for the justification of the good and the condemnation of the wicked than the doing of or the omission of works of mercy toward our neighbor ... " (pp. 771-2 "Meditation I", *Divine Intimacy*)

After a time of silence, I said, "All who have children to care for must remain hidden." And then, "Father Keogh, do you have some words for us? What do you think?"

Fr. Keogh slowly arose and approached the rock. "David, we are not obliged to render heroic charity in order to be saved. It is sufficient to render the charity that our duty demands. The line between heroism and duty, however, may not be the same for each person. Also, I believe, if we hope to succeed in so daring and heroic a deed, then, as at the Battle of Lepanto, we must pray the Rosary, holding it in our very hands during the conflict itself." A strong murmur of assent went through the 250 militia leaders present. "Furthermore, we must try to send a warning to all people in other states and throughout the world of what we suspect of this World Wide Satanic Event. When you return to speak to the people you are here today representing, convey well all that needs

to be felt and understood that we have discussed, for to make such sacrifice, each one must be sufficiently and properly motivated themselves."

For two days we discussed and refined our plans, organizing all into leadership teams. That last evening around a big fire people came up to me asking about the Chastisement, the Rapture, the Great War and the Peace to follow. So, I set about explaining all I knew from the many Messages from Heaven which I had studied for twenty years. I read a few quotes:

On October 2, 1979, -- Our Lady said ..

"My child and My children, do not be affrighted by my words. The World shall not come to an end. The Eternal Father has given His promise to mankind, that the world shall never be made extinct again, as in the past with the time of the flood. However, your world shall be cleansed with a 'baptism of fire.' Only a few, in the multitudes upon earth, shall be saved. You have been asked to make a choice between the Cross and the Serpent. And this choice has also been asked of the clergy in My Son's House, His Church upon earth."

The Great Chastisement will begin with the *climax* of World War III, a war which, as you know, started in Serbia, then the Middle East, Africa and Korea. The climax of this war will be a strictly nuclear war, in which "nations will disappear in seconds." This manmade part of the Great Chastisement will last three days. Then the three days of darkness will begin, due to the second part of the Divine Chastisement, a Comet, the Ball of Redemption, which will virtually strike the earth.

This Ball will appear near the sun two weeks before it strikes our atmosphere. Let us read Blessed Padre Pio on this three days:

*(Translation of a copy of a personal letter written by Padre Pio addressed to the Commission of Heroldsbach appointed by the Vatican which testifies to the truth and reality of these revelations given by Our Lord to Padre Pio, a Capuchin priest who bore the stigmata.)*

**NEW YEAR'S EVE 1949:** "My son, My son, I have been for this hour in which I again shall reveal to you the great love of My heart. My love for man is very great, especially for those who give themselves to Me. They are My refuge and My consolation in the many and terrible irreverences which I receive in the Sacrament of My love.

Pray! Pray particularly during this Jubilee Year of 1950. Pray and make reparation to Me. Admonish others to do the same because the time is near at hand in which I shall visit my unfaithful people because they have not heeded the time of My grace. Persevere in prayer, so that your adversary shall have no dominion over you. Tell My people to be prepared at all times, for My judgment shall come upon them suddenly and when least expected – and not one shall escape My hands, I shall find them all! I shall protect the just. Watch the sun and moon and the stars of the Heavens – when they appear to be unduly disturbed and restless, know that the day is not far away. Stay united in prayer and watching until the angel of destruction has passed your doors. Pray that these days will be shortened.

**JANUARY 28, 1950:** "Keep your windows well covered. Do not look out. Light a blessed candle, which will suffice for many days. Pray the Rosary. Read spiritual books. Make acts of Spiritual Communion, also acts of love, which are so pleasing to Us. Pray with outstretched arms, or prostrate on the ground, in order that many souls may be saved. Do not go outside the house. Provide yourself with sufficient food. The powers of nature shall be moved and a rain of fire shall make people tremble with fear. Have courage! I am in the midst of you.

**FEBRUARY 7, 1950:** "Take care of the animals during these days. I am the Creator and preserver of all animals as well as man. I shall give you a few signs beforehand, at which time you should place more food before them. I will preserve the property of the elect, including the animals, for they shall be in need of sustenance afterwards as well. Let no one go across the yard, even to feed the animals – he who steps outside will perish! Cover your windows carefully. My elect shall not see My wrath. Have confidence in Me, and I will be your protection. Your confidence obliges Me to come to your aid.

The hour of My coming is near! But I will show mercy. A most dreadful punishment will bear witness to the times. My angels, who are to be the executioners of this work, are ready with their pointed swords! They will take special care to annihilate all those who mocked Me and would not believe in My revelations.

Hurricanes of fire will pour forth from the clouds and spread over the entire earth! Storms, bad weather, thunderbolts and earthquakes will cover the earth for two days. An uninterrupted rain of fire will take place! It will begin during a very cold night. All this is to prove that God is the Master of Creation.

Those who hope in Me, and believe in my words, have nothing to fear because I will not forsake them, nor those who spread My message. No harm will come to those who are in the state of grace and who seek My mother's protection.

That you may be prepared for these visitations, I will give you the following signs and instructions: The night will be very cold. The wind will roar. After a time, thunderbolts will be heard. Lock all the doors and windows. Talk to no one outside the house. Kneel down before a crucifix, be sorry for your sins, and beg My Mother's protection. Do not look during the earthquake, because God's anger must be contemplated with fear and trembling.

Those who disregard this advice will be killed instantly. The wind will carry with it poisonous gases which will be diffused over the entire earth. Those who suffer and die innocently will be martyrs and they will be with Me in My Kingdom.

Satan will triumph! But in three nights, the earthquake and fire will cease. On the following day the sun will shine again, angels will descend from Heaven and will spread the spirit of peace over the earth. A feeling of immeasurable gratitude will take possession of those who survive this terrible ordeal—the impending punishment – with which God has visited the earth since creation.

"... Pray the rosary, but pray it well, so that your prayers may reach Heaven. Soon a more terrible catastrophe shall come upon the entire world, such as never before has been witnessed, a terrible chastisement never before experienced! ... How unconcerned men are regarding these things! Which shall so soon come upon them, contrary to all expectation. How indifferent they are in preparing themselves for these unheard of events, through which they will have to pass so shortly!

The weight of the Divine balance has reached the earth! The wrath of My Father shall be poured out over the entire world! I am again warning the world through your instrumentality, as I have so often done heretofore.

The sins of men have multiplied beyond measure: Irreverence in Church, Sinful pride committed in sham religious activities, lack of true brotherly love, indecency in dress, especially at summer resorts ... The world is filled with iniquity.

This catastrophe shall come upon the earth like a flash of lightning! At which moment the light of the morning sun shall be replaced by black darkness! No one shall leave the house or look out of a window from that moment on. I Myself shall come amidst thunder and lightning. The wicked shall behold My Divine Heart. There shall be great confusion because of this utter darkness in which the entire earth shall be enveloped, and many, many shall die from fear and

despair.

Those who shall fight for My cause shall receive grace from My Divine Heart; and the cry: "WHO IS LIKE UNTO GOD!" shall serve as a means of protection to many. However, many shall burn in the open fields like withered grass! The godless shall be annihilated, so that afterwards the just shall be able to start afresh.

On the day, as soon as complete darkness has set in, no one shall leave the house or look from out of the window. The darkness shall last a day and a night, followed by another day and a night, and another day – but on the night following, the stars will shine again, and on the next morning the sun shall rise again, and it will be **SPRINGTIME!**"

In the days of darkness, My elect shall not sleep, as did the disciples in the garden of olives. They shall pray incessantly, and they shall not be disappointed in Me. I shall gather my elect. Hell will believe itself to be in possession of the entire earth, but I shall reclaim it!

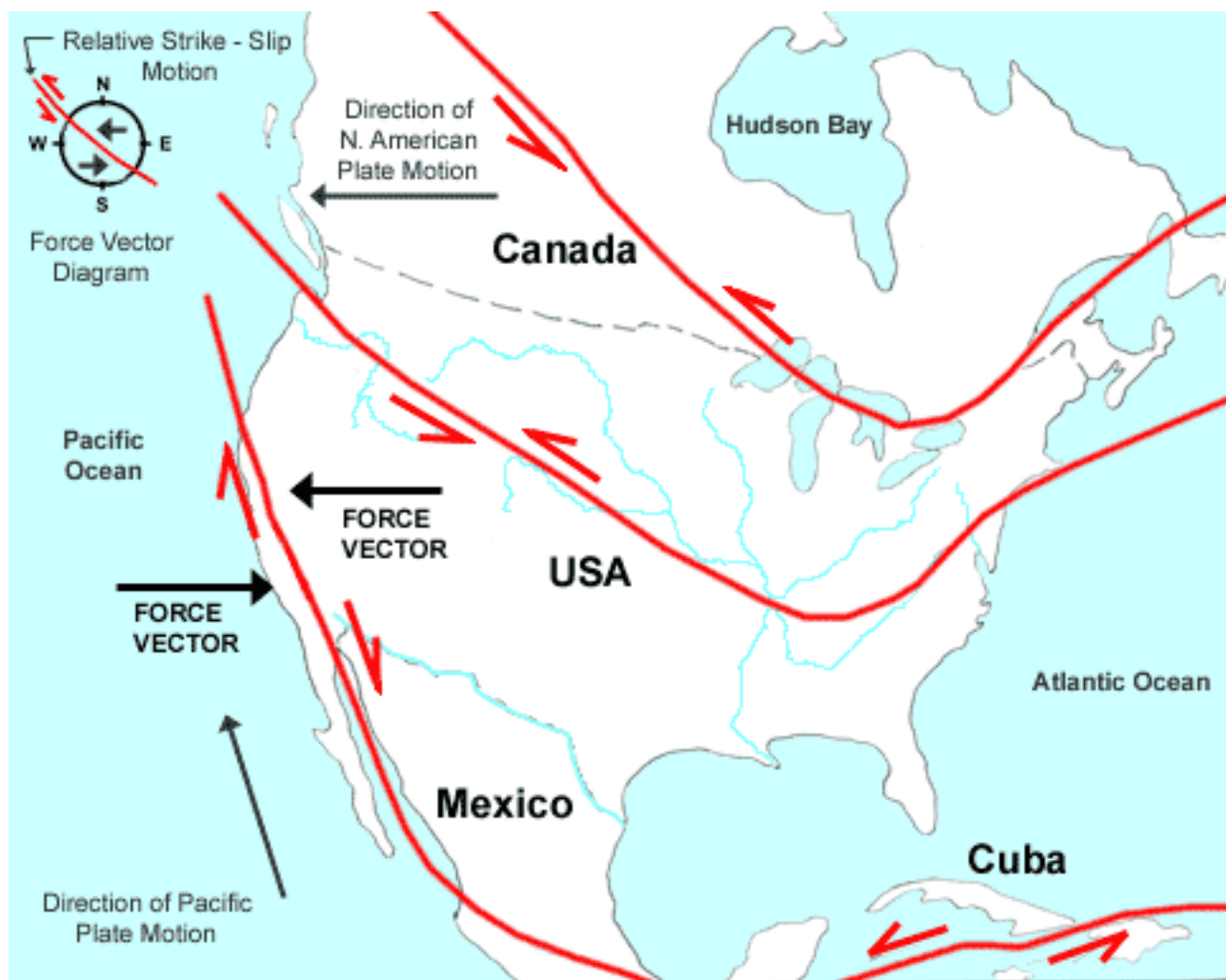
Do you, perhaps, think that I would permit My Father to have such terrible chastisements come upon the world, if the world would turn from iniquity to justice? But because of My great love, these afflictions shall be permitted to come upon man. Although many shall curse Me, yet thousands of souls shall be saved through them. No human understanding can fathom the depth of My love!

Pray! Pray! I desire your prayers. My Dear Mother Mary, Saint Joseph, Saint Elizabeth, Saint Conrad, Saint Michael, Saint Peter, the Little Therese, Your Holy Angels, shall be your intercessors. Implore their aid! Be courageous Soldiers of Christ! At the return of light, let everyone give thanks to the Holy Trinity for Their protection! The devastation shall be very great! But I, Your God, will have purified the earth. I am with you. Have confidence! **(Here ends Padre Pio's Message)**

*The meaning of the word "day" was revealed by Our Lord on August 14, 1932: Question: "Are these days of darkness days of twenty-four hours?" Our Lord's answer: "The three days of darkness are days of twenty-four hours each. The darkness must not last longer, otherwise the good would die of fear and anxiety."*

I continued speaking to the sober faces illumined by the fading firelight: "From all I have read, it seems that the Comet will block out the light of the sun and, as it passes, cause tremendous earthquakes because of its great and sudden gravitational pull on the existing fault blocks of the earth, followed by the sudden release of this pull as it escapes the earth's gravitational field. It will spin with a radical, eccentric motion. Due to this, as it enters the Earth's gravitational field, great pieces of it will break off and fall into the oceans, creating tremendous tidal waves. Dust and fiery pieces of this huge comet will fall everywhere, killing many. Poisonous gases from this giant comet will make the atmosphere deadly to all living creatures.

Our Lady at Bayside said that the United States would be physically divided. Scientists know from satellite photos and gravity maps of a great fault graben, a down-dropped block, 90 miles wide running from Seattle, Washington, to the Missouri River's entrance into the Mississippi River.



The Yellowstone hot spots in the NW corner of Wyoming are located over the tear in the earth's crust reaching to the Moho, where hot, plastic rock begins. The Comet, I believe,

272

will complete this great fault to the mantle across the entire United States. Seawater could actually rush into this huge graben. I then drew them a sketch of a possible transcontinental fault system that had been initiated long ago by the collision of the North American and Pacific Plates.

Phillip, I then said to them that this great physical division of the United States straight from God's hand would be a reminder for all time of the former spiritual division that can occur to divide a nation.

Then someone asked about the Great Peace and what it would be like. I told them what I knew or speculated based on the Heavenly Messages I had read: that the terrible breath of the Comet would cleanse and cause a re-oxygenation of our atmosphere. That a time of great poverty and want would for a time cause the living to envy the dead. But that the great



amount of debris that fell to earth from the Comet would be very rich in minerals, so that as plants recovered or seeds were sown they would grow to great size rapidly. The earth would soon be like a garden, but the best thing would be that all evil men and all demons would have been banished to Hell, so that Peace among people could flourish throughout the whole world and the Catholic church, Christ's Church, would everywhere be embraced in its fullness – and *truth*, would reign, without division or error or mediocrity challenging its royal dignity.

It would be a poorer, more agriculturally based life in which all the vanities of men had perished. And various Messages told us that "it will be the end of time as you know it." This I could not explain to them, Phillip, for it was a mystery to me and still is to some extent even though I see that it is truly so.

Then I read a little from the Messages given at Bayside and after that from the mystic, Fr. Pere Lamy.

### AFTER THE PURIFICATION

(December 7, 1973) "And now, Our Lady is going back. It's becoming very bright: *"My child, I am not leaving, I am only moving so that you can see the world as it will be after the purification."*

Oh! I see. I don't see anything, it looks like the wild West, like we see. Everything is like – I see some people, they are digging in the ground and they're planting, they look like they're planting potato plants or something. I see all the people, and the strange thing about it, they're – they're all digging in the dirt but they have very fancy clothes on. And now, one is over, and he's directing that a drill – they do have a drill, some type of drill – and it's going down into the ground, and he's talking about water. Water.

Now I look over, and I see very strange-looking houses. They look like they've been made of just wood, and twigs, and some canvas over them. It looks very strange, it doesn't look like there is very much around, it looks like a desert.

Ohhh! (pause) I see now other people with Jesus. And now Jesus is bending over: **"My child, you are looking into the future."**

Now Jesus is looking over to the trees and there are people coming through. I see some ladies dressed – they're dressed in similar garments like Jesus has on. It's a long white gown... And all the women, their hair is long, I notice it's down their back but they have over their hair, like a cloak, a short cloak. It doesn't go all the way down their back. And the men are dressed in dark ... Some of them in dark brown habits. They look more like monks' garments, but they have sandals on their feet, brown sandals. Ohh And ...Ohhh!

And these people now, they are all gathering, and they are coming together, and they are kneeling down, and one man now is taking a crucifix, and he is making a wooden crucifix, with two pieces, he is tying them, with a

piece of, its looking like cloth, to make the sign of the cross. And they're all kneeling down now, and they are praying. It's very strange, because it doesn't seem like there are very many people.

Now, they are all looking up. They are looking up to the sky. And the voice, now, and they are looking up to the sky, they see figures, and they are listening. And it's so beautiful, because they are listening to the voices from Heaven!

Now Our Lady – and it's growing very dark – and Our Lady says:

**"ONLY A FEW WILL BE COUNTED"**

(December 31, 1974) Our Lady showed Veronica what the earth will be like when Jesus returns ... "... the sun is shining ... It's like summer. I see these green trees and a beautiful lake. And now as I'm looking at the most beautiful, restful place I have ever seen ... and now, through the trees Oh! I can see Jesus coming! Oh, it's like another world! It's ... Oh! A beautiful land – oohh!!!

Now it must be warm because Jesus doesn't have anything on His feet and He's coming now through the foliage in the trees. And it's a beautiful deep green – the leaves, and I can see the grass and as Jesus is walking ... Oh, now Jesus is saying:

**"You see, My child, there will be a renewed Earth."**

**"You are watching, My child, soon after my arrival upon Earth."**

**"You are watching, My child, the Order of that day."**

(February 10, 1974) Our Lady: "I must caution you, in the days ahead, to look not in vain for the coming of My Son. There will be many false Christs among you. He will come to you in only one way, descending from heaven as He ascended into Heaven, and He will come accompanied with the forces, the warriors of Heaven and the Saints. Remember well, many false christs will come into your world, reject them, do not be misled by their false miracles. Reject them, knowing that Jesus will come down in view of all, with the Saints and the Angels."

(December 7, 1976) Our Lady told Veronica: "I give you great grace of heart, My children, to know that many shall be taken from your earth before the Great Chastisement. It will be of great mirth, My Child, to reveal to you that there will be much consternation and conflicting thought when these beloved children disappear from the earth. Many of your news medias shall state that they have been carried off by flying saucers. Oh no, My children, they were carried off into a supernatural realm of the Eternal Father to await the return of My Son upon earth."

**Pere Lamy:** "Peace will be given back to the world, but I shall not see it, and other things will come to pass of which I do not personally see the end. When peace once more is established in the world, what changes shall have come to pass! War is Big Business. The manufacturer of the aeroplane, the exploitation of the mines, the iron works, all that will dwindle. There will be no longer those great factories where morality withers and disappears. The working-class will be bound to turn back to the land. Land work will receive great impetus. Land will again be very dear. When peace is given back to the world, bit business will shrink to smaller proportions and will stay there. Everything will grow less."

"God willed to purify the faith of His people by giving them a long sojourn in the desert. The Israelites were a whole generation in the desert. All the same, when God gives back peace to the world, it will have to be re-evangelized over again, and that will be a work for a whole generation."

"A great effort will have to be made for the conversion of man after peace. There will be quite a lot of difficulties. Did not St. Paul encounter them? The spiritual state of the first Christians will come back moreover, but there will be then so few men on the earth. And there will be once more a splendid

efflorescence of Orders and Congregations."

For the next two months we worked hard to organize our forces for the "Day of Destiny," as we called it. We also had our short wave radios broadcasting warnings of what we suspected would happen all over the world.

When the Evil Day finally arrived all was in place. On October 5, the great migration to the country place 35 miles east of Kearney, Wyoming began. Near a ranch where the Mother of God had actually appeared predicting these times many years ago, a prominent knoll had been chosen as a natural podium, since huge flatlands surrounded it on all sides.

The day of the 7th dawned with an eerie red glow covering the entire sky. This glow intensified each day until the Ball of Redemption struck the earth at 3 p.m., October 13, 2003 AD. This glow was caused by radiation from the approaching Comet striking our atmosphere. We all prayed, out loud when possible, throughout that fateful day. The priest and Paul, both in disguise, had arrived at the old ranch buildings and planned to conduct a secret Mass at the critical time in the very room that had formerly been a little chapel where the anniversaries of Mary's visitation to the young boy were commemorated yearly. The plan was to crowd the small room with our own people.

Phillip, the enemy was enraged by our audacity, interrupting and ruining their carefully planned mass execution of freshly stained sinners that were to be prepared for the fires of Hell like so many roasted goats. When Army "E" began firing in the middle of the first speech, most troops, as we had hoped, rushed to that area; then the core of Army I rushed the main speakers and their guards, slitting the throats of the armed guards almost before they could understand what was happening. Hand to hand combat ensued everywhere. But soon most of us were armed and our blazing weapons soon provided more weapons. In 15 minutes we had eliminated all resistance on and around the butte, while Army "E" battled furiously to the North.

Before destroying the huge sound system, I used it to explain to the people briefly the plot to kill them and our intention to lead them to safety. I waved a flag and announced that the people should begin to move to the south. They began to move as our leaders amongst them shouted orders. Slowly, as if recovering from a sudden snowstorm, the whole mass of bewildered humanity started moving. Most could still not understand what was happening, but it at least seemed reasonable to them to leave the area of gunfire. Before leaving the butte, I ordered the toppling of the pillars that held the huge stage platform where speakers and some of the principal dancers had gathered before their death.

The exodus took five hours, with 90% of our Militia in both armies guarding our retreat in a confusing, running battle with pursuing troops. With both our armies now concentrated on the north, I led the people, by prior arrangement, on a large white horse, in order to visually dramatize the leadership of their exodus by a good shepherd figure. Our losses in men were heavy. But when the enemy's desire to chase after the people and slaughter them seemed to lessen, I sent Michael to tell Timothy, general of Army "E", to hold the enemy at

bay so we could put a safe distance between the people and their pursuers. Two hours later I began to send the people in every direction, from the front of the lines.

275

We lost 2500 men that day, but the enemy lost at least twice that number. We considered all our dead martyrs who had "washed their robes in the blood of the lamb."

I sent Michael to tell my wife and children camped nearby to meet at the spot I had designated beforehand. Upon our reunion, we thanked God on our knees profoundly for preserving our lives. My wife and I, for the first time in three years, had all twelve children assembled together around a warm campfire, which lit up our dirty but happy faces. That night we camped near a stream at the bottom of a heavily wooded valley. All five of us in the Militia had bullet wounds which we tended for each other. The next morning we lost no time shouldering our few belongings and beginning the 45-mile journey to a cave on the crest of the Big Horn Mountains which I had chosen as the place to await the Three Days of Darkness. We arrived there late on the evening of the tenth. The fearful Comet was visible in the east, growing in size throughout the day. It began to spin, changing colors and throwing off huge sparks. We prayed constantly, eating nothing for two days. On the morning of the 13th the Comet took up almost half the visible sky. A blazing ball of fiery wrath. The atmosphere began to darken and turn cold as the light of the sun was blocked. Distant earthquakes shook the earth beneath us. With Ruth on my right and Timothy on my left, we all prayed in the form of a cross, each prone, with arms outstretched.

Finally, time seemed to slowly drift away. All fear, anxiety and dread, all noise and turmoil ceased for each of us. The visible world around us seemed to slowly dissolve into a soft mist. I remember thinking that I no longer felt any contact with the earth. It was as if I began seeing through my mind's eye. As I opened these "eyes," my gaze fixed upon the most wonderful vision of angels, millions of them, floating down from the deepest blue heavens. They were the Angelic Host, the army of the angels. And leading them I began to recognize many of the Saints. All approached on vast luminous, vari-colored pastel clouds, an endless army of transparent white beings. It seemed as if we were floating up to meet them. During this Rapture we saw Jesus and Mary atop the highest, most beautiful clouds floating down towards us. We all wept for joy and seemed to enter into yet a higher realm of bliss -- something I cannot even begin to describe now, Phillip.

"Nor can I, Father." I looked over at Phillip, his eyes streaming crystalline teardrops, as he stood silhouetted against the distant sunset. We now stood atop one of the granite ramparts of Castle Mountain. From here we could clearly see the Big Horns to the north, outlined against the great blue sky of Wyoming. I thanked God for that moment. Standing, I praised and thanked Him for all He had given to Mankind throughout time, especially for the Infinite Love of His only begotten Son, our Redeemer, Lord and Master.

We spent an hour there in personal prayer and meditation. Slowly, we descended to the

green meadow surrounded by the castle walls, which were shimmering in the glowing rose of that April sunset. We each picked bouquets of multicolored wildflowers, lost in wonder and joy like little children. I remember decorating my long white beard with tiny purple violets. We seemed to be inebriated with happiness. Tears welled in my eyes as I looked upon my youngest son. My heart overflowed with gratitude for the life God had given to us. I fell to my knees. Perhaps I would have died there, if I had not heard, as it were, the voice of my Master calling me back, to work a while longer in His Vineyard. Later I made a rough altar of small granite boulders, which we piled waist

276

high. There we laid our flowers and offered aloud in humble words to our Creator the gift of our lives and those of all good people.

We sat by a little fire long into the evening, enjoying the company of each other's presence, trading stories in gentle tones, speculating on the Glory of God and the nature of all things.

277

[{TABLE OF CONTENTS}](#)

[{PREFACE}](#)

[{CHAPTER I}](#) [{CHAPTER II}](#) [{CHAPTER III}](#) [{CHAPTER IV}](#) [{CHAPTER V}](#) [{CHAPTER VI}](#)

[{CHAPTER VII}](#) [{CHAPTER VIII}](#) [{CHAPTER IX}](#) [{CHAPTER X}](#) [{CHAPTER XI}](#)

[{Bibliography}](#)

[{Bookstore}](#) [{Order Form}](#) [{Instructions}](#) [{Notice of Permissions}](#) [{Download}](#)

[{Links}](#)

[{FRAMES VERSION}](#)

(Requires a frames-enabled browser)

*Website contents © 1999 - 2000, [Web Designs by Doc](#). Literary content ©1999 - 2000, Dave Pedry. All rights reserved.*

## CHAPTER XI

## THE GREAT PEACE

The next morning, greatly refreshed, we headed down the flowered, boulder strewn slopes of Castle Mountain to the cabin, sometimes shortening the time of our descent by glissading down the snow packed couloir, using our staffs as brakes and rudders. Otherwise, we took a leisurely pace, stopping often, as I continued to narrate the last part of my story.

Just before the culmination of WWII the events occurred as described by the fifth trumpet of the Apocalypse (Chapter 9, vs. 1-11):

"And the fifth angel sounded the trumpet, and I saw a star fall from heaven upon the earth, and there was given to him the key of the bottomless pit. And he opened the bottomless pit: and the smoke of the pit arose, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened with the smoke of the pit. And from the smoke of the pit there came out locusts upon the earth. And power was given to them, as the scorpions of the earth have power: And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, nor any green thing, nor any tree: but only the men who have not the sign of God on their foreheads. And it was given unto them that they should not kill them; but that they should torment them five months: and their torment *was* as the torment of a scorpion when he striketh a man. And in those days men shall seek death, and shall not find it: and they shall desire to die, and death shall fly from them. And the shapes of the locusts *were* like unto horses prepared unto battle: and on their heads *were*, as it were, crowns like gold: and their faces *were* as the faces of men. And they had hair as the hair of women; and their teeth were as lions: And they had breastplates as breastplates of iron, and the noise of their wings was as the noise of chariots and many horses running to battle."

During this time the world was literally invaded by demons in transports that had been called for years flying saucers. God allowed them to torment men, inasmuch as they did not serve Him, in order that they might be given the good necessary for their conversion. They were given a taste of Hell, both of the hideous deformed beings who would torment them and the unendurable pains they would suffer, without ever being able to die, no matter how much they wished to.

The first part of the Chastisement, which lasted three days, was manmade, Phillip. The Great Nuclear War took place principally in the southern hemisphere, centering around the Middle East. Of this we read in Apocalypse 9:13-21. It is the sixth trumpet:

"And the sixth angel sounded the trumpet: and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar, which is before the eyes of God, Saying to the sixth angel, who had the trumpet: Loose the four angels, who are bound in the great river Euphrates. And the four angels were loosed, who were prepared for an hour, and a day, and a month, and a year: for to kill the third part of men. And the number of the army of horsemen was twenty thousand times ten thousand. And I heard the number of them. And thus I saw the horses in the vision: and they that sat on them, had breastplates of fire and of hyacinth and of brimstone, and the heads of the horses were as the heads of lions: and from their mouths proceeded fire, and smoke, and brimstone. And by these three plagues was slain the third part of men, by the fire and by the smoke and by the brimstone, which issued out of their mouths. For the power of the horses is in their mouths, and in their tails. For, their tails are like

to serpents, and have heads: and with them they hurt. And the rest of the men, who were not slain by these plagues, did not do penance from the works of their hands, that they should not adore devils, and idols of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, and wood, which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk: Neither did they penance from their murders, nor from their sorceries, nor from their fornication, nor from their thefts."

The second part of the Chastisement was from God, and affected primarily the Northern Hemisphere. It consisted of the giant Comet passing close to the earth and partially disintegrating due to the collision with earth's gravitational field and its atmosphere. A huge piece broke off and hit the Atlantic Ocean causing huge tidal waves that flooded the coastlands 200 miles inland. The dust, rock fragments and boulders caused a storm of fire in the atmosphere, some reaching the earth as fiery balls which exploded like bombs upon hitting the earth. This is described in Apocalypse Ch. 8: 1-12 as the first through the fourth trumpets.

And when he had opened the seventh seal, there was silence in Heaven, as it were for half an hour. And I saw seven angels standing in the presence of God; and there were given to them seven trumpets. And another angel came, and stood before the altar, having a golden censer; and there was given to him much incense, that he should offer of the prayers of all saints upon the golden altar, which is before the throne of God. And the smoke of the incense of the prayers of the saints ascended up before God from the hand of the angel. And the angel took the censer, and filled it with the fire of the altar, and cast it on the earth, and there were thunders and voices and lightnings, and a great earthquake. And the seven angels, who had the seven trumpets, prepared themselves to sound the trumpet. And the first angel sounded the trumpet, and there followed hail and fire, mingled with blood, and it was cast on the earth, and the third part of the earth was burnt up, and the third part of the trees was burnt up, and all green grass was burnt up. And the second angel sounded the trumpet: and as it were a great mountain, burning with fire, was cast into the sea, and the third part of the sea became blood: And the third part of those creatures died, which had life in the sea, and the third part of the ships was destroyed. And the third angel sounded the trumpet, and a great star fell from heaven, burning as it were a torch, and it fell on the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of waters: And the name of the star is called Wormwood. And the third part of the waters became wormwood; and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter. And the fourth angel sounded the trumpet, and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the stars, so that a third part of them was darkened, and the day did not shine for a third part of it, and the night in like manner.

Thus far the world had passed through the sixth trumpet of the seventh (and last) seal to be opened in the time of this world. What remained after the Great Chastisement is described in the rest of the Apocalypse, including the seven thunders, the seven signs, the seven bowls

and the seven plagues of the seventh trumpet of the seventh seal.

"In your story you left out the events of the fifth trumpet, Father?"

That is because I did not personally experience them. The locusts that came out of hell to torment those who did not have the sign of God on their foreheads were the demons themselves that appeared 5 months before the Great Chastisement all over the earth. But there is something that can be added to the fifth trumpet. As we know Scripture has often more than one level of interpretation. The demons of the fifth trumpet can also be seen as the heretics of the last 500 years and especially of the last 50 years. They were able to sting and torment with error those who did not have the Faith of God in their souls. These tormenting locusts

279

were the symbolic terms in which God describes the Great Apostasy which preceded the Great Chastisement, lasting for five hundred years in general but for fifty years intensely, thus symbolically represented as the "five months."

The age we are now in, Phillip, is described in an intermediate vision by St. John, between the sixth and the seventh trumpets. This is the time of the Great Peace following the Chastisement which the Mother of God promised at Fatima.

"And I saw another mighty angel come down from heaven, clothed with a cloud, and a rainbow *was* on his head, and his face was as the sun, and his feet as pillars of fire. And he had in his hand a little book open: and he set his right foot upon the sea, and his left foot upon the earth. And he cried with a loud voice as when a lion roareth. And when he had cried, seven thunders uttered their voices. And when the seven thunders had uttered their voices, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heaven saying to me: Seal up the things which the seven thunders have spoken; and write them not. And the angel, whom I saw standing upon the sea and upon the earth, lifted up his hand to heaven, And he swore by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven, and the things which are therein; and the earth, and the things which are in it; and the sea, and the things which are therein: That time shall be no longer. But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound the trumpet, the mystery of God shall be finished, as he hath declared by his servants the prophets. And I heard a voice from heaven again speaking to me, and saying: Go, and take the book that is open, from the hand of the angel who standeth upon the sea, and upon the earth. And I went to the angel, saying unto him, that he should give me the book. And he said to me: Take the book, and eat it up: and it shall make thy belly bitter, but in thy mouth it shall be sweet as honey. And I took the book from the hand of the angel, and ate it up: and it was in my mouth, sweet as honey: and when I had eaten it, my belly was bitter. And he said to me: thou must prophesy again to many nations, and peoples, and tongues, and kings." (The Apocalypse Chap. 10)

As you know, the present pope, Peter II, has issued the proclamations and doctrines, condemning anew all heresies, in order to purify and renew the vitality of the Church. He



rules with an iron fist, and these authoritative pronouncements Scripture refers to as the "Seven Thunders," for seven symbolizes the perfect number.

During the Peace we have the "measuring of the temple," which is the conversion of mankind and the purification of the Church. This determination of the elect will continue until the Antichrist emerges in the person of a man. Against him and those who follow him are pitted the two witnesses and all the elect who witness with them. And so we read in The Apocalypse Chapter 11, verses 1-13:

"And there was given me a reed like unto a rod: and it was said to me: Arise, and measure the temple of God, and the altar and them that adore therein. But the court, which is without the temple, cast out, and measure it not: because it is given unto the Gentiles, and the holy city they shall tread under foot two and forty months: And I will give unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred sixty days, clothes in sackcloth. These are the two olive trees, and the two candlesticks, that stand before the Lord of the earth. And if any man will hurt them, fire shall come out of their mouths, and shall devour their enemies. And if any man will hurt them, in this manner must he be slain. These have power to shut heaven, that it rain not in the days of their prophecy: and they have power over waters to turn them into blood, and to strike the earth with all plagues as often as they will. And when they shall have finished their testimony, the beast, that ascendeth out of

the abyss, shall make war against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them. And their bodies shall lie in the streets of the great city, which is called spiritually, Sodom and Egypt, where their Lord also was crucified. And they of the tribes, and peoples, and tongues, and nations, shall see their bodies for three days and a half: and they shall not suffer their bodies to be laid in sepulchres. And they that dwell upon the earth shall rejoice over them, and make merry: and shall send: and shall send gifts one to another, because these two prophets tormented them that dwelt upon the earth. And after three days and a half, the spirit of life from God entered into them. And they stood upon their feet, and great fear fell upon them that saw them. And they heard a great voice from heaven, saying to them: Come up hither. And they went up to heaven in a cloud: and their enemies saw them. And at that hour there was made a great earthquake, and there were slain in the earthquake names of men seven thousand: and the rest were cast into a fear, and gave glory to the God of heaven."

The "measuring of the temple the altar and those who worship therein" accounts for the conversion of nearly the whole world by the Church in this last age. The "ruler" by which this measurement is made is the Two Witnesses of God, Enoch and Elias and all those who will witness to Christ along with them in that age. For example, included in the Great Conversion, I believe, will be all the Catholic preachers, like our Paul, who comprise the "two witnesses" necessary before the "court" of Heaven to "convince" all men of the truth and "convict" all those in error or culpable ignorance of their sin. Many of these lesser witnesses for Christ may

also have the power in a lesser degree than the "two witnesses" to discipline men with "plagues and scourges" and prophetic utterances, in order to help correct them by revealing the power of God's Word. So that when the seventh trumpet is finally blown the voices of the Saints in Heaven can say, "The kingdom of this world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of His Christ, ..." The elect will have been gathered, the battle lines drawn when the final age of persecutions begin.

"Father, can you read any other description of the times I will endure, the time after the Peace of twenty-five years when the two witnesses will walk the earth?"

Yes, Son. We read this in the second half of the Message of Our Lady at La Salette who fully described in 1846 to the saintly seer, Melanie, all the events preceding the end of the world. This message was approved by the Church, over the fierce opposition of many wicked clergy in France.

### AFTER THE PEACE

"A forerunner of the Antichrist, with his troops gathered from several nations, will fight against the true Christ, the only Saviour of the world. He will shed much blood and will want to annihilate the worship of God to make himself be looked upon as a God.

The earth will be struck by calamities of all kinds (in addition to plague and famine which will be wide-spread). There will be a series of wars until the last war, which will then be fought by the ten Kings of the Antichrist, all of whom will have one and the same plan and will be the only rulers of the world. Before this comes to pass, there will be a kind of false peace in the world. People will think of nothing but amusement. The wicked will give themselves over to all kinds of sin. But the children of the holy Church, the children of my faith, my true followers, they will grow in their love for God and in all the virtues most precious to me. Blessed are the souls humbly guided by the Holy Spirit! I shall fight at their side until they reach a fullness of years.

Nature is asking for vengeance because of man, and she trembles

with dread at what must happen to the earth stained with crime. Tremble, earth, and you who proclaim yourselves as serving Jesus Christ and who, on the inside, only adore yourselves, tremble for God will hand you over to His enemy, because the holy places are in a state of corruption. Many convents are no longer houses of God, but the grazing-grounds of Asmodeas and his like. It will be during this time that the Antichrist will be born of a Hebrew nun, a false virgin who will communicate with the old serpent, the master of impurity, his father will be B. At birth, he will spew out blasphemy; he will have teeth, in a word, he will be the devil incarnate. He will scream horribly, he will perform wonders, he will feed on nothing but impurity. He will have brothers who, although not devils incarnate like him, will be children of evil. At the age of twelve, they will draw attention upon themselves by the gallant victories they will have won; soon they will each lead armies, aided by the legions of hell.

The seasons will be altered, the earth will produce nothing but bad fruit, the stars will lose their regular motion, the moon will only reflect a faint

reddish glow. Water and fire will give the earth's globe convulsions and terrible earthquakes which will swallow up mountains, cities, etc.

Rome will lose the faith and become the seat of the Antichrist.

The demons of the air together with the Antichrist will perform great wonders on earth and in the atmosphere, and men will become more and more perverted. God will take care of his faithful servants and men of good will. The Gospel will be preached everywhere, and all peoples of all nations will get to know the truth.

I make an urgent appeal to the earth. I call on the true disciples of the living God who reigns in Heaven; I call on the true followers of Christ made man, the only true Saviour of men; I call on my children, the true faithful, those who have given themselves to me so that I may lead them to my divine Son, those whom I carry in my arms, so to speak, those who have lived on my spirit. Finally, I call on the Apostles of the Last Days, the faithful disciples of Jesus Christ who have lived in scorn for the world and for themselves, in poverty and in humility, in scorn and silence, in prayer and in mortification, in chastity and in union with God, in suffering and unknown to the world. It is time they came out and filled the world with light. Go and reveal yourselves to be my cherished children. I am at your side and within you, provided that your faith is the light which shines upon you in these unhappy days. May your zeal make you famished for the glory and the honour of Jesus Christ. Fight, children of light, you, the few who can see. For now is the time of all times, the end of all ends.

The Church will be in eclipse, the world will be in dismay. But now Enoch and Eli will come, filled with the Spirit of God. They will preach with the might of God, and men of good will will believe in God, and many souls will be comforted. They will make great steps forward through the virtue of the Holy Spirit and will condemn the devilish lapses of the Antichrist. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth! There will be bloody wars and famines, plagues and infectious diseases. It will rain with a fearful hail of animals. There will be thunderstorms which will shake cities, earthquakes which will swallow up countries. Voices will be heard in the air. Men will beat their heads against walls, call for their death, and on another side death will be their torment. Blood will flow on all sides. Who will be the victor if God does not shorten the length of the test? All the blood, the tears and the prayers of the righteous, God will relent. Enoch and Eli will be put to death. Pagan Rome will disappear. The fire of Heaven will fall and consume three cities. All the universe will be struck with terror and many will let themselves be led astray because they have not worshipped the true Christ who lives among them. It is time; the sun is darkening; only faith will survive.

Now is the time; the abyss is opening. Here is the King of Kings of

Darkness, here is the Beast with his subjects, calling himself the Saviour of the World. He will rise proudly into the air to go to Heaven. He will be smothered by the breath of the Archangel Saint Michael. He will fall, and the earth, which will have been in a continuous series of evolutions for three days, will open up its fiery bowels; and he will have plunged for eternity with all his followers into the everlasting chasms of hell. And then water and fire will purge the earth and consume all the works of men's pride and all will be renewed. God will be

served and glorified."

So, after the final destruction of AntiChrist there seems to be a time upon men will glorify God before he comes in the Final Judgement.

"What chapters of the book of The Apocalypse are parallel to what we have just read, Father? For example, it says that Rome will lose the faith and become the seat of Antichrist?"  
Let us read Chapter 12:

"And a great sign appeared in heaven: A woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and on her head a crown of twelve stars: And being with child, she cried travailing in birth, and was in pain to be delivered. And there was seen another sign in heaven: and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads, and ten horns: and on his heads seven diadems: And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman who was ready to be delivered; that, when she should be delivered, he might devour her son. And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with an iron rod: and her son was taken up to God, and to his throne. And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she had a place prepared by God, that there they should feed her a thousand two hundred sixty days. And there was a great battle in heaven, Michael and his angels fought with the dragon, and the dragon fought and his angels: And they prevailed not, neither was their place found any more in heaven. And that great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, who is called the devil and Satan, who seduceth the whole world; and he was cast unto the earth, and his angels were thrown down with him. And I heard a loud voice in heaven, saying: Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: because the accuser of our brethren is cast forth, who accused them before our God day and anight. And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of the testimony, and they loved not their lives unto death. Therefore rejoice, O heavens, and you that dwell therein. Woe to the earth, and to the sea, because the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, knowing that he hath but a short time. And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman, who brought forth the man child: And there were given to the woman two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the desert unto her place, where she is nourished for a time and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent. And the serpent cast out of his mouth after the woman, water as it were a river; that he might cause her to be carried away by the river. And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the river, which the dragon cast out of his mouth. And the dragon was angry against the woman: and went to make war with the rest of her seed, who keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ. And he stood upon the sand of the sea."

The child who is taken up to Heaven is the Angelic Pastor, our present Pope Peter II. He now rules with an iron rod, using the seven thunders, the edicts of excommunication against those who err. By this the "temple" of the Church is measured. And after this Angelic Pastor is taken up into Heaven I believe the Great Peace will end. The Beast, Antichrist, and his false Prophet will arise then and pretend to rule the Church from Rome. But God will

send His two witnesses to oppose them. Antichrist will rule for "3 ½ years", the symbolic number for a time known only to God. Then will come the east pope, according to St. Malachi before the end of the world. Let us read of these awful times of the Antichrist's reign in the Apocalypse:

"And I saw a beast coming up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten diadems, and upon his heads names of blasphemy. And the beast, which I saw, was like to a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion. And the dragon gave him his own strength, and great power. And I saw one of his heads as it were slain to death: and his death's wound was healed. And all the earth was in admiration after the beast. And they adored the dragon, which gave power to the beast: and they adored the beast, saying: Who is like to the beast? And who shall be able to fight with him? And there was given to him a mouth speaking great things, and blasphemies: and power was given to him to do two and forty months. And he opened his mouth unto blasphemies against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven. And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them. And power was given him over every tribe, and people, and tongue, and nation. And all that dwell upon the earth adored him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb, which was slain from the beginning of the world. If any man have an ear, let him hear. He that shall lead into captivity, shall go into captivity: he that shall kill by the sword, must be killed by the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints. And I saw another beast coming up out of the earth, and he had two horns, like a lamb, and he spoke as a dragon. And he executed all the power of the former beast in his sight; and he caused the earth, and them that dwell therein, to adore the first beast, whose wound to death was healed. And he did great signs, so that he made also fire to come down from heaven unto the earth in the sight of men. And he seduced them that dwell on the earth, for the signs, which were given him to do in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make the image of the beast, which had the wound by the sword, and lived. And it was given him to give life to the image of the beast, and that the image of the beast should speak; and should cause, that whosoever will not adore the image of the beast, should be slain. And he shall make all, both little and great, rich and poor, freemen and bondmen, to have a character in their right hand, or on their foreheads. And that no man might buy or sell, but he that hath the character, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. He that hath understanding, let him count the number of the beast. For it is the number of a man: and the number of him is six hundred sixty-six." (The Apolcalypse Chapter 13)

"So chapters 13-18 describe the last age of Antichrist, Father?"

Yes. And Chapter 19 describes the final victory. But in Chapter 20 the last age of the world, the time of Christ's reign, is *summarized*. After Christ's death, the dragon was bound for "1000 years." Then he is let loose for a little time in the latter days. Finally, Chapter 20 describes the Last Judgement and the passing away of time.

## Chapter 20

"And I saw an angel coming down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit, and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon the old serpent, which is the devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years. And he cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should no more seduce the nations, till the thousand years be finished. And after that, he must be loosed a little time. And I saw seats; and they sat upon them; and judgment was given unto them; and the souls of them that were beheaded for the testimony of Jesus, and for the word of God, and who had not adored the beast nor his image, nor received his character on their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. The rest of the dead lived not, till the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection. In these the second death hath no power; but they shall be priests of God and of Christ; and shall reign with him a thousand years. And when the thousand years shall be finished, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, and shall go forth, and seduce the nations, which are over the four quarters of the earth, Gog, and Magog, and shall gather them together to battle, the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. And they came upon the breadth of the earth, and encompassed the camp of the saints, and the beloved city. And there came down fire from God out of heaven, and devoured them; and the devil, who seduced them, was cast into the pool of fire and brimstone, where both the beast and the false prophet shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever. And I saw a great white throne, and one sitting upon it, from whose face the earth and heaven fled away, and there was no place found for them. And I saw the dead, great and small, standing in the presence of the throne, and the books were opened, which is the book of life; and the dead were judged by those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead that were in it, and death and hell gave up their dead that were in them; and they were judged every one according to their works. And hell and death were cast into the pool of fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the book of Life, was cast into the pool of fire."

"In the last two chapters, Father, twenty-one and twenty-two, it describes the vision of the new earth and new heavens, of the heavenly Jerusalem coming down. Is this a vision of Heaven or of Earth?"

Perhaps in those final years Earth will be dissolved into Heaven and what we see described by John as this final vision represents, in earthly terms, what Heaven will be like and also, how it will symbolically appear as it approaches those left on earth before the Final Judgment.

"In other words, perhaps God will lift the veil of time and place, slowly, in the very last of times, Father?"

Yes, Son. Perhaps the fullness of God's union with man will occur in real but also mystical terms in the fading "moments" of time before the Final Judgement. Let us read Chapters 21 and 22:

"And I saw a new heaven and a new earth. For the first heaven and the first earth was gone, and the sea is now no more. And I John saw the holy city, the new Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice from the throne, saying: Behold the tabernacle of God with men, and he will

## 285

dwell with them. And they shall be his people; and God himself with them shall be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes: and death shall be no more, nor mourning, nor crying, nor sorrow shall be any more, for the former things are passed away. And he that sat on the throne, said: Behold, I make all things new. And he said to me: Write, for these words are most faithful and true. And he said to me: It is done. I am Alpha and Omega; the beginning and the end. To him that thirsteth, I will give of the fountain of the water of life, freely. He that shall overcome shall possess these things, and I will be his God; and he shall be my son. But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, they shall have their portion in the pool burning with fire and brimstone, which is the second death. And there came one of the seven angels, who had the vials full of the seven last plagues, and spoke with me, saying: Come, and I will shew thee the bride, the wife of the Lamb. And he took me up in spirit to a great and high mountain: and he shewed me the holy city of Jerusalem coming down out of heaven from God, Having the glory of God, and the light thereof was like to a precious stone, as to the jasper stone, even as crystal. And it had a wall great and high, having twelve gates, and in the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel. On the east, three gates: and on the north, three gates: and on the south, three gates: and on the west, three gates. And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them, the twelve names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb. And he that spoke with me, had a measure of a reed of gold, to measure the city and the gates thereof, and the wall. And the city lieth in a foursquare, and the length thereof is as great as the breadth: and he measured the city with the golden reed for twelve thousand furlongs, and the length and the height and the breadth thereof are equal. And he measured the wall thereof an hundred forty-four cubits, the measure of a man, which is of an angel. And the building of the wall thereof was of jasper stone: but the city itself pure gold, like to clear glass. And the foundations of the wall of the city were adorned with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was jasper: the second, sapphire: the third, a chalcedony: the fourth, an emerald: The fifth, sardonyx: the sixth, sardius: the seventh, chrysolite: the eighth, beryl: the ninth, a topaz: the tenth, a chrysoprasus: the eleventh, a jacinth: the twelfth, an amethyst. And the twelve gates are twelve pearls, one to each: and every several gate was of one several pearl. And the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass. And I saw no temple therein. For the Lord God Almighty is the temple thereof, and the Lamb. And the city hath no need of the sun, nor of the moon, to shine in it. For the glory of God hath enlightened it, and the Lamb is the lamp thereof. And the nations shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth shall bring their glory and honour into it. And the gates thereof shall not be shut by day: for there shall be no night there. And

they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it. There shall not enter into it any thing defiled, or that worketh abomination or maketh a lie, but they that are written in the book of life of the Lamb." (end of Chapter 21)

"And he showed me a river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding from the throne of God and of the Lamb. In the midst of the street thereof, and on both sides of the river, *was* the tree of life, bearing twelve fruits, yielding its fruits every month, and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. And there shall be no curse any more; but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it, and his servants shall serve him. And they shall see his face: and his name shall be on their foreheads. And night shall be no more: and they shall not need the light of the lamp, nor the light of the sun, because the Lord God shall enlighten them, and they shall reign for ever and ever. And he said to me: These words are most faithful and true. And the Lord God of the spirits of

## 286

the prophets sent his angel to shew his servants the things which must be done shortly. And, Behold I come quickly. Blessed is he that keepeth the words of the prophecy of this book. And I, John, have heard and seen these things. And after I had heard and seen, I fell down to adore before the feet of the angel, who shewed me these things. And he said to me: See thou do it not: for I am thy fellow servant, and of thy brethren the prophets, and of them that keep the words of the prophecy of this book. Adore God. And he saith to me: Seal not the words of the prophecy of this book: for the time is at hand. He that hurteth, let him be filthy still: and he that is just, let him be justified still: and he that is holy, let him be sanctified still. Behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to render to every man according to his works. I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last, the beginning and the end. Blessed are they that wash their robes in the blood of the Lamb: that they may have a right to the tree of life, and may enter in by the gates into the city. Without are dogs, and sorcerers, and unchaste, and murderers, and servers of idols, and every one that loveth and maketh a lie. I Jesus have sent my angel, to testify to you these things in the churches. I am The root and stock of David, the bright and morning star. And the spirit and the bride say: Come. And he that heareth, let him say: Come. And he that thirsteth, let him come: and he that will, let him take the water of life, freely. For I testify to every one that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book: If any man shall add to these things, God shall add unto him the plagues written in this book. And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from these things that are written in this book. He that giveth testimony of these things, saith, Surely I come quickly: Amen. Come, Lord Jesus. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen." (end of Chapter 22)

"To think of these as the times in which I will live, Father, is almost too much to conceive or bear."

Nor could I have ever conceived of the times I lived through, Phillip. But this attitude



may not have been that uncommon for men of any age. For to live in time is to be on the cutting edge of an unknown future time. And time is like a temporal illusion or anomaly within the eternal and single Act of Creation.

Let us now continue our story, as we returned to earth after the Chastisement. There were those whom God chose to preserve on earth throughout the Chastisement. These were in great poverty, misery and spiritual destitution afterwards. Some of us who had ascended to meet Jesus when He came upon "the clouds of Heaven," were allowed to return to earth still partially in this blessed supernatural state of ecstasy in order to better assist and guide these destitute souls, to comfort and help them. The angels sent out the members of my family and others all over the world on such gathering missions. They could see at any distance and move from place to place with the swiftness and ease of thought. These souls appeared to wandering souls and guided them to a refuge, usually a home and a place that had been preserved and that before those days had been blessed and set aside by the angels of God. Those to whom God directed our family we took to the land around our original home below Jasper Mountain. Around us we helped settle the many families that God gave to our little Christian community. As this gathering phase of our mission tapered off, we also gradually descended from the supernaturalized state of ecstasy. But what a great difference there was now from our former life on earth. Mary had told us: "It will be the end of time as you know it." It was true. Time, the mechanical, materially oriented aspect of time, seemed to have faded or rather, was

superceded by and infused with eternal essences and qualities which were independent of time, just as the spirit is of the body. Our capacity to understand God and His will was far above what it had been. This was accompanied by a much deeper, more sincere and humble concern for the spiritual and physical well being of others. Our self-image seemed to fade out of consciousness while the other person, his beauty, his being God's own child, was magnified in place of self. God, His angels and Saints, seemed to be always more *present*, and they often appeared to us in visible form, especially in those first years.

And yet too we regarded our own self our own body with much more respect. The self-opinion of our former "ego" was replaced with an awareness of our dignity, the greatness of our soul as a creature of God. I have always felt, Phillip, that we were moving towards eternity and the state of consciousness that our first parents enjoyed.

Our health was perfect, our minds and souls fresh and clean and clear -- and above all, at great peace. Though all shared in this greater peace, all did not seem to possess it in the same degree. The difference seemed to depend on how they had behaved and prepared themselves before the Chastisement. Our family was especially graced to introduce this holy spirit to all we met, and doing so was a great delight, especially in being the first to give them this gift of joy from God's own Hand.

As you may well remember, Phillip, our first task, and we did it with such fervent hope, was to plant seeds in the earth, which now had a very rich mineral ash deposited over it. With great labor -- using primitive tools at first -- we tilled this ash into the old soil and then drawing from our long stored grain and vegetable seeds, we planted many things. New springs had appeared everywhere on the earth. They had been caused by the tremendous earthquakes. So we abandoned our water wells in those first years, their electric pumps being inoperable. Often we were guided in various ways by the angels to find food in those early days. Though they sometimes appeared and spoke, more often we knew of their presence by certain intuitions, or signs, or even voices. Very quickly the wonderful sunlight and abundant water brought all the crops to fruition, and an abundant harvest was made in only two months. Many people heard of our little community and came to us, so that seventy families were clustered around us at the end of three months, though we had begun with only twenty-five. Our house was an infirmary, a kitchen and a meeting place.

Father Keogh visited us regularly. He had found a bishop to ordain Paul. When Paul came home one Sunday and announced that he was a priest, we all rejoiced, exceedingly. A campfire was lit in the dale in back of the house. Neighbors were called, and we sang together of our joy far into the night. Our dear friend, Susan, led the singing, and I was so inspired by it that I set my heart that evening on building a chapel. It would be adorned with her choir.

I imagined the chapel sitting upon the foothills a mile to the SW, its granite boulder walls framed against the green pines of the mountain, or glowing pink and gold under the colors of a western sunset.

That night Paul and I talked to Fr. Keogh about the chapel. He also was enthusiastic. The next morning I took some men who would be able to help direct the project. The majestic evenings and Saturdays were set aside for its construction. It was a joyful project of devotion to God that lifted everyone's heart; for in those days the praise of God was the pinnacle of our lives as a people. Many times I caught glimpses of the

angels and Saints around us during Holy Mass. I then imagined these days to be like and even surpassing those earliest days of the infant Church after Jesus' Resurrection.

Our communities had no money or any medium of exchange. Charity for self and neighbor ruled out covetous acts. Everyone did what they could for the benefit of all. Tradesman of one kind seemed to naturally form closer relationships, so that, like in the guilds of old, they trained others and helped each other in projects where more cooperation or manpower was needed. There were plumbers, like Timothy, carpenters like our son-in-law, Jeremy, farmers like our son Joseph and husbandmen, the keepers of animals, such as you have become, Phillip.

Eventually our Joseph became like a Johnny Appleseed, spreading the love of working the land and cultivating living things throughout the countryside. Wonderful farms and

brotherly love seemed to spring up behind him as he traveled the land. He soon married a beautiful maiden and was often referred to as a model for young husbands and fathers, like his namesake, St. Joseph. Danielle's husband, Jeremy, was a fine builder and mechanic, and he accepted leadership of the chapel's construction.

After Paul was ordained, he became our chaplain. During this time he also covered a wide area on horseback. Always a happy soul, he was welcomed and loved by all. Young men and widowers used to crowd around him especially, just to converse with him about the things of God and the religious vocation they were considering themselves.

One day, six months after our chapel was built, Paul approached as I sat upon a rock gazing at the fields of corn and wheat and the vegetable gardens clustered around the stone huts that dotted the jade green hills and valleys.

"Father?"

"Yes, Paul?"

"I came to ask you if you would build us a seminary, Father. I have already seventy young men in various places who desire to live celibate lives in the service of God, as priests or brothers. The good Bishop Chaput will surely approve it. Father Keogh is a Carmelite. I want to join that order and establish a Carmelite convent someday, too.

I jumped up. "You shall have it, my son! You knew," I smiled, "that I have wanted that for many years. Get the Bishop's permission, and we shall begin."

"Only eight months later Jeremy and his men had built a seminary and had drafted plans and laid out foundation stones for a convent. When Paul had prepared two priests a year later, he approached the bishop for permission to leave them in his place, so he could go about the land evangelizing and building other religious communities; for he was filled with zeal for souls and the glory of God. In the twelve years that followed, he and his growing number of priests converted many souls, setting up dozens of churches, seminaries and convents from the Mississippi River to the Sierra Nevadas. We saw him once a year as he stopped to rest at Christmas time for two or three weeks. Everywhere he gathered novitiates to the religious life and set up the means for them to acquire an education and serve their people in the future. His doctrine was orthodox, his preaching simple but powerful. He sought out those places most neglected or those in danger of imbibing ignorance, error or indifference for special attention. Like his namesake he suffered and labored untiringly for Christ.

One by one the rest of my children were married to wonderful Catholic spouses, except for Michael who became a priest under Paul's direction, and Mary, who was the first nun to graduate from Paul's Carmelite convent, thus fulfilling the vision her mother had of her when a babe in her arms.

Our schoolmaster was John. Within five years he established schools able to offer each child, regardless of age, a solid Catholic education. Like Paul, he seemed to be a magnet for

those with a vocation for teaching by way of his own pious and lively instructions. He also traveled throughout the neighboring states setting up schools and training teachers.

Mary and her Carmelite sisters entered communities as angels of light, love and learning, teaching the people, especially mothers, how to live the life of God while leading their children in the same spirit. By her beautiful letters she spread her ideas about her work throughout the states. As first prioress of the convent at twenty-six, she trained over the years hundreds of Carmelite nuns to go abroad as missionaries all over the states west of the Mississippi River.

Timothy became a kind of lawyer and community builder, eventually becoming the first governor of Wyoming in the renewed world. His family grew in size over the years, and his ranch was the model for many others. Until Michael left to study for the priesthood under Paul at age 17, he and you, Phillip, ran the ranch for Timothy while he gave himself to public service, leading the people in building a just and pious civic sense of responsibility.

Timothy and I worked together with others to establish an honest currency, which became necessary as communities grew larger and more complex. Law and order issues were handled very gently and privately, as much as possible between neighbors, and those parties directly concerned. Christian charity, humility and forgiveness were vibrant, while moral standards and moral conduct were high. Timothy became a man of outstanding ability in helping neighbors live in harmony and charity. Because of his ability as a mediator, he was seen as someone to trust and follow when differences of opinion arose.

While remaining for some years the instigator, surveyor and guide of all things that came to my attention, I finally retired to writing and study, sometimes helping John at his various little universities as a visiting instructor. My major concern lay in contributing some wisdom to the task of establishing a truly strong Christian Nation, with strong safeguards against the corrosion of values and of law that had once led to the tyranny that necessitated a Second Revolutionary War. Realizing that this dream would be built upon the work my children were doing with the people, I also realized that a nation without safeguards against moral chaos on the one hand and tyranny in its central government on the other, would be vulnerable to unscrupulous, evil men in future times. To this end I saw that the Church and the civil authority or state must have a proper and vital relationship, recognized by law, each with its own functions and duties, but with the Church *informing* the State with the values necessary for the *good* government of a Christian people. George Washington had cautioned in his Farewell Address that without the foundation of morality and religion our government must surely fail. It was now publicly documented knowledge that George Washington had been baptized a Catholic before his death, due largely to his close relationship with LaFayette during the Revolutionary War. This helped my efforts to set in law the states' necessary dependence

on the timeless teachings of the Catholic Church for moral guidance in all its statues and operations. For it is one thing to give a mere nod to morality and values and religious principle, but another thing to define them authoritatively and cement that in law. This latter is *gold* in the hand, the former, a story about gold.

As communication systems were slowly rebuilt, it became more possible to talk with distant governors and Church leaders about my concerns and ideas. Above all, I preached and taught why human respect, unprincipled democracy or populism, and other unworthy motivations of *good* government had no place in Constitutional law; for these held the central place in any evil "government of the people" run by sophists and various kinds of power brokers and manipulators. I became a traveling lecturer. I tried to show how we must build our future on a true understanding of history and its lessons, and I argued that representatives of the people were not to assume a kind of all wise deification as arbitrary creators of laws to positively rule or oppress the people, as cattle are ruled by the herdsman; but they were to become students of God's Law under the guiding hand of His Church, in order to represent the good will of good people, while giving freedom to the natural pace of a society internally governed by the Christian Church, which expresses and is itself the Kingdom of God within us upon earth.

Good government, Phillip, must not be based on man's fallen nature, much less on the lowest common behavior of the people, but upon man's redeemed nature, which requires the input of revealed religion, Divine Revelation. Of these and other principles I sought to influence Congress as it budded forth again near the end of the first decade.

Public office I did not desire or deem myself worthy of, or particularly fit for. I felt more comfortable being the philosopher, witnessing to the truth, the ordinary prophet providing food for thought to those who assume the awesome responsibility of governing. I settled for being a kind of Socrates, probing, teaching and challenging if necessary; for, I reasoned that the piety and wisdom of men, or the lack thereof is the root and foundation of their own internal and external government in the end. Therefore, to influence the internal orderliness of men's minds is to govern, indirectly, in a true but analogous sense.

"It seems that God has a wonderful mission for each person, Father, if they will just believe this and work and ..."

And trust in God, Phillip.

"It's beautiful, Father, how God rules this world through us all."

He uses both the good and the evil to do this, too. For it takes the heat of fire to make the metal malleable enough to be shaped by the blows of the craftsman's hammer.

"What will happen in the future, Father?"

"Am I a prophet that you ask me such a question, Phillip? The clearest vision is to be gained by studying the wisdom of the ages as taught by our spiritual Mother, the Bride of Christ, the Holy Catholic Church. The Rock of Ages. Abandon her, and you will surely lose your way. Study her Wisdom, and you will virtually see into the future. Know also that as long as we live in this world, we will struggle against the world, our concupiscent and the devil.

"Already I can see the laxities and vanities creeping into the lives of some people. These, like rotten apples, will infect their neighbors. *Fight! Christian Soldier!*" Phillip jumped a foot in the air as I shouted this.

"You startled me, Father. I thought for a moment there was some danger out there."

"There *is* Danger! Complacency!!" I stood erect, quickly, and brought a stern countenance to bear close upon him. There *is* danger in laxity and comfort and assumptions and presuming anything as granted. Wake Up! Strap on your helmet of Faith; take up the sword of Truth and the shield of Hope. Over all put on Charity. For *you* will have to fight the good fight. *You* will have to lead others to victory, along with yourself, over the Evil One. *NO MAN IS EXEMPT FROM THIS DUTY WHO WILLS TO ENTER THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN!* The Final Victory is not given to sluggards, but to *Warriors*, only!

As Phillip's eyes focused and slowly steeled over, I said, gently, "Let us go now, Phillip. There is work to be done in the fields of the valley. Timothy will be needing you by now. In fact, he's probably got himself a wee bit out of sorts. Mother will be worrying because I'm not on schedule. And then," I glanced sideways at him, "there is a lovely young girl that likes to drop in on Phillip at times." He smiled shyly. "Like almost every day!"

"Father!"

I could see him squirming a little as I continued. "Well, just let me know when to call brother Paul home for the wedding."

"Father! You said you weren't a prophet!"

I felt a great weight lift from my soul as we walked down the mountain that day. My story finally finished, the cabin a warm brown speck now on the edge of the meadow only one hundred feet below us.

And, right, now, a year later, I once again feel that same relief as I write these final words.

But who is this knocking at my door do you suppose? "Come in! ... Phillip, my boy ... I mean our young man. Are you ready?"

"Yes, Father. Paul is vested and is waiting at the chapel."

"Nervous?"

"Na, na ... nah."

"No?!" Well, it's after five o'clock. Quitting time. So, I won't be contradicting you by making any more prophecies today."

"Father!!!"

Yes, Phillip.

"I love you, Father. Before we go, will you give me your blessing?"

Kneel down, my Son. I ask God to bless you and all like you -- children of trust and confidence who willingly drink from the cup of their spiritual Mother the Word of Her beloved Son.

"Amen. And may God bless my father and all good fathers, wherever they may be, in whatever time they may live."

Amen.

[{TABLE OF CONTENTS}](#)

[{PREFACE}](#)

[{CHAPTER I}](#) [{CHAPTER II}](#) [{CHAPTER III}](#) [{CHAPTER IV}](#) [{CHAPTER V}](#) [{CHAPTER VI}](#)

[{CHAPTER VII}](#) [{CHAPTER VIII}](#) [{CHAPTER IX}](#) [{CHAPTER X}](#) [{CHAPTER XI}](#)

[{Bibliography}](#)

[{Bookstore}](#) [{Order Form}](#) [{Instructions}](#) [{Notice of Permissions}](#) [{Download}](#)

[{Links}](#)

[{FRAMES VERSION}](#)

(Requires a frames-enabled browser)

*Website contents © 1999 - 2000, [Web Designs by Doc](#). Literary content ©1999 - 2000, Dave Pedry. All rights reserved.*

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

The Holy Bible. Douay-Rheims Version. Tan Books & Publishers, Inc.

Belloc, Hilaire. Essays of a Catholic. Tan Books & Publishers, Inc. ©1931.

Belloc, Hilaire. The Great Heresies. Tan Books & Publishers, Inc. ©1938.

Carr, William Guy. The Red Fog Over America. Poor Richard's Press, 5th ed. ©1973.

Emmerich, Ven. Anne Catherine. The Life of Jesus Christ and Biblical Revelations. Recorded by Clemens Brentano. 4 vols. Tan Books & Publishers, Inc. ©1914.

Kempis, Thomas a. My Imitation of Christ. Confraternity of the Precious Blood, New York, ©1954.

Magdalen, Father Gabriel of Saint Mary. Divine Intimacy. Tan Books & Publishers.

Miceli, Vincent P., S.J. The Gods of Atheism. Roman Catholic Books, NY, ©1971.

Our Lady of the Rosary School. Christian Culture & World Civilization: Two. ©1989.

Ratzinger, Joseph Cardinal with Vittorio Messori. The Ratzinger Report. Ignatius Press, ©1985.

Solzhenitsyn, Aleksandr I. The Gulag Archipelago. Harper & Row, ©1973.

Walsh, William Thomas. Phillip II. Tan Books & Publishers, Inc., c1937

[{TABLE OF CONTENTS}](#)

[{PREFACE}](#)

[{CHAPTER I}](#) {[CHAPTER II](#)} {[CHAPTER III](#)} {[CHAPTER IV](#)} {[CHAPTER V](#)} {[CHAPTER VI](#)}

{[CHAPTER VII](#)} {[CHAPTER VIII](#)} {[CHAPTER IX](#)} {[CHAPTER X](#)} {[CHAPTER XI](#)}

[{Bibliography}](#)

[{Bookstore}](#) {[Order Form](#)} {[Instructions](#)} {[Notice of Permissions](#)} {[Download](#)}

[{Links}](#)

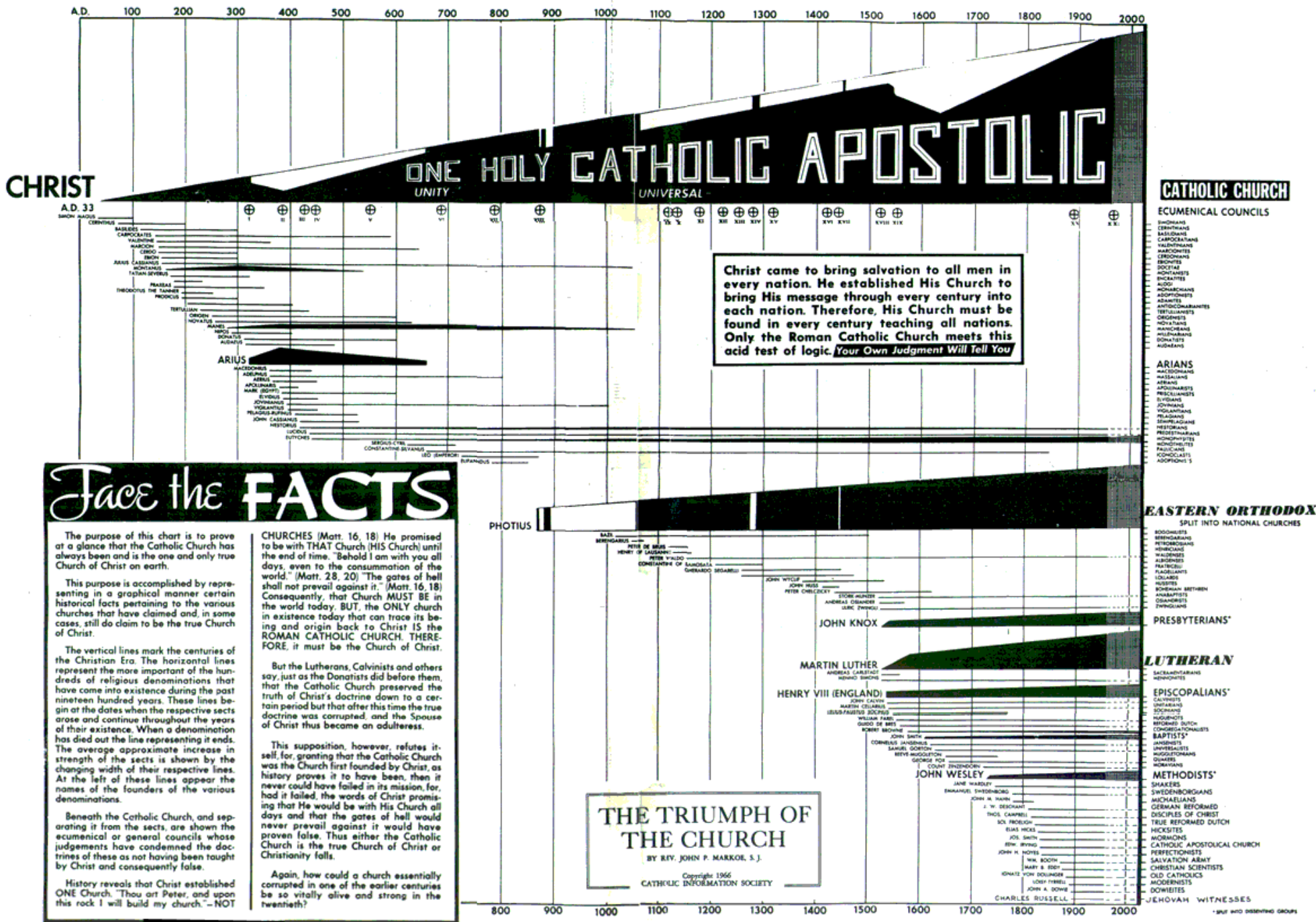
[{FRAMES VERSION}](#)

(Requires a frames-enabled browser)

*Website contents* © 1999 - 2000, [Web Designs by Doc](#). *Literary content* ©1999 - 2000, Dave Pedry. All rights



CLOSE THIS WINDOW TO RETURN TO THE BOOK



**Face the FACTS**

The purpose of this chart is to prove at a glance that the Catholic Church has always been and is the one and only true Church of Christ on earth.

This purpose is accomplished by representing in a graphical manner certain historical facts pertaining to the various churches that have claimed and, in some cases, still do claim to be the true Church of Christ.

The vertical lines mark the centuries of the Christian Era. The horizontal lines represent the more important of the hundreds of religious denominations that have come into existence during the past nineteen hundred years. These lines begin at the dates when the respective sects arose and continue throughout the years of their existence. When a denomination has died out the line representing it ends. The average approximate increase in strength of the sects is shown by the changing width of their respective lines. At the left of these lines appear the names of the founders of the various denominations.

Beneath the Catholic Church, and separating it from the sects, are shown the ecumenical or general councils whose judgments have condemned the doctrines of these as not having been taught by Christ and consequently false.

History reveals that Christ established ONE Church. "Thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church." - NOT

CHURCHES (Matt. 16, 18) He promised to be with THAT Church (His Church) until the end of time. "Behold I am with you all days, even to the consummation of the world." (Matt. 28, 20) "The gates of hell shall not prevail against it." (Matt. 16, 18) Consequently, that Church MUST BE in the world today. BUT, the ONLY church in existence today that can trace its being and origin back to Christ IS the ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH. THEREFORE, it must be the Church of Christ.

But the Lutherans, Calvinists and others say, just as the Donatists did before them, that the Catholic Church preserved the truth of Christ's doctrine down to a certain period but that after this time the true doctrine was corrupted, and the Spouse of Christ thus became an adulteress.

This supposition, however, refutes itself, for, granting that the Catholic Church was the Church first founded by Christ, as history proves it to have been, then it never could have failed in its mission, for, had it failed, the words of Christ promising that He would be with His Church all days and that the gates of hell would never prevail against it would have proven false. Thus either the Catholic Church is the true Church of Christ or Christianity falls.

Again, how could a church essentially corrupted in one of the earlier centuries be so vitally alive and strong in the twentieth?